

The English poor law system, past and present / Trans. by Herbert Preston-Thomas ; with a preface by Henry Sidgwick.

Contributors

Aschrott, P. F. 1856-1927.
Sidgwick, Henry, 1838-1900.
Preston-Thomas, Herbert.

Publication/Creation

London : Knight & Co., 1888.

Persistent URL

<https://wellcomecollection.org/works/pqy4q847>

License and attribution

This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.



Wellcome Collection
183 Euston Road
London NW1 2BE UK
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722
E library@wellcomecollection.org
<https://wellcomecollection.org>

THE
ENGLISH
POOR-LAW SYSTEM

ASCHROTT & PRESTON-THOMAS

RECENT WORKS

RELATING TO

Poor Law and Local Government.

PUBLISHED BY

K

70C. 41 (2)

The
KEVERSTONE
LIBRARY.



Poor
Gov

The Or
Principa
and R.

The La

Embrac
Acts gi
GLEN, l
Board, a

Trp's I

The Un
1874; v
and Lo
By R.
LAWRIE

"The Friendship of Books
never dies"

No.....

In the present edition all the statutes and enactments relating to the subject are included, together with a Digest of the Decided Cases. All the Circulars issued by the Poor Law Board and Local Government Board

and such additions have been
as seemed to be requisite
at time.



22101375329

Price 12s. 6d.

Leveson Scarth
Licensing Laws : (*Second Edition*).

Nov. 1888

The five Licensing Acts are arranged so as to form one comprehensive Statute, with copious explanatory Notes, an Introduction giving a full description of the Licensing System, and an Appendix of Statutes ; the whole forming a complete handbook. By G. C. WHITELEY, M.A., Cantab., and F. J. LOWE, M.A., Barristers-at-Law.

Price 8s. 6d.

Nicoll and Flaxman's Registration :

Embracing the Registration Act, 1885, &c. ; with an Introduction, Notes, Useful Tables, the most Important Decisions given in Appeal Cases from the Revision Courts, and a full Index. By ARTHUR JOHN FR

BOURNEMOUTH

Educ Students' Association Library.

Er
Si

By

"The Friendship of Books never dies."

The

Co
an
In

rs,
nd

This Vol. was purchased
presented } by *Leveson Scarth Esq*
1905

Lunacy Laws : (*Second Edition*).

Containing all the Statutes relating to Private Lunatics—Pauper Lunatics—Criminal Lunatics—Commissions of Lunacy—Public and Private Asylums—and the Commissioners in Lunacy ; with an Introductory Commentary Notes to the Statutes, including References to decided Cases ; and a Copious Index of 129 pages. By DANBY P. FRY, Barrister-at-Law.

Price 21s.

Penfold on Rating : (*Ninth Edition*).

Edited by A. GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Barrister-at-Law.

Practical Remarks upon the Principal of Rating Railway, Gas, Water, and other Companies ; Land, Tithes, Buildings, Manufactories, and other Properties, Re-written and Extended. All the more important decisions of the Court of Queen's Bench on questions of Rating are given, and it shows the manner in which the principles laid down are practically applied.

Demy 8vo., 18s.

...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...

...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...

...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...

...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...

...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...

...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...
...the ...

THE
ENGLISH POOR LAW SYSTEM
PAST AND PRESENT.

BY DR. P. F. ASCHROTT,

PRUSSIAN DISTRICT JUDGE.

(*König. preuss. Amtsrichter.*)

TRANSLATED BY

HERBERT PRESTON-THOMAS.

WITH A PREFACE BY

HENRY SIDGWICK,

KNIGHTBRIDGE PROFESSOR OF MORAL PHILOSOPHY IN THE UNIVERSITY
OF CAMBRIDGE.

LONDON:
KNIGHT & CO., 90, FLEET STREET.
1888.

POOR LAW : Great Britain

FA 1

GREAT BRITAIN : Poor Law

95400

(2) JQC.41(2)

LONDON:

PRINTED BY WILLIAM CLOWES AND SONS, LIMITED,

STAMFORD STREET AND CHARING CROSS.



TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

It seems desirable to state that not only have the references to Acts of Parliament, Official Orders, Reports, and other authorities, been carefully verified, but the proofs of the body of this work have been revised by experts possessing a practical knowledge of poor law administration; while the second Appendix, describing the operations of the Charity Organization Society, has been read by Mr. C. S. Loch, Secretary to that Society. As a result of this revision, certain alterations of detail have been made, with Dr. Aschrott's general concurrence, in order to ensure absolute accuracy in matters of fact, but I have not thought it necessary to encumber the notes with particulars of each deviation from the original text. To the assistance kindly given by the gentlemen referred to, the translation owes a great deal.

H. PRESTON-THOMAS.

UNION CLUB, S.W.

August, 1888.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016

P R E F A C E.

WHEN I read, two years ago, Dr. Aschrott's book on *Das Englische Armen-Wesen*, I felt that a need, which had for some time been growing in urgency, had been supplied by a remarkably thorough piece of work, and that an English translation of the book would be of real value not only to all persons professionally concerned with the administration of our poor law, but also to all English men and women who concern themselves seriously with social questions. I also thought that, while there were some disadvantages in the work being done by a foreigner, there was on the whole a decided balance of advantage: since thus the very important gain was secured that the English poor law was viewed and judged as one method among many of solving a most difficult problem of practical politics, by a writer intimately acquainted with the merits and defects of a very different method. I propose to employ the few pages of this preface in explaining briefly my reasons for the views just expressed.

The practice of almsgiving is of immemorial antiquity; its recognition as a prominent duty of persons enjoying superfluous wealth is coextensive with the influence of Christianity; while, on the other hand, it has not been left for the present age to discover that indiscriminate almsgiving causes more evil than it cures. At the same time I think there can be no doubt that during the last twenty years the need that charitable relief should be not only prompt and generous, but also systematic and circumspect, has been felt in England with growing force. And, in proportion as this need has been felt, it has also been recognized with increasing clearness that thoughtful and circumspect almsgiving requires an intimate knowledge of the legal system of poor relief;—knowledge not merely of its actual condition, but also of its ultimate aims and tendencies of development.

This is partly because it has been found impossible to carry out completely in practice the division of work between private and

public poor relief, which—under the influence of such writers as J. S. Mill—had found wide theoretical acceptance among the generation that followed the subsidence of the bitter conflict fought over the Poor Law of 1834. According (*e.g.*) to Mill (*Political Economy*, Book v., ch. xi., p. 13), the division of work is very simple. The State is concerned solely with the question of need: it should abandon to private charity the task of distinguishing differences of desert. All persons should be guaranteed against absolute want, with the proviso that “the condition of those who are supported by legal charity,” should be kept, if possible, “considerably less desirable than the condition of those who find support for themselves;” and the minimum thus secured, “even to the very worst,” should be also the maximum that the “administrators of a public fund” should be required to do for anybody. “To discriminate between the deserving and undeserving indigent” is the “peculiar and appropriate province” of private charity, and should be entirely left to it.

According to this view, the aims of poor law and private charity being essentially different, each might go its way without more than a vague and general knowledge of the manner in which the other agency was doing its work. And I conceive that this division of labour still remains the ideal of most thoughtful persons who believe in the general soundness of the English system of poor relief. But it is only in one department of the work of the poor law that it has been even approximately realized—*i.e.*, in the treatment of the destitute able-bodied, so far as the workhouse test has been firmly applied. To the case of outdoor relief the distinction does not seem to be really applicable. Such relief is almost universally preferred by the recipients to relief in the workhouse: at the same time the guardians are not legally bound to give outdoor relief, and their views as to propriety of giving it vary considerably: accordingly, in distinguishing the cases in which outdoor relief ought to be given from those in which it ought to be refused, they necessarily undertake a task of discrimination similar to that of private charity. It therefore becomes important for the private almsgiver to know exactly upon what principles and with what effects the public outdoor relief is administered.

On the other hand, experience has shown the increasing difficulty of performing well the discriminative operation which it is agreed to allot to private charity, so long as private almsgiving is unsystematized, and is left to individuals acting without concert. In rural districts where neighbourhood, in the case of any one anxious to do his duty to his fellows, implies some degree of real acquaintance, it is

perhaps possible for individuals acting independently to fulfil the duty of distinguishing the deserving from the undeserving indigent with tolerable success; but in towns of any size this is hardly possible, and the difficulty increases with the growth of industrial centres. Hence the movement represented by the Charity Organization Society,—of which Dr. Aschrott recognizes the fundamental importance, devoting to its discussion a special appendix. Persons who aim at rational almsgiving are driven to work in concert, and largely by the method of committees and professional agents; and thus we get, from the other side, a further approximation between the practical administrations of private and public relief respectively. They not only aim to some extent at solving the same problem—discrimination between the deserving and the undeserving indigent—but they deal with it by more or less similar organizations. So long as the question for the private almsgiver is simply, “Does this man deserve to be saved by me from the workhouse?” it is not necessary that he should know much about the workhouse; there is a visiting Committee of Guardians to look after its management, and a Local Government Board with inspectors and justices to look after the Visiting Committee: the private almsgiver may leave the matter in their hands. But when the question is whether the indigent are to be relieved in their own homes by a committee of philanthropists administering funds derived from subscriptions, or a committee of guardians administering funds derived from the rates, an intimate mutual acquaintance between the two committees is an almost indispensable condition of any satisfactory division of labour between them: and, in fact, in the metropolitan parishes, where the Charity Organization Society has been most successful, its success has been largely due to close and cordial co-operation with the guardians.

Hence, even for private philanthropists who are thoroughly satisfied with the existing system of public relief in England, an ultimate knowledge of its organization and working becomes every year more desirable.

But this is not all: the same period of twenty years, in which private almsgiving has made continually greater efforts to understand and realize its true relation to the actual system of public poor relief, has also witnessed a growing tendency to fundamental and sweeping criticisms of that system; criticisms more formidable, because generally more rational, sober, and well-informed, than those which the system had to meet during the first few years after its institution.

These criticisms come from very different quarters, and are based on very diverse views as to the right mode of dealing with pauperism.

There is, in the first place, the view held by many thoughtful persons in Germany—a peculiar form of which has been advocated for some years with much zeal and ability by Canon Blackley¹—that the whole method of “throwing on the provident the support of the improvident” is radically wrong in theory, and mischievous in practice: and that at any rate the normal emergencies of disease (including accident) and old age should be met, in whole or in part, by persuading or compelling the individual to insure himself against them. Other thinkers,² with an equally keen sense of the disadvantages of securing to every individual a legal right to be supported by his fellows, advocate imitation of the French system; according to which the State supervises the administration of poor relief, but leaves, in the main, to private benevolence, the provision of the requisite funds. In this way the objection urged by Mill against private charity—that it “always does too much or too little”—is as far as possible avoided; while at the same time the improvident are prevented from claiming sustenance as rightfully due to them from a practically inexhaustible public purse.

I conceive, however, that few persons of experience in England would regard it as within the limits of a probable forecast of the future that either self-help, voluntary or compulsory, or private charity, however systematized and supervised, should enable us to dispense with poor relief obtained from taxes. For a long time to come, at any rate, we shall have to work with a combination of all three methods. But it seems by no means unlikely that either or both of the former methods may be considerably extended; and in order to judge of any movement in either direction we require a full and intimate knowledge of the actual working of the poor law, which must necessarily be materially affected by any such movement.

But the critics who wish to supersede or diminish public poor relief are not the only assailants of our present system: there are far more dangerous antagonists who aim at making it more copious and indulgent. The old attacks on the Poor Law of 1834, as needlessly harsh and unsympathetic, have never quite died out, and they have received important reinforcement from the spread of socialistic and semi-socialistic opinions in recent years. And there are many signs that the increasing power which the growth of democracy places in

¹ In Canon Blackley's scheme, the fund required to furnish a minimum of 8s. a week in sickness and 4s. a week in old age is to be provided, generally speaking, by compulsory weekly payments for four years from the age of 18 to 21.

² See (*e.g.*) an article by the Rev. W. W. Edwardes on “The Poor in France,” in the *Nineteenth Century* for February, 1879.

the hands of manual labourers is not unlikely to be used in the direction of diminishing the deterrent character of our poor law administration. This is not the place to consider whether attempts of this kind are to be altogether resisted, or whether there is any way of meeting them by partial concession, which will be less dangerous than a simple "non possumus." What I am now concerned to urge is that it is, in any case, obviously desirable that English citizens should enter upon the consideration of so momentous a change with as full a knowledge as possible not only of their poor law as it actually exists, but also of its previous history and of the causes that have determined its course of development.

For this purpose I think that Dr. Aschrott's book will be found especially useful. Though the largest portion of it is concerned with the present condition and working of the English poor law, the historical part which comes first is much more than a mere introductory sketch. It gives in adequate detail all the important facts, of which the knowledge is necessary for an independent apprehension of the process of development that is being described, and it gives them with such manifest "objectivity" that the reader must feel that the writer's primary aim is to set the facts before him, and leave him to draw his own conclusions.

Not that Dr. Aschrott abstains from criticism. Indeed he dwells with emphasis on the mischievous effects of the law of settlement and removal, elaborated in the latter half of the seventeenth century, and speaks with no little severity of the motives that prompted this legislation. So, again, he does not spare the mistaken humanitarianism which, towards the close of the last century, encouraged outdoor relief even to the able-bodied, and introduced the system of allowances in aid of wages. But his most important concern is to trace carefully and impartially the long and deliberate process by which, in the nineteenth century, the lessons of experience have been turned to account, and the present elaborate, carefully articulated, and energetically administered system of public poor relief has been built up.

The most important distinctive features of this system obtain from Dr. Aschrott a well-considered and guarded, but, on the whole, decided approval; and the reasons for this approval, as well as his free criticisms of certain points in our system, are (as I have already said) especially interesting as made from a German point of view. The success with which, in our system, the difficulties of settlement and removal have been finally reduced to insignificance; the effective and complete co-operation between central and local administrative

bodies that it maintains ; the manner in which the workhouse—the essential pivot on which the whole system turns—is kept adequately deterrent to the mass of able-bodied labourers, and yet free from needless harshness to those who are forced to enter it : all these are characteristics of the English system which, in Dr. Aschrott's view, qualify it to serve as a model to other countries. On the other hand, the most admirable feature of modern German poor relief is the care and thought bestowed on the difficult task of leading back the pauper wholly or partially to the habits and sentiments of self-supporting labour ; and on this side Dr. Aschrott pronounces the English workhouse seriously defective. The question of proper employment for the inmates of a workhouse, of finding labour which the labourer can take an interest in, and which may stimulate in him, if he is still able-bodied, both the desire and the hope of making his way back to self-supporting independence : this question, Dr. Aschrott thinks, has received much too little consideration in England, although any satisfactory solution of it would also be likely to afford a not unimportant gain in the economy of workhouse administration. The patient effort to overcome or evade practical difficulties, which Dr. Aschrott finds in other parts of the development of our system, does not seem to him to have been applied in this case.¹

I think there is much force in this criticism ; and similarly I should agree that the English treatment of vagrants and casual paupers is by no means satisfactory ; and that some more “educative” method of dealing with those of them that are capable of being redeemed from vagrancy, some provision of facilities and inducements to bring about their return to the paths of honest toil, is much to be desired ; while for the incorrigible tramp and street-beggar, probably a more effectual enforcement of legal penalties is to be aimed at.

¹ I may perhaps draw attention to the at first—apparently—very successful efforts made at Newcastle-on-Tyne to provide educative industrial employment for the inmates of the workhouse. We learn from the introduction to the *Charities Register and Digest*, published by the Charity Organization Society, that “a long range of workshops has been erected by the inmates (of the workhouse), who are there put to various trades, as joiners, plumbers, sawyers, &c. The old men, who are unfitted for outdoor work are employed in teasing hair for upholsterers. For labourers there is garden land of fifteen acres There has been considerable saving to ratepayers ;” and “many have told the master, Mr. J. J. Howitt, that ‘they may as well work outside for themselves as inside for him !’”

I have, however, recently received information that Mr. Howitt's system has not continued to realise the anticipations formed when it was first started ; and that the description just quoted is no longer applicable to the Newcastle Workhouse.

But to discuss these practical problems at all adequately would carry me far beyond the scope of this brief preface. Dr. Aschrott's primary object is not to award praise or blame, but to convey information. And it is from this point of view that I especially wish to commend his book ; firstly, to Guardians of the Poor and Poor Law Officers, who will be able to obtain from it both a clear and firm grasp of the principles on which they ought to act, and accurate knowledge of the laws and orders which regulate the application of these principles ; and, secondly, to all Englishmen who are seriously interesting themselves in the mitigation or cure of indigence ; who will find here, in a compact and business-like form, all that it is most important for them to know concerning the history and present operation of the great "classic" example of public poor relief established in their country,

HENRY SIDGWICK.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

THE HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE ENGLISH POOR LAW.

	PAGE
SECTION I.—EARLY LEGISLATION	I
Ecclesiastical Charters, 1; measures against vagrancy, 2; their failure, 3; the poor law of 1535-6, 3; further development of the poor law from 1536 to 1601, 4.	
SECTION II.—THE ACT OF ELIZABETH (1601)	6
Its main provisions, 6; the altered character of poor law administration, 8.	
SECTION III.—THE ACT OF SETTLEMENT OF CHARLES II. (1662)	9
The general character and tendency of the Act; its main provisions, 10; its effect; especially as regards increase of paupers, raising of the rates, and legal disputes, 12; modifications of the Act by legislative and judicial decisions, 12.	
SECTION IV.—LEGISLATION FROM 1601 TO 1723	14
Alterations in the functions of the overseers and the justices, 14; proposals for employing able-bodied paupers in workhouses, 15; the first workhouses, 15; Act of 1723, 16.	
SECTION V.—DEFECTIVE POOR LAW ADMINISTRATION	16
Humanitarian notions become paramount, 17; literary attacks on the poor law system; Thomas Alcock, Joseph Townsend and Malthus; on the other side, Henry Fielding, Cooper, Dr. Burn, Adam Smith, Burke, 17; amendment of the Law of Settlement by the Act of 1795, 18; Gilbert's Act, its chief provisions, its character, and its results, 19; the allowance system; the "Speenhamland Act of Parliament"; W. Whitbread's Bill; Pitt and Jeremy Bentham, 21; the Act of 1796, 22; enormous rise in the poor rate, 22.	
SECTION VI.—LEGISLATION FROM 1817 TO 1834	23
Appointment of a select committee on the poor laws in 1817, 23; Sturges Bourne's Act of 1819; its new provisions, 23; Hobhouse's Act of 1831, 25; the Vagrants Act of 1824, 25.	
SECTION VII.—THE ROYAL COMMISSION OF ENQUIRY (1832-1834)	26
Agitation for poor law reform; Dr. Thomas Chalmers, 26; appointment of a Royal Commission, 28; Report of the Commission of 20th February, 1834, 28; the principles of the Act of Elizabeth contrasted with the actual administration; modes of relief, 29; evil	

	PAGE
effect on those relieved and on the working classes generally, 30 ; chief abuses ; inefficiency of administration and want of supervision, 32 ; description of the overseers, 33 ; apathy of the justices, 33 ; recom- mendations of the Commission ; establishment of a Central Board ; introduction of permanent paid officers ; formation of larger areas of administration ; erection of workhouses, 35.	
SECTION VIII.—THE POOR LAW OF 14TH AUGUST, 1834	37
Summary of its provisions, 37.	
SECTION IX.—FURTHER DEVELOPMENT OF THE SYSTEM BEFORE THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE POOR LAW BOARD	44
The Poor Law Commissioners ; formation of unions ; principles acted upon, 44 ; the General Consolidated Order of 24th July, 1847, 47 ; Act of 1836 as to parochial assessments, 48 ; Acts of 1842 and 1844, 49 ; necessity for amendment of the Laws of Settlement and Removal, 51 ; Peel's Bill ; the Act of 1846, 52.	
SECTION X.—THE POOR LAW BOARD	52
Drawbacks of the previous position of the Central Authority, 52 ; Reorganization under the Act of 1847, 53.	
SECTION XI.—LEGISLATIVE IMPROVEMENTS FROM 1847 TO 1860. . . .	55
Bodkin's Act, 56 ; attempts to remove inequalities of rating, 56 ; Select Committee of 1847, 57 ; Mr. Disraeli's proposal of 1850, 57 ; Mr. Baines' Bill as to Settlement and Removal, 57 ; the Act of 1861, 59 ; Reports of the Central Board, 59 ; audit, 60 ; medical relief, 61 ; enactments as to the treatment of pauper lunatics, 62 ; endeavours to secure uniform assessment for the poor rate ; the Union Assessment Committee Act of 1862, 64.	
SECTION XII.—MOVEMENT IN FAVOUR OF REFORM ; THE SELECT COMMITTEE OF 1861-1864	64
Social Science Congress at Glasgow in 1860, 65 ; distress in London in the winter of 1860-1861, 66 ; appointment of a Select Committee on Poor Law Administration in 1861, 66 ; cotton famine ; Union Relief Aid Act, 1862 ; proceedings in Parliament, 67 ; Report of the Select Committee of 31st May, 1864 ; its recommendations, 67 ; Mr. Villiers, 69.	
SECTION XIII.—LEGISLATION ON THE COMMITTEE'S RECOMMENDATION	69
Act of 1864 as to pensions to paid officers, 69 ; Metropolitan House- less Poor Act, 1864, 69 ; Union Chargeability Act, 1865, 70 ; Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867, 71 ; Poor Law Board Act, 1867, 74.	
SECTION XIV.—PROGRESS OF LEGISLATION SINCE 1868	74
Chief objects of legislation, 74 ; special provisions for the metropolis ; Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869, 76 ; Valuation (Metro- polis) Act, 1869, 76 ; Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1870, 77 ; extension of the powers of the Central Board by the Act of 1868, 79 ; the Poor Rate Assessment and Collection Act, 1869 ; the system of compounding the rates, 79 ; the Rating Act, 1874, 80 ; the Union Assessment Act, 1880, 80 ; the Local Government Board Act, 1871, 80 ; the Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871 ; the Casual Poor Act, 1882, 81 ; amendment of the provisions as to loans to poor law authorities, 82 ; provisions as to proceedings against putative fathers of illegitimate children, 83 ; Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Acts, 83 ; District Auditors Act, 1879, 85 ; Report of the Commons Committee on the Laws of Settlement and Removal, 86 ; poor law conferences ; the Act of 1883, 86.	

SECTION XV.—PROCEEDINGS OF THE CENTRAL BOARD	PAGE 88
Necessity for defining the provinces of the poor law and of private charity ; Mr. Goschen's circular of 20th November, 1869, 90 ; Charity Organization and the C. O. S., 92 ; circular of 2nd December, 1872, on outdoor relief ; consequent diminution of outdoor relief, 93 ; new poor law establishments ; provision of a special workhouse for able-bodied men ; erection of casual wards ; improvements in medical relief ; establishment of dispensaries ; education of pauper children, 96 ; the action of the Central Board as effective as legislation in securing improvements, 98.	
SUMMARY	99

PART II.

THE EXISTING RELIEF SYSTEM.

INTRODUCTION ; the essentials of a relief system ; theories	104
---	-----

CHAPTER I.

THE POOR LAW—RIGHTS AND DUTIES.

SECTION I.—THE LAW REGULATING RELIEF	107
Absolute destitution a condition of relief, 107 ; repayment of relief granted, 107 ; responsibility of relations, 108 ; claims against putative fathers of illegitimate children, 108 ; relief granted to members of a family is regarded as relief to the head of the family ; exceptions, 109 ; disfranchisement, 109 ; relief by way of loan, 110.	
SECTION II.—CONNEXION OF RELIEF WITH DOMICILE	110
Sketch of the development of this question, 110 ; the Select Committee of 1879, 112 ; the present position of the matter, 114.	
SECTION III.—THE LAWS OF SETTLEMENT AND REMOVAL.	114
Cases in which the destitute person must be relieved where resident, 114 ; grounds of settlement, 116 ; orders of removal, 118 ; non-resident relief, 120 ; statistics of orders of removal, 121.	
SECTION IV.—POOR LAW DISTRICTS	121
The parish, 121 ; the union, 125 ; combinations of unions ; the metropolis ; the county, 126.	
SECTION V.—GENERAL PRINCIPLES REGULATING THE GRANT OF RELIEF.	127
Necessity for strict regulations, 127 ; proper principles, 129 ; relief of the able-bodied, 131.	
SECTION VI.—CHIEF METHODS OF RELIEF	132
The workhouse test, 132 ; the outdoor relief prohibitory and outdoor relief regulation orders, 133 ; the workhouse as a normal means of relief, 135 ; pauper children, 135 ; the sick, 136 ; casual paupers, 136.	

	PAGE
SECTION VII.—SECURITIES FOR DUE RELIEF	137
Usual procedure, 137 ; special provisions for sudden and urgent necessity, 138 ; supply of the necessary funds, 138 ; securities against the improper refusal of relief, 139 ; legal provisions, 139 ; check on improper expenditure by the establishment of a system of audit, 140.	

CHAPTER II.

THE POOR RATE.

SECTION I.—SOURCES OF RECEIPTS	143
Loans for relief purposes, 143 ; grants in aid, 146 ; reasons against relief expenditure being defrayed by the State, 147.	
SECTION II.—THE POOR RATE	147
Application of the principles of the Act of Elizabeth, 147 ; exemptions from the poor rate, 148 ; the person to be rated ; and the system of compounding the rate, 150.	
SECTION III.—INCIDENCE OF THE POOR RATE	151
The poor rate as a tax on income and as a tax on expenditure ; objections to its fairness, 151 ; question of altering its incidence as between real and personal property, 153 ; parliamentary debates of 1885, 154.	
SECTION IV.—ASSESSMENT AND RATING	154
Duties of the overseers, 154 ; assessment, 155 ; the union assessment committee and the valuation list, 155 ; appeals, 157 ; levy of the rate, 158.	

CHAPTER III.

POOR LAW ADMINISTRATION.

SECTION I.—LOCAL ORGANIZATION	159
The co-operation of paid and honorary officials and the control by the Central Board, 159 ; number of paid officers, 160 ; their duties, 161 ; functions of the justices, 163.	
SECTION II.—THE CENTRAL AUTHORITY	164
Establishment of the Central Board ; its functions, 164 ; its organization, 165 ; its powers as to (a) the formation of unions and the appointment of paid officers, 167 ; (b) the issue of orders supplementary to the statute law, 168 ; (c) control of the current administration, 170 ; (d) complaints and disallowances, 171 ; (e) the collection of information and the introduction of new methods, 171.	
SECTION III.—THE POOR LAW INSPECTORS	173
Their number ; their functions, 173-4.	
SECTION IV.—THE AUDITORS	175
Development of the audit system, 175 ; powers and duties of the auditors, 176.	

	PAGE
SECTION V.—THE OVERSEERS	178
Altered position of overseers in the poor law organization, 178 ; their duties, 179 ; their appointment by the justices, 179 ; appointment of paid assistant overseers and collectors of poor rates, 180.	
SECTION VI.—THE GUARDIANS	180
Elected and ex-officio guardians, 180 ; the election of guardians, 181 ; procedure of boards of guardians, 183 ; functions of the guardians, 184 ; composition of boards of guardians ; female guardians, 186 ; proposed alterations as regards elections of guardians and the term of office, 188.	
SECTION VII.—PAID OFFICERS	189
The clerk to the guardians, 189 ; relieving officer, 190 ; other paid officers, 192 ; salaries, 193.	

CHAPTER IV.

PARTICULAR BRANCHES OF THE POOR LAW.

SECTION I.—OUTDOOR RELIEF	195
Relief in money and in kind, 196 ; the labour test, 196 ; payment of school fees, 197 ; apprenticeship of pauper children, 198 ; emigration, 200.	
SECTION II.—THE WORKHOUSE PRINCIPLE	202
Arguments for and against the workhouse principle, criticism, 202.	
SECTION III.—WORKHOUSE ADMINISTRATION	207
The workhouse staff, 207 ; admission to the workhouse, 208 ; classification of inmates, 208 ; discipline and diet, 209 ; punishment, 212 ; almshouses or workhouses ? 213 ; workhouse labour ; defects of present system, 215.	
SECTION IV.—PAUPER CHILDREN	219
Difficulties in the way of a satisfactory system for bringing up pauper children, 219 ; the various methods in use—(a) workhouse education and its drawbacks, 220 ; (b) district schools, 221 ; (c) the boarding-out system, 222 ; (d) education at national or board schools, 224 ; (e) emigration to the colonies, 224 ; separate schools, cottage homes, 225 ; training-ships, 226 ; certified schools, 226 ; impossibility of getting rid of workhouse schools, 228 ; recent improvements in district and separate schools, 229 ; necessity for limiting parental authority over children brought up by the guardians, 231 ; establishment of industrial schools, 232.	
SECTION V.—POOR LAW MEDICAL RELIEF	233
Objections to the existing system, 233 ; suggestions for amendment, especially Canon Blackley's scheme of national insurance, 234 ; outdoor medical relief and the payment of district medical officers, 235 ; establishment of dispensaries, 237 ; medical extras, 238 ; provident societies, 239 ; infirmaries ; trained nurses, 240 ; pauper lunatics and grants in aid, 242 ; increasing number of lunatics, 245.	
SECTION VI.—CASUAL PAUPERS AND BEGGARS	247
Difficulty of distinguishing between professional beggars and working men in search of employment, 247 ; legislation against rogues and vagabonds and its practical effect, 248 ; the relief of casual paupers,	

	PAGE
249 ; casual wards, 250 ; drawbacks, 252 ; improvements desirable, 254 ; the Berkshire system, 254.	
SECTION VII.—METROPOLITAN POOR LAW ADMINISTRATION . . .	255
Administration in London, 255 ; unions and parishes, 256 ; the metropolitan common poor fund, 257 ; the metropolitan asylums board, 258 ; the establishments under it, 259 ; the new infirmaries, 260 ; dispensaries, 261 ; increased expenditure, 261 ; diminution in cost of outdoor relief, 262.	
CONCLUDING OBSERVATIONS	263

APPENDICES.

APPENDIX I.—PRIVATE RELIEF AND THE CHARITY ORGANIZATION SOCIETY, AS SUPPLEMENTARY TO THE POOR LAW SYSTEM . .	270
APPENDIX II.—POOR LAW STATISTICS	279

THE ENGLISH POOR LAW SYSTEM.

PART I.

HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT OF THE ENGLISH POOR LAW.

SECTION I.

EARLY LEGISLATION.

IN England, as on the Continent, the interference of the State in the province of the poor law was in the first instance of a purely negative character. It took the form of measures, not for the benefit of the poor, but for the repression of mendicancy. These enactments belonged to a time when the positive duty of relief was in the hands of the Church, which devoted a portion of its ample resources to the support of the poor by its own agencies.¹ And the ground for the interference of the State was the same as led to similar measures abroad, namely, the fashion in which the Church's doles were dispensed.

The view of charity fostered by the Church, which saw in parting with superfluities, in alms-giving for its own sake, without regard to consequences, a work well-pleasing to God, doubtless caused the stream of charitable gifts to flow copiously; but determining, as it practically did, the mode in which these gifts were distributed, it demoralized the recipients by the unreflecting bestowal of relief, and thus deadened the sense of personal responsibility in ever-widening circles of the population, the result being an increase of pauperism and an aggravation of the very evil that had to be cured. On this point we may quote an old English author. Fuller² describes the abbeys as dispensing "mistaken charity, promiscuously entertaining some who did not need, and more who did not deserve it." He continues: "Yea, these abbeys did but maintain poor which they

¹ One third of the tithes was devoted to the relief of the poor. The monasteries and other ecclesiastical foundations were specially employed for this purpose. [The statement that a definite proportion of tithes was allotted to relief is of doubtful authority. See the Earl of Selborne's 'Defence of the Church of England' (London, 1887), pp. 146-159.—TR.]

² Fuller. 'Church History,' ed. 1656, p. 298.

made. . . . We may observe that generally such places wherein the great abbeys were seated swarm most with poor people at this day, as if beggary were entailed on them."

The number of persons living in idleness and beggary, although perfectly capable of work, increased to such an extent that even the funds of the Church were insufficient for their relief. Beggars, grown unaccustomed to work, began to roam about the country asking for alms as soon as they ceased to find support at home, and became rogues and vagabonds who endangered public order and safety as well as the property and the lives of the citizens. The State was therefore obliged to interpose in the public interest. The main object throughout was to protect society against the swarms of beggars.

The particular provisions of the numerous laws passed with this object have no further interest. Each begins by reciting that the "good statutes before made" have been without effect, and then proceeds to increase the previous penalties. To give an idea of this legislation, it will be sufficient to specify the provisions of the Act 12 Richard II., c. 7 & 8, of the year 1388. This Act prohibits vagrancy and wandering about the country. "Beggars impotent to serve" are to remain in the place where they are staying at the time of the proclamation of the Act. If they cannot be maintained there, they are to be sent back to their birthplaces. Then follow penalties of extraordinary severity against "sturdy vagabonds," "valiant beggars"; and these penalties were steadily increased under later Acts till a graduated scale was formed under which the first offence was punishable by a public whipping; the second, by loss of ears; the third by hanging.

In these provisions, which are of a purely repressive nature, lies the germ of the later development. From the restrictions on vagrancy, which were strengthened by the subsequent laws (19 Hen. VII. c. 12; 1 Ed. VI. c. 3), sprang the later law of settlement. The special treatment of the class of valiant beggars¹ was the origin of the distinction, which afterwards became so important, between the able-bodied and those incapable of work. It is not surprising that these laws remained without practical effect; for even in that age the penalties were too barbarous to be generally enforced. Besides, it was impossible successfully to carry out enactments so essentially adverse to the views then current as to the religious duty of almsgiving, so long as the ecclesiastical charities were in existence, and were conducted on the principles which then governed them. It is clearly illogical on the one hand to regard almsgiving as a work pleasing to God, and on the other to treat asking for alms as a capital crime.

A long time elapsed before there was any substantial alteration in this respect, and it was mainly due to external circumstances that the State again interposed with repressive regulations, and that principles not in accordance with the ecclesiastical view of charity gradually forced their way into acceptance. On the border between

¹ "Beggars able to labour," in contradistinction to "beggars impotent to serve."

such regulations and the provision of relief by the State, stands the Act of 1531,¹ 22 Hen. VIII. c. 12.

Though this Act was mainly of a repressive character, it contained certain new provisions, in which we may trace the germs of action of a positive kind. Besides the penalties imposed on persons found begging, "though whole and mighty in body, and able to labour," we find regulations for those incapable of work, who are to be provided with letters of licence from the magistrates, defining strictly the limits within which they are permitted to beg. This law shows clearly that the State had arrived at the conviction that the provision made by the Church for the help of those incapable of work had ceased to be sufficient. The decay of the Church and the decline of ecclesiastical influence reduced the means available for the assistance of the poor, while at the same time the demands upon these means were increased through the abolition of villenage, and consequently of the duty which that system had imposed upon the lords towards their necessitous labourers.

Shortly afterwards, the Reformation, which involved the secularization of Church property, threw on the State the further obligation of taking measures for the regulation of poor relief. The reformation began in England with the Act 23 Hen. VIII. c. 20, in the year 1532; the suppression of the small abbeys, priories, and other religious houses, succeeded in 1536, and three years later the larger abbeys and monasteries were dissolved. At the same time poor relief was regulated afresh under the Act 27 Hen. VIII. c. 25, of the year 1535-6.²

This Act makes individual parishes responsible for the maintenance of their poor, and further distinguishes between "poor, impotent, sick, and diseased people being not able to work," who may be "provided, holpen, and relieved," and "such as be lusty, having their limbs strong enough to labour," who "may be daily kept in continual labour, whereby every one of them may get their own living with their own hands." Very significant are the special provisions relating to the assistance to be given to the old and infirm. The clergy and local officials are to obtain charitable

¹ The title is "An Act directing how aged, poor and impotent persons compelled to live by alms shall be ordered, and how vagabonds and beggars shall be punished."

² Hallam in his 'Constitutional History,' vol. i., pp. 108-9, asserts that the dissolution of the monasteries and the new provisions as to relief stood in the relation of cause and effect. It may be granted that, even without this external cause, the legislature would in time have been brought by the stress of circumstances to the conclusion that all repressive regulations must be futile so long as they were not supplemented by measures of substantial relief, and therefore the intervention of the State as regards such relief would have taken place independently of the dissolution of the monasteries. This, however, does not alter the fact that, owing to the measures for the dissolution of the monasteries, by which a great number of poor were deprived of the relief which had hitherto been afforded them, the necessity of a reform of the system of poor relief made itself felt, and so at any rate the process was hastened. In part, therefore, temporary distress was the occasion of the legislation referred to.

offerings, "gathering and procuring voluntary alms of the good Christian people within the same [parish] with boxes every Sunday and holiday or otherwise." The contributions are to be administered as "common fund, stock of the parish," and an accurate account is to be kept of the distribution. Private alms to beggars ("any open or common dole") are forbidden upon pain of forfeiting ten times the amount given.

In these provisions is laid the groundwork for the numerous Acts of the succeeding period. The reign of Edward VI. produced several statutes on the subject (1 Ed. VI. c. 3; 3 & 4 Ed. VI. c. 16), and that of Queen Mary a single Act (2 & 3 Phil. and Mary, c. 5). Special attention was given to the subject in the reign of Queen Elizabeth (5 Eliz. c. 3; 14 Eliz. c. 5; 18 Eliz. c. 3; 39 Eliz. c. 3), and the celebrated Poor Law of the year 1601 consolidated and gave effect to the provisions of the previous enactments. The legislation from 1536 to 1601 is that of a transition period. It develops the principles laid down in the law of Henry VIII., and adds to them those on which the comprehensive Act of the year 1601 was founded.

As regards the able-bodied, the stringent penalties against beggars, and the provision that they are to be set to work, are repeated.¹ With the latter object, the law of 1575-6 provides that stores of wool, hemp, and iron shall be kept ready in order to provide work for this class. The refusal of work offered subjects the pauper to severe punishment. Provision is made for the incorrigible by the establishment of Houses of Correction.

It may be convenient here to mention the provisions of the celebrated Act of Apprenticeship of the year 1562 (5 Eliz. c. 4), which, in its preamble, among other anticipations of the results which are to ensue from the carrying out of the law, declares the "good hope" that "idleness will be banished." To this end it enacts that all persons between the age of twelve and sixty who are without property, viz., who do not possess property of at least £10, or a fixed income of at least 40s., may be compelled by two magistrates, or by the mayor with two aldermen, to serve in husbandry within the county, or if they have been brought up to a trade, to work at that trade.

Still more comprehensive than these regulations for the able-bodied are those which deal with persons incapable of work, the "impotent, feeble, and lame, who are poor in very deed."

The chief question here is how to raise the necessary means for relief. By the Acts of 1555 and 1563, licenses to beg were allowed for parishes which are overburdened with pauperism; but in the Act of 1572 they are expressly revoked, and the system abolished.

¹ The preamble of the Act 1 Edw. VI. c. 3, is very significant:—"Partly by foolish pity and mercy of them which should have seen the said goodly laws executed, partly by the perverse nature and long-accustomed idleness of the persons given to loitering, the said goodly statutes hitherto have had small effect, and idle and vagabond persons being unprofitable members or rather enemies of the commonwealth have been suffered to remain and increase, and yet do so."

The Act of 1572 renews the prohibition of private almsgiving which had been formulated in the Act of Henry VIII. This clearly illustrates the alteration in public opinion which had taken place, and which was of paramount importance as regards the question of poor relief. While the principles of the ecclesiastical charities were directly in favour of almsgiving, here, on the contrary, a penalty was attached to it. Any person harbouring, giving money, lodging, or other relief, to any such rogue, vagabond, or sturdy beggar, "either marked or not," is declared liable to a penalty of 20s. This "marking" was by branding on the shoulder as a means of identification—a new and not very humane measure against beggars, concerning whom the preamble of the Act states that "all parts of this realm of England and Wales be presently with rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars, exceedingly pestered, by means whereof daily happeneth in the same realm horrible murders, thefts, and other great outrages." It was supposed that the prohibition of alms would be followed by the suppression of begging, that if no one gave no one would beg,¹ a result which was unfortunately not attained by the statute. Moreover there was some hope that in consequence of the prohibition of almsgiving, the current of benevolence would run more strongly in another direction, and thus add to the relief fund of the parish.

All the enactments of this transition period have in view the increase of the "common fund."² The Act of 1551-2 orders the appointment of two or more "collectors of alms," who are to make lists of the grants, and of the poor to be supported, and by whom, as by the clergy, under the law of Henry VIII., the parishioners are to be "gently exhorted and admonished to contribute according to their means." If this exhortation were unsuccessful, the person obstinately refusing to contribute was to be brought before the bishop, who might take order for the charitable reformation of every such obstinate person. The Act of 1563 establishes a further resort. If the exhortations of the bishop have been fruitless, he is to hale the person "obstinately refusing to contribute" before the magistrate, who is in the first instance to "move and persuade" him, but may finally assess the contribution at the sum which he judges reasonable. The law of 1572 goes further still, and, without the intervention of the bishop, allows the magistrate to settle the weekly amount to be paid by persons who refuse to contribute voluntarily.

It will be seen that legislation progressed gradually. It was only

¹ An eminent legal writer of the 18th century, Dr. Burn, the learned author of the 'Justice of the Peace,' praises, in his 'History of the Poor Law,' the wisdom of this Act, and expresses the opinion, meant to apply to his own time, that "if none were to give, none would beg, and the whole mystery and craft would be at an end in a fortnight. If the principal is punished, it is not reasonable the accessory should go free. In order to which, let all who relieve a common beggar be subject to a penalty."

² This tendency led to the passing of the Act 39 Eliz. c. 5, of 1597, by which "private founders" are empowered to establish "hospitals, abiding places, and houses of correction," and are encouraged to found such institutions.

a step from the quasi-voluntary contributions of the Acts of 1563 and 1572 to a direct tax for the benefit of the poor; and the introduction of a Poor Rate, under the Act of 1601, was merely the result of a process of legislative development.

Besides the Collector of Alms, another office owes its origin to this transitional legislation. For two hundred years the overseer played a prominent part in the English poor law system, and is still of importance. This office was created in the year 1572, with a view to the better organization of the collection and distribution of the common fund. In the Act of 1597-8 it was ordered that in every parish overseers should be nominated by the justices, and their rights and duties were prescribed.¹

In this way the component parts of a State relief system have successively been developed, and by the end of the sixteenth century the foundations were laid for the great Poor Law of 1601, by which the thorough and systematic regulation of poor relief was attempted.² Even the measure of 1601 was at first regarded as only tentative. This may be inferred from the fact that, like a number of the statutes already mentioned, it was only to be in force until the end of the next Parliament. Its duration, however, was prolonged by a series of subsequent Acts (2 James I. c. 25 and c. 28; 3 Car. I. c. 4), and in the year 1640 it was made permanent by 16 Car. I. c. 4.

SECTION II.

THE ACT OF ELIZABETH.

The Poor Law of Elizabeth—"An Act for the Relief of the Poor" (43 Eliz. c. 2)—consists of twenty sections, of which only the first have a general application, while the others deal with particular questions.

The first section provides that overseers of the poor shall be annually nominated, for each parish, by the justices. Besides the churchwardens, from two to four substantial householders, according to the size of the parish, are to act in this capacity. Their duty is—

- (1) to take measures, with the consent of two justices, for setting to work children whose parents are unable to maintain them;
- (2) also to set to work persons who, having no means of support, do nothing to earn a livelihood;

¹ The Act of 1597-8 (39 Eliz. c. 3), was the result of the deliberation of a special committee of the House of Commons, upon which Sir Francis Bacon sat. It contains the main principles of the great Poor Law of 1601. To this committee was due a series of other important statutes on social and economic questions: 39 Eliz. c. 1, against the decaying of towns and houses of husbandry; c. 2, for maintenance of husbandry and tillage; c. 3, the above-named Act "for the relief of the poor"; c. 4, for punishment of rogues, vagabonds, and sturdy beggars; c. 5, for erecting of hospitals and working houses for the poor; c. 6, to reform deceits and breaches of trust touching lands given to charitable uses; c. 12, concerning labourers.

² Cf. Sir George Nicholls's 'History of the English Poor Law,' London, 1856, vol. i., p. 197: "The 43rd Eliz. was not the result of a sudden thought or a single effort, but was gradually framed upon the sure ground of experience."

(3) to raise weekly, by taxation of every inhabitant and occupier, such sums as they shall think fit—

(a) for obtaining a convenient stock of flax, hemp, wool, and other necessities for the poor to work upon ;

(b) for relieving the lame, impotent, blind, and others unable to work ;

(c) for putting out poor children as apprentices.

For these objects the overseers are to hold meetings at least once a month, and at the end of the year are to prepare a statement of account.

The second section gives power to the justices, where a parish cannot afford to bear the burthen of its own poor, to raise a rate-in-aid from other parishes in the same hundred, or even in the same county. Under the authority of the justices, the overseers are to collect the rate and to distrain upon persons who neglect to pay. If the distraint is without result, the justices may imprison the defaulters in the county gaol.

Under sect. 3 poor children may be bound apprentices, if boys, till their twenty-fourth year ; if girls, till their twenty-first year or their marriage.

By sect. 4 the churchwardens and overseers are empowered, with the assent of the lords of the manor, to erect on waste-lands houses for persons incapable of work, and to charge the cost to the parish, the hundred, or the county.

Sect. 5 provides for appeals to Quarter Sessions against the rate.

Sect. 6 regulates the legal responsibility of maintaining parents, grandparents, and children.

These are the essential provisions of the law. We may summarize the chief points in which it amended the previous system.

Poor relief is recognized in principle as a public concern. It is to be administered by individual parishes through overseers, who are to be appointed and constantly controlled by the justices. The burden of relief is distributed by taxation. In the first instance, however, the nearest of kin are made responsible for the maintenance of their relations ; and in case a single parish is overburthened, the neighbouring parishes may be called upon to contribute proportionately. The persons to be relieved are divided into three classes : children, able-bodied, infirm. The kind of assistance consists, in the case of children, in apprenticing them till their twenty-first or twenty-fourth year ; in the case of the able-bodied, by setting them to work (which they must perform, under penalty for refusal) ; in the case of the infirm, in maintaining them, with power to place them in poorhouses.

In all respects, the Act follows the earlier enactments, and yet its general character is absolutely different. Not only do penalties against mendicancy occupy the first place in all the Acts previously mentioned, but their main character is essentially that of police measures. The State had primarily in view the defence of the commonwealth against the dangers of mendicancy, and it was only

because repressive enactments could not be directed against those incapable of work, that it was found necessary to treat this class in a different fashion. In the Poor Law of Elizabeth, we look in vain for penalties against beggars.¹ Even the provisions for the relief of the infirm are remarkably subordinated to those as to the treatment of children and of the able-bodied. In this Act we recognize the State strong in the consciousness of its civilizing mission, not the State merely discharging the repressive functions of a previous period. The charge of the infirm cannot be left out of consideration, but the Legislature regards as its first task the charge of the rising generation, and the employment of labour in accordance with economical and moral principles. In the first place, the Act specifies as a duty of the overseers the apprenticeship of children "whose parents shall not be thought able to keep and maintain" them, and directs that they shall remain apprenticed till they are independent. In the second place, it lays down precautionary rules with reference to the treatment of the able-bodied. Care is to be taken that they shall be set to work, and that if they refuse to do it, they shall be punished. Provision for the infirm is not ordered in express words, but it is merely declared that the rate for other purposes shall also include a contribution sufficient for the relief of those who are incapable of work. On the question of the form which this relief is to take there is no enactment. The erection of poorhouses is only permissive.

Thus the character of the poor law system was materially altered by the Act of Elizabeth. But this alteration was closely allied to the previous enactments. The burden of relief still fell upon the parish. The chief agents for its administration were the overseers created under previous legislation; and the levying of a poor rate was the ultimate issue of a long course of development, which gradually gave to alms an obligatory character, and, by the power given to magistrates under the law of 1572, practically converted alms into rates.²

In this gradual development, in this almost invisible alteration of existing enactments, in this employment of old and familiar institutions as a stem upon which to graft new ideas, is shown that conservative character of English legislation which gives it such a charm in the eyes of the historian.

¹ Fowle's criticism ('The Poor Law,' London, 1881, p. 59) is exceedingly apposite, when he says that "The wisdom of the Act is almost as remarkable for what is omitted as for what is prescribed." Not only are there none of the barbarous penalties against beggars, which we find in the earlier Acts, but there is no reference to that question of settlement which in the later development of the poor law was the seed of so much evil. It was reserved for Charles II., a weak and incapable king, to introduce this question into poor law legislation, and to give it a shape which stood in the way of the salutary development of the Act of Elizabeth.

² A noteworthy memorial of the once ecclesiastical character of poor relief is to be found in the mention of the "parson" in the first place among those to be rated.

SECTION III.

THE ACT OF SETTLEMENT OF 1662.

The principles laid down in the Poor Law of Elizabeth could only be brought gradually into operation. The administration of the existing laws at that period was very defective. In the writings of that time¹ we often meet with complaints that the poor rates were not regularly paid, and that sufficient materials for the employment of the able-bodied were not provided.

If we except an enactment of the year 1610 (7 James I. c. 4), which ordered the building of Houses of Correction in every county, no amendment in the Act of Elizabeth was made for the next two generations. It was not till the year 1662 that there was any alteration of importance. In that year was passed the well-known Settlement Act (14 Car. II. c. 12), to which we cannot apply, as to the poor law of 1601, the epithet famous, but rather that of notorious. If in the Act of Elizabeth we recognize the strong and enlightened rule which strenuously maintained the interests of the commonwealth, the law of Charles II. is a reflection of that unhappy time which was characterized by party spirit and selfish designs, when a weak and morally despicable monarch, who only regarded his own interests, was ready to sacrifice the good of the community to the selfish wishes of particular classes and parties.

It is an uncontested and incontestable fact that this important Act, of which the consequences were so serious, was pushed through all the stages of legislation without affording either Parliament or public opinion time for discussion, merely because the representatives of London and a few wealthy landlords were desirous of lessening the burden of their own poor rates.

It cannot be justified on the ground that, though particular provisions are open to objection, it is, on the whole, merely a necessary extension of the Act of Elizabeth; for, by its clauses as to settlement, it narrows the circle of persons to whom the relief given by the individual parish is to extend, although in the principal Act the express duty of relief was not thus restricted.² It is true that in the preamble the Act declares that its object is, by establishing a system of settlement and removal, to prevent particular parishes from being unfairly affected by the influx of paupers. This point of view is characteristic of the time at which the Act was passed, when individuals, and especially landed proprietors in particular parishes, had regard only to the relief of the burdens specially affecting themselves, and troubled themselves little as to the effect which the

¹ Cf. especially the exhaustive work of Eden, *'The State of the Poor,'* 3 vols., London, 1793; also Pashley's *'Pauperism and Poor Laws,'* London, 1852; which gives much information as to the administration of the Act of Elizabeth in the 17th and 18th centuries; while for later times, Nicholls's *'History of the English Poor Law,'* is a rich store of facts.

² See Nicholls, p. 295, and George Coode's *'Reports to the Poor Law Board on the Law of Settlement and Removal,'* London, 1851.

measure might exercise on the community and on the general development of the country. While it is a matter of course that the Act of Charles II. should bring into prominence this new consideration, it is, on the other hand, equally characteristic of the spirit in which the law of Elizabeth was passed, that the latter does not touch the question of settlement, and declares generally that it is the duty of the district to relieve the poor within its borders.

The Act of Elizabeth, being passed in the interest of the community, not from the standpoint of the lord of the manor or of the rich citizen, had regard, as we have already said, to the improvement of the condition of the poor, by its provision for the rising generation, and by its employment of the labour available. A limitation of the burden of relief by the regulation of the law of settlement, with its necessary consequence of thrusting the poor from parish to parish, would not come within the purview of an Act of this kind. The absence of such provisions from the Act of Elizabeth is not due, as I believe, to legislative carelessness, but is intentional. Fowle's dictum, already quoted, applies here—"the wisdom of the Act is almost as remarkable for what is omitted as for what is prescribed." Narrow-minded apprehension of the possible burdening of individual parishes found no place under the robust rule of Elizabeth. Besides, any case of real overburdening was dealt with by the provision for the rate-in-aid. It must be remembered, too, that special laws¹ existed with regard to vagabonds, who were to be conveyed "to the place where born or where most conversant."

We now proceed to consider more closely the Act of Charles II. In the preamble it sets forth, among other matters—

"Whereas the necessity, number, and continual increase of the poor, not only within the cities of London and Westminster, but also through the whole kingdom, is very great and exceeding burthensome, being occasioned by reason of some defects in the law concerning the settling of the poor, and for want of a due provision of the regulations of relief and employment in such parishes or places where they are legally settled :

And "whereas by reason of some defects in the law, poor people are not restrained from going from one parish to another, and therefore do endeavour to settle themselves in those parishes where there is the best stock, the largest commons or wastes to build cottages, and the most woods for them to burn and destroy. Be it therefore enacted—" and now follows the new legislative provision—"that it shall and may be lawful, upon complaint made by the churchwardens or overseers of the poor of any parish to any justice of peace, within forty days after any such person or persons coming so to settle as aforesaid in any tenement under the yearly value of £10, for any two justices of the peace, whereof one to be of the quorum of the division where any person or persons that are likely to be chargeable to the parish shall come to inhabit, by their warrant to remove and convey such person or persons to such parish where he or they were

¹ 12 Rich. II. c. 7 & 8 ; 19 Hen. VII. c. 12 ; 1 Ed. VI. c. 3.

last legally settled, either as a native, householder, sojourner, apprentice, or servant for the space of forty days at the least, unless he or they give sufficient security for the discharge of the said parish, to be allowed by the said justices." In sect. 3, in order to facilitate the seeking of work in other parishes, especially at harvest time, it is ordered that labourers may be provided with certificates of origin from their own parish, in which case, if they get temporary work, they obtain no "settlement" through a residence of forty days, but may be sent back if destitute.

If we consider these provisions there can be no doubt, especially having regard to the preamble, that although the title of the Act declares it to be "for the better relief of the poor of this kingdom," it was not passed in the interests of the poor, but rather in that of rich places from which the poor were to be excluded. There is great significance in the words of the preamble, "not only within the cities of London and Westminster, but also through the whole kingdom." It was not contemplated that particular parishes would be so beset with poor that means for their relief would be lacking, but the fear was that the poor would betake themselves to the rich places in order to participate in the general prosperity there. The narrow-minded, petty, and reactionary character of the whole law is well represented in these introductory words. It was upon the same ground that the erection of new houses was then frequently prohibited; a petty protective policy for the benefit of the classes in possession, without any regard to the commonwealth or to the development of the state.¹

The willing, industrious workman who wishes to advance himself is hindered from choosing the place where he can work best and most profitably for the general good. In the country which generally sets such high value on personal freedom, the labourer is confined to the place of his settlement; that is, as a rule, to his birthplace. For, as the right of settlement was obtainable by forty days' residence, but during that period any one might be removed if likely to become a charge upon the rates, it was quite natural that the parish, by strictly exercising this power of removal, should endeavour to prevent the acquisition of a settlement, and the possible increase of the burden of relief.

The expression of the Act which authorizes removal on the ground that the person is "likely to be chargeable to the parish" is so vague that it would include anyone depending on labour for his livelihood. The workman who is not an owner of property is thus bound to the soil.²

¹ In this connection must be mentioned another clause of the Act of Charles II. (sect. 21), which provided that parishes consisting of several townships or villages might constitute them separate areas, each of which should maintain its own poor. Much use was made of this regulation, which suited the narrow-minded and selfish wishes of the rich proprietors. The number of the relief districts soon exceeded those of the parishes by several thousands.

² Fowle observes with justice as to this (page 63): "By this Act it may with truth be said that the iron of slavery entered into the soul of the English labourer and made him cling to his parish as a shipwrecked sailor to his raft."

Although the continual increase of the poor was attributed in the preamble of the Act to defects of previous legislation, the Act which purported to remove those defects had itself the greatest influence in augmenting pauperism. It removed from the workmen, if not the possibility, at any rate the desire of seeking occupation outside their own parish; and as the result was that many able-bodied men remained where their work was not wanted or did not receive adequate remuneration, it followed that the number of those requiring relief was increased. This was recognized in the preamble of an Act of the year 1696-7, in which it is explicitly stated that many persons are chargeable to the rates merely for want of work in their own parish, though they could maintain themselves and their families in other places where sufficient employment is to be had, but that they are "confined to live in their own parishes, townships, or places, and not permitted to live elsewhere, though their labour is wanted in many other places where the increase of manufactures could employ more hands."¹

An increase of the cost of relief,² however, was not only produced through the increase of pauperism, but by the large and useless cost of sending back to their own parish persons who had no right of settlement elsewhere, and also by the extensive litigation and disputes arising out of the laws of settlement.

These disputes led to the passing of a series of new Acts on the subject.

Even in 1685 it became necessary to amend the Act of Charles II., under which, as set forth in 1 James II. c. 17. s. 3, "poor persons at their first coming to a parish do commonly conceal themselves," and it was accordingly enacted that the forty days' continuance in a parish, constituting a right of settlement, should be reckoned by the wardens or overseers of the parish (except in the cases where the ground of settlement is evident, such as apprenticeship or annual hiring) from the date when the residence was first notified to them.

In the year 1691 we find a further enactment (3 Will. & Mary, c. 11), which declares that notice in writing must be delivered to the parish of intended settlements, and that such notice shall be read in the church, so that everyone may be able to raise objection to the intruder. By this law the fresh grounds of settlement were the payment of public taxes, and the holding of any public annual office in the parish during one whole year.

The Courts held that the nature of settlement was such as to make it derivative from the parents by the children, and from the husband by the wife. The various grounds of settlement were further defined and limited by later Acts and legal decisions.

¹ 8 & 9 Will. III. c. 30.

² Coode, in the report above quoted, gives the costs of poor law relief in 1650 as £188,811, and in 1698 as £819,000, but expressly states that there was no more actual relief at the end of this period than at the beginning. While the Act of Elizabeth was only partially carried out, the local bodies showed immense activity in enforcing the Act of Charles II.

In the year 1696-7 it was declared by the 8 & 9 Will. III. c. 30, that unmarried persons should only gain a settlement after a year's actual service. The same Act also amended the system of certificates established by the Act of Charles II., by providing that persons with certificates of settlement attested by the parish officials, and allowed by two justices of the peace, could only be removed from a parish to which they had come for the purpose of obtaining temporary employment on their actually becoming chargeable to such parish, and not on the expectation that they might become so. On the other hand, they could only acquire a settlement in the new parish by the hire of a house of £10 annual rental, or through the exercise of a parish office for a year.

Apprentices and servants of "certificate men" were incapacitated under later Acts (9 Will. III. c. 11, and 12 Anne c. 18) from acquiring a fresh settlement.

Acts of Parliament and decisions of the Courts of Law were thus continually elaborating the law of settlement.

The action of the parochial officers was not so much devoted to helping the poor in a reasonable fashion as to carrying out the various enactments by which new labourers could be hindered from acquiring a settlement, and thus rendering the parish liable for their support.

Boundless energy and ingenuity were devoted to the object of allowing the settlement of as few persons as possible, and of securing the removal of all that could be removed. In apprenticing boys, the great thing was to find, not masters well able to teach their trade, but masters living in other parishes, since the apprentice obtained a settlement in the parish in which he was bound. People were warned against engaging persons for a year of service, as was formerly the rule, in order that settlements might not be acquired.¹

And this law of settlement, introduced into the relief system by the Act of Charles II., remained unaltered until the year 1795, except as regards the points of detail already mentioned. Its bad effect on the wage-earning class, and its mischievous influence upon the poor law administration, paralysed the good results which might have been expected from a strict execution of the Act of Elizabeth, and a rigid observance of the principles laid down in that measure.

¹ The description which Burn, in his 'History of the Poor Law' (p 121), gives of the functions of an overseer is very striking: "The office of an overseer seems to be understood to be this: to keep an extraordinary look-out to prevent persons coming to inhabit without certificates, and to fly to the justices to remove them; and if a man brings a certificate, then to caution all the inhabitants not to let him a farm of £10 a year, and to take care to keep him out of all parish offices, to warn them, if they will hire servants, to hire them half-yearly, or, if they do hire them for a year, then to endeavour to pick a quarrel with them before the year's end, and so to get rid of them. To bind out poor children apprentices, no matter to whom or to what trade, but to take special care that the master live in another parish."

SECTION IV.

LEGISLATION FROM 1601 TO 1723.

In other respects the essential principles of the Act of Elizabeth with regard to poor relief remained undisturbed until the year 1834. The legislature, at any rate till the reign of George III., scarcely touched the subject. Such acts as were passed made no changes of principle, and were only designed to secure the better execution of the statute of 1601. In reality, however, they not only failed in this object, but sowed the seed of fresh blunders, for which a remedy had to be sought in further legislation, itself by no means eminently successful.

The first point to be discussed in this connection is as to the position of the overseers, and their relations to the magistrates. The Act of Elizabeth had, as above mentioned, placed the general administration of relief under the control of the justices. The overseers were to act "with the consent of two or more justices of the peace," but this general supervision soon proved insufficient to hinder abuses on the part of the overseers.

An Act of the year 1691 (3 Will. & Mary, c. 11, s. 11) contained, by way of preamble, the statement that "many inconveniencies do daily arise by reason of the unlimited power of the churchwardens and overseers, who do frequently, upon frivolous pretences (but chiefly for their own private ends), give relief to what persons and numbers they think fit," and required that a register should be kept of the persons relieved, with an entry of the date of the first grant of relief, and the occasion for it. This register was to be annually laid before the vestry in Easter week, or oftener; and, after due examination, a new list was to be prepared, containing the number of poor, and the amount of relief approved by the vestry for the current year. Any relief not specified in the list was only to be granted under the authority of a justice, or on the order of the quarter sessions.

New abuses however resulted from the powers here given to single justices, or rather from the improper extension of this provision. A law of the year 1723 declared that "under colour of the proviso, many persons have applied to some justice of the peace without the knowledge of any officers of the parish, and thereby upon untrue suggestions and sometimes upon false and frivolous pretences have obtained relief." It was therefore provided that a justice should not order relief until the person in question had applied to the parish officers. If the relief had been refused, the justice was to summon the overseer to state the ground of refusal, and might then order the relief if a reasonable ground for its being granted was stated on oath by the applicant.

The Act made no provision for an appeal against the order for relief. This was subsequently recognized as a material defect, since

occasional orders of this kind, issued by a single justice, were often found to interfere with the regular system of administration. In the year 1743 (by 17 Geo. II. c. 26, s. 4) it was sought to cure this defect by giving to all persons aggrieved by "any neglect, act, or thing done or omitted" by the overseers or justice, the right to appeal, after previous notice, within a reasonable time, to the quarter sessions. The overseers were thus subjected to further control, and a complete jurisdiction was established over the current administration, as objections were allowed to be taken against single items of the annual accounts as well as against the general statement of expenditure.

Attempts at reform were also directed towards another point, namely, the provision in the Act of Elizabeth with regard to the employment of the able-bodied poor. The carrying out of this provision seems to have been attended from the beginning with considerable difficulties. Eden refers to a pamphlet published in 1646, entitled '*Stanley's Remedy*,' in which the author complains that people are punished as beggars for not working, while there are no places where they can be employed. The remedy proposed is the erection of workhouses in towns, villages, and other suitable places.

Here we meet for the first time with the workhouse, which has played so important a part in the English relief system as since developed. While the Act of Elizabeth only provided for the establishment of "convenient houses of dwelling" for the impotent poor, the "House" was here indicated as a means for furnishing employment for the able-bodied.

The proposal seems to have met with all the more favour because the Act of Charles II., for the division of parishes into townships,¹ made it additionally difficult for the smaller districts to provide employment for the able-bodied, and thus hindered the carrying out of the above-named requirement, that they should be "set to work." In a pamphlet published in London in 1687, entitled '*Some proposals for the employing of the poor, especially in and about the City of London, and for the prevention of begging*,' Thomas Firman, a friend of Archbishop Tillotson, recommends the erection of workhouses in which the poor may be occupied with remunerative work in different trades. In 1683, Sir Matthew Hale published a '*Discourse touching provision for the Poor*,' in which he characterized the Act of Elizabeth, with its care for the poor, as "an Act of great civil prudence and political wisdom."² He also advocated the erection of workhouses for the able-bodied.

In 1697, under a special Act of Parliament, a workhouse was established in Bristol. The good results which followed in that city, especially in the diminution of mendicancy, led to the adoption of a similar measure in 1703 in Worcester, and in 1707 in Plymouth and other places.

¹ Cf. above, p. 11, note 1.

² "Poverty is in itself apt to emasculate the minds of men, or at least it makes men tumultuous and unquiet. Where there are many poor, the rich cannot long or safely continue such."

After the workhouse had been successfully tried in particular places,¹ the legislature advanced a step (by the Act 9 Geo. 1, c. 7, of 1723) towards securing its introduction elsewhere. It was ordered that parishes should be entitled, singly or in combination, to build, buy, or hire workhouses, and that any poor person refusing to enter one of such houses should "not be entitled to ask or receive collection or relief."

The great improvement in poor law administration by this stringent provision, and indeed by the Act of 1723 generally, is clearly shown by Eden,² and indeed was manifested by the steady decrease of the poor rate in spite of the increase of the population. The expenditure for poor relief, which in 1698 was estimated at £819,000, had in 1750 sunk to £619,000.

SECTION V.

DEFECTIVE POOR LAW ADMINISTRATION.

From the middle of the last century, or rather towards its last quarter, we find a retrograde movement in poor law administration. The expenditure increased largely. In 1785 it was £1,912,000; in 1803 it further increased to £4,077,891; and in 1817 it reached its maximum of £7,870,801. This increase may be attributed in part to extraneous and general causes,³ but mainly to the alteration in practice which took place at this period with regard to poor relief.

¹ It must not be forgotten that the system of employing able-bodied men in the workhouse, or, as it was then called, the Industrial House, even then met with some isolated opposition. Defoe specially attacked it in his 'Giving Alms no Charity, and employment to the poor a grievance to the Nation' (London, 1704). He pointed out the effect of the competition of the Industrial Houses with the trades already established: "if they will employ the poor in some manufacture which was not made in England before, or not bought with some manufacture made here before, then they offer something extraordinary. But to set poor people at work on the same thing that other poor people were employed on before, and at the same time not increase the consumption, is giving to one what you take away from another." In opposition to this argument, which has been frequently urged in later times against the remunerative occupation of the poor in workhouses (as in Germany against the similar employment of prisoners), compare McCulloch, 'The Literature of Political Economy,' London, 1845, p. 276.

² Eden, vol. i., p. 285. It is pointed out that in consequence of this Act a large number of persons who had previously received relief preferred to maintain themselves rather than seek admission to the workhouse. See also McCulloch (*supra*), p. 277, who quotes a remark of Lord Mansfield, in the year 1782, to the effect that in parishes where well-regulated workhouses had been established under the Act, the poor rate had diminished by one half.

³ Besides the alteration in economic conditions and the establishment of the class of factory workers, which in consequence of the periodical trade depression, largely augmented the number of the destitute, we may notice the enormous increase in the population, and the unusual rise in the price of corn during this period. The population increased from 7 millions in 1760 to 9½ in 1801, to 10½ in 1813, and 11,876,200 in 1818. The average price of wheat, according to Nicholls, was in the 18th century 38/7 per quarter, but rose to 87/ for the period 1794-1801, and in the spring of 1801 reached the height of 156/2.

In place of the sensible methods previously existing, both legislation and the administration of relief fell more and more exclusively under the sway of mistaken notions of humanity. This tendency was in keeping with the general ideas of the second half of the 18th century, but it thrust out of sight that principle of repression of pauperism which must always be held in view in any reasonable poor law system. It was no longer thought necessary to have regard to the absolutely essential provision that only those really in need of relief should be maintained at the public cost, and no consideration was given to the effect which the grant of relief would be likely to produce upon the rest of the working classes. The sole principle was that of giving assistance in a humane fashion.

Thus the distinction between the relief of the able-bodied and that of the impotent, which had been so clearly marked in the Act of Elizabeth, came to be less and less regarded. Even the distinction vanished between those in need of assistance and those without property, who of course form the bulk of the working population. The man who, renouncing all care for the future, was content to call on the public to maintain him, was in the same position as the artisan who relied on his powers to make his own way through life.

This tendency is illustrated by a number of Acts of George III., from which we gather the impression that the chief object was to keep the people in good humour, thus causing still further laxity and want of energy in the administration of the overseers.

Now began the attacks, by political economists, on the existing system of relief. In the year 1752 was published Thomas Alcock's 'Observations on the effect of the Poor Laws,' assailing the whole system of compulsory grants to the poor. In 1786 appeared the Rev. Joseph Townley's 'Dissertation on the Poor Laws, by a Well-Wisher to Mankind,' with a similar tendency towards the abolition of public relief, so that people might not rely upon it for help in emergency. Then followed Malthus¹ and his school, whose demands for the repeal of the poor laws were based upon their theories of population.

On the other hand, we must not omit to mention the writers who, accepting the current system, urged the necessity for improving its administration. Among them was the celebrated novelist, Henry Fielding, who gives us a good notion of the relief system of his time as carried out in the metropolis. His 'Inquiry into the causes of the late increase of robbers, and with some proposals for remedying this growing evil,' appeared in 1751, and two years later he published 'A proposal for making an effectual provision for the poor, for amending their morals, and for rendering them useful members of

¹ See especially 'The Principles of Population' (ed. London, 1872), pp. 294-310, 'Of Poor Laws'; pp. 428-438, 'Plan of the Gradual Abolition of Poor Laws'; and pp. 441 *et seq.* 'Of Charities.' According to Malthus the poor law is "an evil in comparison of which the National Debt with all its magnitude of terror is of little value," and ought to be superseded by a better method of charity.

society.' We may also mention Cooper, who, in his 'Charitable Institutions and the Poor Laws' (London, 1763), energetically advocated the erection of workhouses for groups of parishes. So, too, a Report of a Committee of the House of Commons in the year 1795 strongly recommended the increase of workhouses. And Dr. Burn's 'History of the Poor Law,' already cited, suggested the introduction of paid overseers, to act with the unpaid, for the better execution of the poor laws.

In one particular, however, all these writers attacked the existing system, with the support of authorities no meaner than Adam Smith and Burke. They were all in favour of the abolition of the existing law of settlement.

And this is the one matter as to which the legislation of Geo. III. effected improvement. We may here anticipate the Act dealing with the subject, viz., the 35 Geo. III. c. 101, of the year 1795. Its preamble refers in the following terms to the evil consequences of the previous provisions as to settlement. "Many industrious poor persons chargeable to the parish, &c., where they live, only from want of work there, would, in other places, where sufficient employment is to be had, maintain themselves and families without being burthensome to any parish; and such poor persons are, for the most part, compelled to live in their own parishes, and are not permitted to inhabit elsewhere, under pretence that they are likely to become chargeable to the parish into which they go for the purpose of getting employment, although the labour of such poor persons might in many instances be very beneficial to such parish." It is also admitted that the remedy applied by the Act 8 & 9 Will. III. c. 30, viz., the granting of certificates of origin, "hath been found very ineffectual." It is accordingly enacted that a person shall not be removed on the ground that he is likely to become chargeable to the parish, but only when he has "become actually chargeable." It is further ordered by sect. 2 that "whereas poor persons are often removed or passed to the place of their settlement during the time of their sickness, to the great danger of their lives," the justice shall have power, in such cases, to suspend the execution of the order of removal until it is shown that it can be carried out without danger. By this Act the worst and most obvious results of the law of settlement were remedied.¹

We pass from this decidedly salutary Act to the other and less satisfactory legislation of George III. We may shortly refer to a set of Acts bearing on the poor law, but not directly affecting its principles. In this class are the penal enactments against parish officials who pay base coin to the poor (9 Geo. III. c. 37), then a batch of various provisions with regard to apprenticeship, such as 18 Geo. III. c. 47, by which apprenticeship is not to last beyond the age of 21, instead of 24; 32 Geo. III. c. 57, directed against abuses

¹ On the other hand, it should be observed that the Act made the acquisition of a settlement more difficult by providing that no person should gain a settlement by paying taxes for a tenement of less than £10 yearly value.

on the part of the parish in binding apprentices; 42 Geo. III. c. 46, requiring special registers to be kept of parish apprentices; 56 Geo. III. c. 139, giving the justices special authority with regard to the making and carrying out of indentures of apprenticeship; and finally we may mention the bastardy laws, 49 Geo. III. c. 68, and 50 Geo. III. c. 51, by which the previous enactments were altered to the advantage of the unmarried mother, and at the expense of the putative father. These Acts exhibited a benevolence—often excessive—towards the poor, and such as, in the case of the new bastardy laws, scarcely accorded with the principles of equity.

These Acts, however, only touched points of detail, while the statute 22 Geo. III. c. 83, known as Gilbert's Act, was of much greater significance as regards the development of the poor relief system. It was, in several respects, a remarkable piece of legislation. Based on the single idea of bettering the condition of the needy, it made several amendments in the organization of the poor law system; but, on the other hand, it attacked the prevailing principles of relief in a way calculated to endanger the rational procedure previously employed. It contained, on the one hand, the germ for the subsequent development and reorganization of the poor law system, but, on the other hand, it caused that deterioration in relief administration which made so much progress in the following half-century. It is noticeable that the Act itself was in the nature of an experiment. Its enactments were not compulsory, and it was left to those specially interested—the individual districts—to determine whether to adopt it, and so to avail themselves of its new provisions. The adoption of the Act was made to depend upon the assent of two-thirds in number and value of the owners and occupiers assessed to the poor rate at £5 and upwards.

This experimental kind of legislation, which was brought into operation in various forms in England in the last century,¹ has great advantages as regards the development of an institution. Not only are sudden changes avoided, with their numerous drawbacks, while progress is made quietly; but, above all, invaluable materials are collected for a judgment on the operation of the new provision in the particular districts voluntarily adopting it, and for a comparison with the system previously in force in these districts and still in force elsewhere. In this way there is an excellent enlightenment of public opinion as to the value and the applicability of a new measure, and the legislature can proceed on firm ground if it subsequently decides to make the new system general and obligatory.

The general tendency of the period was to regard as worthy of imitation only such portions of the new measure as were directly designed for the advantage of those relieved; nor was it till long afterwards that the provisions as to organization of the relief administration were extended to the country at large.

It is worth while to particularize the provisions of Gilbert's Act.

¹ Cf. a very interesting sketch by Jevons in the *Contemporary Review*, 1880, pp. 177-192.

We have already pointed out that owing to the smallness of the area of administration and rating as constituted by the unfortunate Act of Charles II. (14 Car. II. c. 12, s. 21), a reasonable poor law system was made more difficult, and we have also observed that the overseers were so much occupied by their various duties—especially those connected with settlement—that they had not time to do much in the field of administration. In both respects Gilbert's Act effected an improvement. It permitted the union of several parishes for the purpose of poor relief in common, and for the erection of a poorhouse. It also introduced the system of paid guardians to be appointed by the justices, and in this case the overseers had only the work of assessing and collecting the poor rate. It further provided for a stricter control of the administration by the introduction of visitors, who had to be nominated by the guardians and appointed by the justices. The visitor had to inspect the poorhouse, for the regulation of which minute provisions were inserted in the Act, and also to check the accounts of the grants of relief, and to control the current administration.

So far, the provisions of the Act were decided improvements, although the position assigned to the justices is open to comment. As they appointed the guardians and the visitors, and also had the right in individual cases of ordering relief, and prescribing its form, the effect was to concentrate in them the whole administration.¹

The provisions, however, with regard to the kind of relief to be granted had very important results. The poorhouse of Gilbert's Act was not like the workhouse of the year 1723, an industrial institution, but was specially designed for the reception of old and sick persons, of mothers with illegitimate offspring, and of children incapable of work. With regard to the able-bodied poor, it was expressly ordered, in direct opposition to the Act of 1723, that they should not be brought into the poorhouse, but that the guardians should find them suitable employment near their own houses, and that their wages should be made to contribute to their maintenance; in other words, that an insufficient remuneration of labour should be supplemented at the expense of the poor rate.² In direct contrast to the Act of Elizabeth, which only afforded the able-bodied assistance by providing them with work, assistance in money was here expressly ordered. Whether the labourer relied on himself and was careful, industrious, and hard-working, or whether he was the reverse, and threw himself on the parish, he received his full maintenance, while the poor rate had to furnish the amount that was not covered by his wages for the work which the

¹ This tendency to give the justices more extensive powers in the poor law administration also appears in a number of other Acts at this time. In the year 1790 the inspection of parish workhouses or poorhouses was entrusted to the justices with the right of dealing with any complaints (30 George III. c. 49); and in 1801 they were empowered not merely to annul the poor rate as unlawful, but to amend it, and to alter particular names and assessments (41 George III. c. 23).

² McCulloch justly says of this provision that it was "the first great inroad on the old system of poor law, and had in the end the worst possible effects."

guardians had provided.¹ The self-reliance of a large part of the working classes was thus undermined. They considered themselves as pensioners on the rates, upon which they believed that they had a legal claim irrespective of the amount and the value of their work.²

The provisions of Gilbert's Act, extended by subsequent Acts (33 George III. c. 35; 41 George III. c. 9; 43 George III. c. 110), were adopted in many parishes. The number of so-called "Gilbert's incorporations" amounted in the year 1834 to 67, and embraced 924 parishes.

The unsound principles of this Act were thus not only widely applied, but also found an unmistakable echo in the practice of poor law administration. Among these we must place first, the Allowance System, which originated in a resolution of a meeting of Berkshire magistrates in the year 1795. This measure, which was nick-named the Speenhamland Act of Parliament, met with general approval and extensive adoption throughout the country. The price of corn had then reached an enormous height, while wages had not risen, so that great distress actually prevailed among the working classes.³ In order to relieve this distress, the justices of Berkshire decided to regulate wages according to the prices of the necessaries of life and the size of the family, and it was ordered that the workman who failed to earn the prescribed amount by his own labour and that of his family should be paid the balance as allowance out of the poor rates.

This system inevitably had the result of keeping down wages. It involved a contribution not only to the labourer, but also to the employer, who was placed in a position to supplement out of the pockets of the other ratepayers the starvation wages which he gave to his men. Upon the labourer himself the system had a most unfavourable effect. It removed every incentive to saving and to provision for the future, made him careless and indifferent, encouraged improvident marriages, and produced an artificial increase of population which was bound to engender fresh masses of poverty. The labourer, irrespectively of his skill, was assured of a fixed income, which rose from year to year with the increase of his family, and which was further augmented by the rise in the price of corn. He had thus a certainty of the same remuneration in bad as in good times, while other classes of the population were obliged in bad times to curtail their wants.

Unintelligible to us as is this provision, it harmonised exactly with

¹ See Nicholls, vol. ii., p. 97: "He may work badly or may work little, but he will surely work in some sort or in some way, in order to secure his maintenance, if not to avoid punishment. He will, however, work as a serf and not as a man free and responsible, and conscious that his character, his earnings and the estimation in which he is held will depend upon his own conduct, industry and skill."

² Von Gneist.

³ Cf. Rev. David Davies: 'The case of labourers in husbandry stated and considered,' London, 1795. The author, a rector in Berkshire, gives interesting statistical information as to the various circumstances which at that period led to the adoption of the Speenhamland Act.

the general sentiment of the time, the influence of which it was impossible, even for a man of Pitt's distinction, to escape. When in the year 1796 Mr. Whitbread, M.P., brought in a bill based on the Speenhamland Act, "for regulating wages according to the price of provisions," Pitt took the opportunity to make a speech of some detail, in which he dilated on the disadvantageous effects of the law of settlement, and advocated the annual presentation to Parliament of a poor law budget, while, at the same time, he declared himself opposed to giving justices the power to regulate the price of labour, "as this would be endeavouring to establish by authority what would be much better accomplished by the unassisted operation of principle." The bill was thrown out on the second reading, but the Government itself brought in a measure of 130 clauses, which contained the monstrous recommendation that every poor person should be provided with a cow, a pig, or some other useful domestic animal. This latter Bill, however, was keenly attacked by Jeremy Bentham in the year 1797, in his 'Observations on the Poor Bill introduced by Mr. Pitt,' and was subsequently withdrawn.

But another equally important measure became law in the year 1796 as 36 Geo. III. c. 23. The principle of giving outdoor relief to able-bodied persons, which already existed in the unions that had adopted Gilbert's Act, was now made general. As stated above, the Act of 1723 had expressly provided that poor persons who refused to enter the workhouse should lose their right to relief. This strict principle was not suited to the ideas which now held sway; and accordingly it was repealed, on the ground that "it is inconvenient and oppressive, inasmuch as it often prevents an industrious poor person from receiving such occasional relief as is best suited to his peculiar case, and in certain cases holds out conditions of relief injurious to the comfort and domestic situation and happiness of such poor persons." For these reasons industrious persons may, in case of temporary illness or distress, receive relief at their own homes, and under "distress" the justices classed what they considered to be insufficiency of income. Moreover, the Act gave the justices the power of their own motion to order the relief of a poor person for a limited time at home, and the overseers had to carry out such an order unconditionally.¹

The natural consequences of such measures were not only shown in the speedy deterioration of the labouring class, morally and otherwise, but also in the immense increase of the poor rate. In 1817 it reached the enormous sum of £7,870,801, in a population of about eleven millions. It was impossible to escape the conclusion that the burden of poor relief, increasing in this fashion, might destroy the prosperity even of wealthy England.

¹ This power was extended by 55 Geo. III. c. 137, under which a single justice might order the relief of a pauper at home for three months, and two justices could extend the order for six months.

SECTION VI.

LEGISLATION FROM 1817 TO 1834.

In the year 1817 Mr. Curwen, M.P., moved for the appointment of a Committee to consider and report upon the existing poor laws. Mr. Curwen expressly observed, in the introductory speech in which he advocated his motion, that the pressing need of amendment did not apply to the Act of Elizabeth, "the wisdom and humanity of which did honour to its originators," but to the mode of administration of the law. He considered that the poor rate had become "a mode of payment of wages, and that of the very worst sort, as it breaks the spirit and destroys the independence of the labourers." Lord Castlereagh, who was then the leader of the ministry in the House of Commons, while taking exception to certain points of the speech, gave his general assent. A Select Committee was appointed, and presented its report on the 4th of July, 1817. It contained the following passage: "Unless some efficacious check be interposed, there is every reason to think that the amount of the assessment will continue, as it has done, to increase till, at a period more or less remote, it shall have absorbed the profits of the property on which the rate may have been assessed, producing thereby the neglect and ruin of the land."

The succeeding proposals, however, were characterised by as much energy as one would expect from this statement of the case. Their effect was merely to do away with the Allowance System, to provide for a better administration of workhouses, and to increase the powers of the justices. The practical result of the report of the Committee was the so-called "Parish Vestry Act" (58 Geo. III. c. 69) of the year 1818, which in the following year was extended by the "Select Vestry Act" (59 Geo. III. c. 12). Both Acts were brought in by the Chairman of the Committee, Mr. Sturges Bourne; and that of 1819, which contained special provisions as to poor-relief, is also known as Sturges Bourne's Act. Like Gilbert's Act, this measure depended for its adoption in the individual parishes upon the free-will of those interested, namely, the vestry.

The right of voting for the parish vestry was graduated according to the poor rate valuation, with one vote for an assessment of £50, and one additional vote for every additional £25, up to a maximum of six votes. This vestry might determine that poor relief should be administered by a select vestry or committee of the parishioners. This was to consist of from five to twenty substantial householders or occupiers, chosen by the vestry, and nominally appointed by the justices. To these were added, as *ex-officio* members, the incumbent of the parish, and the churchwardens and overseers for the time being. The select vestry, meeting at least once every fortnight, were to "manage the concerns of the poor of the parish," and to determine the proper objects of relief, and the nature and amount of relief to be given. They were to "take into consideration the

character and conduct of the poor persons to be relieved," were "at liberty to distinguish in the relief to be granted between the deserving and the idle, extravagant, or profligate poor." The overseers were to perform their duties according to the directions of the select vestry ; and it was only in cases of necessity or urgency that they could give relief without previously obtaining an order. The vestry might nominate paid assistant-overseers, with salaries approved by the justices, and exercising their functions till their dismissal by the vestry, or till their resignation. Special powers were also given to the vestry for the erection, enlargement, and purchase of poorhouses and workhouses. It was further enacted that, for the better carrying out of the provision in the Act of Elizabeth, under which the able-bodied poor were to be compelled to work, the vestry should have the power to buy or to lease suitable ground and land, in order to give occupation to the poor by its cultivation at reasonable wages, or to let the land to poor persons at a reasonable rent. It was also provided that relief might be afforded in suitable cases as a loan, the repayment of which might be enforced by summary process.¹

These are the substantial provisions of this very detailed Act ; but we may also mention certain other clauses important only as regards the collection of the rate, by which in special cases power was given to levy the poor rate from the owner of the house, instead of the occupier.

Sturges Bourne's Act was a great improvement upon the previous legislation of the reign of George III. It contained the germ out of which the general re-organization of the poor-law system was subsequently developed. It is worthy of especial note that the Act not only repeatedly quoted the celebrated statute of Elizabeth, but maintained its leading principles, and aimed at securing their better execution. Unlike Gilbert's Act, it again adopted the principle of relief of the able-bodied by giving them work. The real work-house was added to the poor-house of the Gilbert Incorporation. With regard to the granting of relief, and especially to its character, repressive measures were here again brought into prominence.

While thus reverting to old principles, the Act also contained very useful innovations. Among these may be specially mentioned the introduction of the representative element into the poor law administration, so that the overseers only took the position of executive officers, while the select vestry had to determine both the principles of administration and the method of relief. A further improvement was the introduction of a permanent, paid, and specially employed agency for the current administration in the form of the assistant overseers. A yearly change of authority, such as had previously taken place, could not fail to hinder the energetic and consistent carrying out of rational principles of administration.

¹ The object of these latter provisions is thus set forth in the Act : "Whereas it is expedient to discourage that reliance on the poor rates which frequently induces artisans, labourers and others to squander away earnings which would with suitable care have afforded sufficient means for the support of their families."

The power given to parishes to adopt the Act was largely exercised. In 1832 there were 2234 select vestries, and 3134 assistant overseers. In this period too a number of the larger towns practically adopted the system by local Act, and the poor law was administered by a committee through paid officials.

In the beginning of the reign of William IV., 1831, was passed the so-called Hobhouse's Act (1 & 2 William IV. c. 60), which, like Sturges Bourne's Act, made provision for establishing a special vestry for the current administration. The adoption of this Act was made to depend upon the approval of two-thirds of the ratepayers, and was further limited to parishes with more than 800 ratepayers. Every ratepayer had in this case only one vote, and the special vestry was to consist of at least twelve persons. If the number of ratepayers exceeded a thousand, twelve members were added to the committee for every thousand, but the whole number was not to exceed 120. The incumbent and the churchwardens were *ex-officio* members. A special rating qualification was required from the elective members of the vestry; in metropolitan districts, an assessment of not less than forty pounds, and elsewhere of not less than ten pounds. A third of the members were to retire annually, and the vacancies to be filled by fresh elections. An election had also to be held annually, to choose five ratepayers as auditors. Regular accounts had to be kept, and to be audited at least twice yearly, and to be published within fourteen days after the audit. The new element introduced by this Act into the poor law organization was the auditor; in other respects the Act had practically no great significance.

We must not leave unnoticed one measure of the reign of George IV., namely the Vagrants Act (5 George IV. c. 83), which is still in force. In accordance with the division of vagrants into three classes, which had already been made by the Act 17 George II. c. 5, the following penalties are enacted:—

1. Imprisonment with hard labour for one month for idle and disorderly persons, including any one who is able to maintain himself and his family entirely or partly by work or other means, and who wilfully refuses or neglects to do so, so that he himself or a member of his family whom he is bound to support, becomes chargeable to the parish. This class includes any person wandering abroad, begging in public places, or employing children for that purpose.

2. Imprisonment with hard labour for three months for rogues and vagabonds. Among these are reckoned all those of the first class, who have been already convicted, and vagrants who are found in uninhabited buildings, &c., without visible means of subsistence.

3. Imprisonment with hard labour for one year (with the addition of whipping for males) for "incorrigible rogues," namely, all those already convicted as belonging to the second class, and persons who when taken up as rogues and vagabonds violently resist the constable.

If these provisions are compared with the corresponding German enactments, it shows that in England more of the old harshness to beggars and vagabonds has been preserved than in Germany, or, to

speaking more accurately, that in Germany this class is treated with extraordinary mildness by existing legislation.

Here we may end the enumeration of the poor law enactments up to the year 1834.¹

A number of new provisions, of which the majority were at first only introduced by way of experiment, were founded on the Act of Elizabeth. In the succeeding period many of these additions were further extended or made general. Chief among them was the union of several parishes with the object of a common poor law administration, the first traces of this being contained in the Act of 1723. Then came the introduction of paid officers by the Act of 1782, the substitution by the Acts of 1819 and 1831 of officers elected for officers nominated by the justices; the creation of a new machinery for relief, namely the guardians, by the Act of 1782 and the auditors by the Act of 1831, and finally, as specially affecting the kind of relief, the establishment of the workhouse for able-bodied poor, in 1697, when a special Act of Parliament sanctioned the erection of a workhouse in Bristol.

SECTION VII.

ROYAL COMMISSION OF 1832.

After the year 1817, when the Select Committee of the House of Commons was appointed to enquire into the poor laws, the question of their reform was the constant subject of discussion, and occupied a conspicuous place both in the daily press and in the literature of the time.

Among the chief writers on the subject was Dr. Thomas Chalmers, who, as minister of a Glasgow parish, had organized a system of relief not unlike that which has in later times been adopted at Elberfeld in Germany. The parish was divided into a number of sub-districts, in which voluntary visitors took charge of a small number of poor, dealt with each case in the way suited to it, and exerted themselves, by careful inquiry into the character and circumstances of each applicant for relief, to educate him into a better way of life. This organization answered admirably under the direction of its distinguished originator, and gave rise to the idea of adopting it elsewhere.² Chalmers himself, who subsequently became Professor of Divinity in the University of Edinburgh, was inspired by his practical success to assail the existing relief system. In his 'Christian and Civic Economy of Large Towns,'³ he contended that the system of "legal charity" was unjust in itself, and was not

¹ We have omitted all mention of those Acts which do not deal with principles, or contribute to the development of the relief system, as for example an Act of 1828 as to the care of pauper lunatics.

² In the parish of St. John, Glasgow, with a population of about 10,000, the poor rate fell, in the course of ten years, from £1400 to £190. See paper by F. Ogg in the 'Transactions of the Social Science Congress of 1877' (Aberdeen), entitled 'Comparative Administration of the Poor Law in the United Kingdom,' in which the Elberfeld system is also discussed.

³ Glasgow, 1821-6, three vols. See especially vol. ii., pp. 225-365.

only injurious to the labourer, since its promise of relief in all circumstances took away from him all incentives to provide for the future, but also interfered with the proper scope of benevolence, and repressed or at any rate diminished the interests and sympathies of the moneyed classes in the condition of their humble neighbours.

We abstain at present from criticising this objection,¹ and need merely observe that the kind of poor relief which was then given might well be described as "legal charity," but that nothing was more foreign to the Act of Elizabeth² than "legal charity," and that in this "foundation and text-book of the English Poor Law" the leading feature is the repression of pauperism rather than the indulgence in humane impulses. It should be stated that at the very time when Chalmers was obtaining such great results from the relief organization which he introduced, equally remarkable success was achieved in a number of other districts, such as Southwell, Bingham, Cookham, and Hatfield, under the guidance of men who held fast to the principles of the English poor law system, and merely improved its practical administration in their districts.³

It was due to the above-mentioned experiments, and to the inequalities of poor law administration in different districts, that the reform of the entire system,⁴ to which there were so many theoretical objections,⁵ became a burning question.

¹ Chalmers pursued this argument in his work (1832) on 'Political economy in connection with the moral state and moral prospects of society (ch. 14, pp. 398-419), under the heading of "A compulsory provision for the indigent."

² With regard to the alteration in the original character of the Act of Elizabeth by the prevalent methods of administration, see May's 'Constitutional History of England' (ed. 1871, vol. iii., p. 405), which thus refers to the execution of the provisions of the Act of Elizabeth at that period: "This wise and simple provision has been so perverted by ignorant administration, that in relieving the poor the industrial population of the whole country was being rapidly reduced to pauperism, by which property was threatened with no distant ruin. The system which was working this mischief assumed to be founded on benevolence, but no evil genius could have designed a scheme of greater malignity for the corruption of the race."

³ The case of Southwell, Nottinghamshire, deserves special mention. Here the most brilliant results were obtained under the direction of Sir George Nicholls, to whom the English relief system owes much, and who was the author of that 'History of the Poor Law' which we have repeatedly cited. His success was mainly due to an improved administration of the workhouse, in which were received almost all the applicants for relief, and certainly all the able-bodied. In this parish of about 3000 inhabitants, the poor rate dropped from £2006 in 1820-1 to £517 in 1823-4, and in subsequent years remained, with slight fluctuations, at about the same level (Nicholls, vol. ii., pp. 240-251, especially note on p. 249).

⁴ Besides the works of Dr. Chalmers already mentioned, and those of Malthus and his followers, we may here cite Thomas Walker's 'Observations on the nature, extent and effects of pauperism, and on the means of reducing it.' This appeared in 1826.

⁵ The recent augmentation of poor rates in general, contrasted with the favourable figures for individual parishes, conduced to the same end. The expenditure on the poor, which in the year 1824, under the influence of favourable harvests and the low price of corn, had fallen to £5,736,900, in 1832 again reached £7,036,969, and this notwithstanding economical conditions that were decidedly favourable.

The general political movement of the time was very favourable for sweeping amendments. The year 1832, with its great measure of Parliamentary reform, witnessed a substantial extension of the franchise. Political parties could not fail to appreciate in an increased degree the need of going to the root of existing wrongs and discontents of the population, and there was a natural development of legislative activity as to domestic matters.¹

On the 1st of February, 1832, Lord Althorp declared the intention of the Government to institute a full inquiry into the practical operation of the poor laws, and a Royal Commission for the purpose was forthwith appointed. Among the commissioners were eminent statesmen, and besides Mr. Sturges Bourne, already known for his activity on the committee of 1817, we find the Bishop of London, Mr. Nassau Senior, Mr. Edwin Chadwick, and others. Assistant-commissioners were also appointed to visit personally the different parts of England, and to take evidence on the spot. Others were sent abroad to report on the relief systems in force there. Every care therefore was taken to obtain a clear knowledge of the circumstances, and to lay a substantial foundation for legislative measures.

The Report of the Commission, dated the 20th February, 1834, is accordingly a masterly example of a thorough, comprehensive, and unbiassed enquiry. For several reasons it is desirable that we should examine it closely. In the first place, it affords us a clear picture of the circumstances of the time, and points out the errors in the then poor law administration at which we have hitherto only glanced. Secondly, it furnishes the best explanation of the measures contained in the new poor laws. In the latter connexion a wrong judgment is very possible for the German reader who comes to the consideration of the new law with the conventional opinions as to the merits of the English magistracy and of English self-government. It is necessary that he should know what view competent English statesmen have taken as to the local administration, and especially as to the question of the utility of the part played by the justices. He must be told what they regarded as the chief point in the new organization—namely, the contraction of the powers of the justice, and the introduction of a central (ministerial) department, with extensive powers over the local bodies, as well as the introduction of paid officers acting under such bodies.

The report begins with the following words :

¹ "The reforming energy was in the time" (McCarthy, 'Short History of our own Times,' 1884, vol. iii., p. 28); and indeed the number of domestic measures following quickly on each other was astounding. In 1833 came the complete abolition of slavery in the British Colonies. In 1834 there was the first step towards a system of national education by the establishment of an annual grant for the erection of schools; in 1835 the Municipal Corporations Act created self-government for the towns; in 1836, by the General Registration and Civil Marriages Acts, came the concession of civil marriage. The second Reform Bill of 1867 called forth similar activity in domestic matters, and if we are not mistaken, the Reform Bill of 1885 will in like manner bring considerable social measures in its train.

"It is now our painful duty to report that the fund which the 43rd of Elizabeth directed to be employed in setting to work children and persons capable of labour, but using no daily trade, and in the necessary relief of the impotent, is applied to purposes opposed to the letter, and still more to the spirit of that law, and destructive to the morals of the most numerous class, and to the welfare of all."

This commencement, plainly contrasting the principles of the Act of Elizabeth with the actual administration of poor relief, indicates the spirit which characterizes the entire report. All the melancholy cases revealed by the report, and still more by the evidence, were in no way due to the principles laid down in the great Act of 1601, but to the fact that the administration had been in violation of those principles.

In what way, then, had the misapplication of the relief fund, and the general maladministration, come about?

Indoor relief had apparently been adopted in a very small degree, especially in the case of the able-bodied. The workhouses are described either as ruinous houses, with a few inmates, mostly entire families, dwelling together without any material restraint, and without any ordinary occupation, or, on the other hand, as fine new buildings with accommodation quite unsuited to the condition of an average independent labourer. Everywhere we find complaints that the workhouse was lacking in discipline, in regular employment, and, above all, in classification of the inmates.

Still, as we have said, relief was generally administered outside the workhouse. But relief by employment given by the parish was rare, although this had been the mode especially prescribed for the able-bodied by the Act of Elizabeth. The reason why this plan was so little adopted was because such employment was regarded as too costly to the parish. It was necessary to have a supervising staff, without which the paupers would have done no work; and even where the work was duly supervised, there were complaints that it was badly and negligently executed, and was therefore a sheer loss to the parish.

Relief in kind was not very generally given; it consisted for the most part in payment of rent or grant of tickets for clothing or other articles. There were strong complaints of abuses in this respect. It was said that in places where the rent of the paupers was paid by the parish, a brisk trade in old and ruinous houses was developed, and in this the overseers took an active part. Where tickets for goods were given, they were usually available only at the shops of the overseers.¹

The ordinary relief consisted of money, especially in the form of allowances; that is, the income of the labourer was, by additions from the rates, raised to the scale that the parish had fixed, once

¹ In an article in the *Edinburgh Review*, No. 149, ascribed to Mr. Nassau Senior, we read, "The rental of a pauperized parish was, like the revenue of the Sultan of Turkey, a prey of which every administrator hoped to get a share. The owner of cottage property found in the parish a liberal and solvent tenant, and the petty shopkeeper and publican attended the vestry to vote allowances to his customers and debtors."

for all. This kind of relief was also called "bread money;" and there was a further addition for each member of the family, and known as "head money." By the well-known Speenhamland Act the weekly income of a single man was fixed at 3*s.*, when bread was at a shilling a gallon; that of man and wife at 4*s.* 6*d.*; and for each child 1*s.* 6*d.* more was paid. Frequently the so-called ticket system was applied; that is, the applicant received a ticket addressed to some farmer or manufacturer willing to take him, and on the strength of this the man was employed, on the condition that the parish should pay the difference between the wages earned and the fixed scale.

Connected with this system was another plan, frequently adopted, by which the vestry required every ratepayer, according to the amount of his assessment, to employ a certain number of poor labourers at the prescribed scale of wages. Under this system of "Labour Rate," the assignment of particular labourers was determined by lot.

The above were the chief forms of relief. We propose shortly to refer to the results; in the first place, as regards the persons relieved, and in the second place, as regards the rest of the population.

The most important effect on those relieved was to produce a general feeling that the receipt of public aid carried with it no discredit. The contribution from the parish towards wages was regarded as a right belonging to the labourer, to compensate him for the fall of the actual wages below the normal standard, as declared by the parish. And then it seemed only a natural consequence that the supply of suitable work by the parish should be regarded as a duty of which the labourer did not hesitate violently to demand the fulfilment. The report tells us that precisely in those places where relief had been granted with the greatest laxity, there were the most numerous disturbances and riots on the part of the poor, sometimes even incendiarism and other crimes. Every inducement to make provision for the future was destroyed. Industry and skill in labour were only so much presented to the parish, which paid in accordance with a fixed scale, without regard to the results of the work. There was, moreover, a direct incentive to recklessness, especially in bringing children into the world. The single workman received the least addition to his wages, which increased with the increase in the number of children. In the case of girls, it tended to produce an increase of illegitimate births.¹ Debauchery became a lucrative trade. It was not enough that, in this fashion, morality, the proper estimate of the dignity of labour, and the strength and skill of the existing generation were impaired; but, further, the demoralising influence operated on the children reared in such

¹ According to the report, "the daughters of some farmers and even land-owners have bastard children, who keep their daughters and children with them, and regularly keep back their poor rate to meet the parish allowance for their daughters' bastards. We have no doubt the same grievance exists in many other parishes."

circumstances, and thus, in constantly-widening circles of the population, notions of right and wrong were obliterated.

We now proceed to that class of the population standing next to the paupers, viz., the independent workmen who possess no property, but have to live on the labour of their hands. The good workman could only be disheartened at seeing that the lazy and careless man obtained a better living than was earned by all his own industry and skill. Under the Allowance System, the general rate of wages was depressed to a minimum which seldom exceeded the amount of income fixed by the bread scale.¹ This income was squandered by the man dependent on parish work and careless of the future of himself and his family, while the self-reliant workman, if he wished to preserve his independence, had to save part of it for hard times. By the Allowance System, wages were lowered indirectly as well as directly, since the additional payment for each child was a distinct incentive to early marriages and to over-population. This produced a dislocation of supply and demand in the labour market, and had an unfavourable influence on wages. But the independent workman could scarcely find employment at the lowest pay. We hear of employers who made a principle of engaging only poor workmen in the fear that otherwise work would not be found for them, and that the rates would thus be increased. The poor employed by the parish in this way took the bread out of the mouths of the independent labourers. This happened still more frequently in the case of the "Labour Rate." The employer was here required to give work to a prescribed number of poor labourers, and this number bore no relation to the quantity of work to be done.² He was thus often compelled against his will to dismiss independent labourers whom he had previously employed.

All these conditions were aggravated by the existing Law of Settlement. This made it difficult for the labourer to seek work elsewhere; for although, owing to the Act of George III. he could no longer be sent back from his new place of residence, the parish, for fear that he might become a pauper, did its utmost to prevent him from obtaining a new settlement. The workman who dared to seek employment in another place was exposed not only to every possible trickery, but to the certainty, in case of his requiring relief, of being sent back to his own parish, where naturally his return was not welcomed.

Not quite so directly, but not less perceptibly, other classes of the population suffered from the existing administration. First of all, everybody sought to make profit out of it. The artificial depression of wages appeared to be profitable for all employers. Besides, by the Allowance System, the farmer obtained ample labour during the

¹ It even happened that the wages of the independent labourer were lower than that of the poor employed by the parish. Thus one of the assistant-commissioners who visited Eastbourne reported that the parish labourers earned 16s. weekly, while the average rate of wages in the district was only 12s. He mentions that two women of this place complained that their husbands refused to better their condition by becoming paupers.

² A parish is referred to in which the rector had to employ 62½ men at weekly wages of 10s., besides a poor rate of £420.

summer months, while in the winter the men were maintained by the parish. The manufacturer took poor labourers at low wages, and received special grants out of the poor rates for employing them. The shopkeeper appreciated the system of tickets for clothing and goods, for it increased the number of his customers. And yet in the long run all these classes had to suffer from the *bellum omnium contra omnes*. Not only did industry steadily deteriorate; not only was pauper labour found, in spite of the lowness of wages, to be costly and unprofitable in consequence of the laziness, neglect and incapacity of the labourers; not only did the number of good and skilful artisans steadily diminish; but, worst of all, the poor rate became an almost intolerable burthen. In many places whole tracts of land were left untilled expressly to avoid payment of the rate. More especially the clergy, on whom it pressed with great severity, often let their glebe go out of cultivation. Of one parish, Cholesbury¹ in Bucks, it was stated that the whole land was offered to the "assembled poor," but they refused, as they thought it better to be satisfied with the old system. "The margin between possession and confiscation was growing perilously small."² It was said to be a frequently expressed conviction that "the eighteen-penny children will in ten years eat up the parish unless help comes."

We come now to the weighty questions, "Who was responsible for this state of things?" "How could it have arisen?"

Here we must mention one preliminary fact. The Report of the Commission described as especially bad the condition of those parishes in which the administration of relief was carried out by overseers appointed by the magistrates. But in those parishes in which a vestry or select vestry carried on the current administration, there were not less serious abuses, though among the latter there were many well-managed districts.

Almost everywhere there was evidence of the absolute incompetence of the agents of the current administration. Many of the overseers could scarcely read or write; in the vestry the small shopkeepers became predominant and were masters of the situation. Educated, independent, and competent administrators were generally lacking. This arose from two different causes, which must be kept separate.

In many cases the area of the parish was so small that a sufficient number of suitable persons could not be found.³

This was shown not only by the fact, mentioned in the Report, that in many parishes women were nominated for overseers for lack of other substantial householders, but in 59 George III. c. 12, s. 6, there

¹ The poor rate rose here from £10 11s. in 1801, to £367 in 1832.

² Fowle, p. 86.

³ In the year 1834 there were, according to Nicholls, 15,535 parishes with an average population of 1200 inhabitants. There were, however, 737 parishes with less than 50 inhabitants, and 1907 parishes with less than 100 inhabitants. In the year 1878 the average population of the parishes was 1500 inhabitants. The majority had a population between 200 and 1000, while 6000 had less than 300, and 788 less than 50 inhabitants. On the other hand there were a few urban parishes with more than 100,000 inhabitants.

is a provision by which the magistrates, on the application of the district, may under certain conditions nominate non-resident overseers.

While the want of suitable agents was frequently due to the special circumstances of the case, in other instances the justices were not free from responsibility. From the Report we learn that the better classes held back from the office of overseer, just as in many places where select vestries existed they abstained from taking a share in the administration. This fact does not seem to indicate that the moneyed classes, especially the gentry, were fully aware that their duty was to accept, not merely honorary functions, but laborious public offices, like that of overseer; but their reluctance cannot be held to exculpate the justices in whose hands was the appointment of overseers. It had been settled conclusively and by judicial decision,¹ that the magistrates had a perfectly free hand in such appointments, and could punish in a summary fashion any repudiation of the office.² As a matter of fact it had become a general custom that the justices should approve the persons nominated by the vestry or by the overseers going out of office.

As the upper classes held aloof from the office of overseer, the relief administration passed into the hands of persons by no means qualified³ to carry out with efficiency the difficult functions required of them. There were many sordid motives at work. Selfish interests came largely into play, and the Report records a number of scandalous scenes. In many instances the clerk was the chief or even the sole actor. In answer to the question why certain improper expenditure had been incurred, an overseer stated, "Why, sir, the clerk is a dreadful man, and always threatens to fight me whenever I want to stop such a charge." And if the clerk's physical powers were not usually exercised in this fashion, knowledge and education often made him master of the situation. In the Report the conclusion as to the overseers is that they were, as a body, perfectly incompetent, and that their main effort was to get through the year with as little unpopularity and trouble as possible.

We now proceed to consider the part played by the magistrates in the poor law administration. The terms of the judgment passed upon them in the Report are much milder than in the case of the overseers. But on reading between the lines, we see plainly that they are regarded as open to the same charges as are formulated in express words against the overseers. No doubt as a rule their position prevented them from acting with a view to self-interest. But, like the overseers, they mainly had regard to their own popularity and convenience. Popularity-hunting on the part of the justices was, according

¹ *Rex v. Forrest*, 3 T. R. 38.

² Only a few grounds of exemption were recognized by law, viz., in the case of members of parliament, officers, certain officials, doctors, clergymen and lawyers.

³ The shortness of the time for which overseers occupied their office operated prejudicially. The office lasted at most for a year, frequently only for a few months.

to the Report, so much a matter of course that no excuse for it was considered necessary. On the other hand, as regards their want of care and zeal in the fulfilment of their duties in connection with relief, it was urged that they were over-burdened by other kinds of duties, and were hindered by their social position from entering into the circumstances of the poor.

There is no doubt that the law gave the magistrates ample opportunity and inducement to occupy themselves earnestly with poor relief, and to exercise continuous supervision with regard to it. The Act of Elizabeth had required that the duties of the overseers should be performed "with the consent of two or more justices of the peace," and had also assigned to the justices the function of receiving the detailed accounts of the overseers at the end of their year of office; and thus of exercising a certain control over all expenditure connected with the office of overseer. Later legislation had added to their duties that of ordering direct relief in particular cases for a limited time, and especially that of giving an order for relief in the poorhouse. Moreover, the justices in quarter sessions had to determine on appeal as to any action or omission of the overseers by which any person might be aggrieved. Finally, the magistrates were entrusted with the supervision of the poorhouses and with the power of issuing orders for remedying defects.¹

It is obvious that the magistrates had ample occasion to supervise the current administration, to correct its abuses, and to give independent orders as to carrying it out. What was the practical outcome of these legal provisions? We may infer that care was taken that no needy person should remain without relief, but there was no precaution against its grant to those who were not destitute, and finally, no care was taken that it should be afforded in accordance with the law or with common sense.

The audit of the annual accounts became a mere formality. Interference as regards the current administration was limited to the issue of what were called "humane" orders for relief, but these were not granted on any fixed principle, and merely frustrated the application of any strict rule by the overseers. If the overseers, once in a way, refused relief or did not grant it in the desired form, the applicant sought out the particular justice of the district who had a reputation for good nature (and for this the classes who made a trade out of relief had a keen eye), and could then be certain of obtaining the desired order from the beloved and popular magistrate. In one county it was stated that it would have been a good bargain for the parish to give a particular justice £100 a year not to act. Instead of giving directions for a sensible administration of relief, the magistrates made this impossible by the "humane" orders. The overseers can

¹ We have not mentioned all the powers of the magistrates. We may add in particular the right of allowing the rate, as well as the control of the overseers, who might be punished for various offences, neglect and delay. The first-mentioned power became a mere formality, and the rest seem to have been scarcely exercised at all.

scarcely be blamed for being disinclined to spend labour, time and money in appeals to the quarter sessions against these benevolent decisions. It was no wonder indeed if, after finding themselves repeatedly baulked by the justices in their attempts to give relief more judiciously, the overseers came to the conclusion that it was best to let things go their own way, and to grant every application without regard to the increase of rates or to the dangers threatening the community, and above all, to see that their personal interests were secured as fully as possible.¹

So much with regard to the general condition of the poor law system as shown by the Report.

We may shortly sum up the practical conclusions and proposals of the Commission. Most of these have been embodied in the new poor law, which we shall describe at length. The recommendations are remarkable, not only on account of what they contain, but on account of what they leave unaltered. To this latter category belong the essential principles of the statute of Elizabeth. It was recognised as the duty of the State, not only to care for infirm persons and children, but to provide that the able-bodied shall be set to work, and thus kept from destitution; further, that the poor law should not be carried out by the State, but by local bodies, who were to levy a rate for the purpose. These principles of the Act of Elizabeth thus withstood the attacks of Malthus and his disciples, and were not overthrown even by the unfortunate experience of their practical application, especially as regards the relief of the able-bodied.

These principles were upheld; but for their due application such precautions were taken as long and bitter experience had shown to be necessary. It was especially necessary to avoid the error, which had been productive of so much evil, of regarding relief merely as a benevolent gift, and of administering the poor law solely on humanitarian grounds. The repressive character of the system had to be brought into prominence, mainly by an alteration of the component parts of the relief organization, so as to secure the strict carrying out of a policy based on regard for the welfare of the community.

In order to obtain uniform observance of the principles which ought to govern poor law administration, it was considered specially desirable to create a Central Department with extensive powers over the local bodies; this department was to have the direction and control of the whole poor law administration throughout the country. This would secure that the treatment of the poor by the various local administrators should be efficient and as far as possible on identical lines, irrespective of local interests and personal prejudices.

With regard to the organization of the local bodies, it was considered desirable to make obligatory the permissive provisions of Gilbert's and Sturges Bourne's Acts, by providing for the election of a board of

¹ Fowle, in the work above quoted, and Fawcett in his 'Manual of Political Economy,' agree with our view of the action of the justices, as described in the Report.

guardians by the ratepayers and relieving this body of a number of functions by entrusting them to special paid officers. The overseers were only to provide the necessary funds, while the expenditure was to be the duty of the elected guardians, assisted by paid relieving officers. For the control of the current administration, a detailed system of accounts was prescribed, and this was to be audited by a paid auditor.

By this organization it was thought that it would be possible to attain the end of combining the centralization required for carrying out the right principles of the poor law in a uniform fashion, with the independence of local administration essential to the healthy life of the community. But it was necessary to take care that the right people and adequate means should be available for local administration, and it was sought to secure this object by the creation of unions of parishes.

An opportunity was thus given for securing throughout the country the erection of workhouses, a plan which had answered excellently in particular parishes, like Southwell, where they had been well managed, but the general introduction of which had been hindered by the limited extent of many parishes and the lack of means for the purpose.

The establishment of a workhouse in every union was regarded as the mainspring of a reform in the practical administration of the poor law. It was to supply work for the able-bodied, and board and lodging for all. Admission to a workhouse was considered to satisfy the claims of humanity with regard to the poor, and at the same time was in accordance with the important principle of repressing pauperism. Humanity demanded that those unable to maintain themselves should be adequately supported; but, on the other hand, the interests of the public required that this support should be such as not to undermine the sense of independence of the labourer. By the restrictions in the workhouse as to his movements, his residence, his food, and his dress, the position of the pauper must be made less pleasant than that of the independent labourer, however poor. By strict adherence to the principle that relief should only be granted by admission to the workhouse, it was believed that it would be possible to avoid the bad influences which had been produced upon the minds, the habits, and the morals of the working classes by the way in which relief had been dispensed, and to make it possible to revive a sense of the dignity of independent labour. The workman would thus be induced to be provident, so that in case of incapacity for work he would not be obliged to seek for public relief in the unwelcome form of admission to the workhouse. In the workhouse it was believed that the public possessed the best check upon an extravagant system of relief. The workhouses would soon be such that only really destitute persons would seek relief in them, and would afford a trustworthy test of real need. They would thus be really the corner-stone of reform.

In this connection, the Commission dealt with a number of

proposals as to matters less directly connected with the poor law, especially the gradual abrogation of the Laws of Settlement and Removal, and the alteration of the Bastardy Laws.

A Bill founded on this Report of the Royal Commission was introduced by Lord Althorp in the House of Commons in the year 1834, and by Lord Brougham in the House of Lords. After various alterations, it passed its second reading in the Commons on the 9th of May, 1834, by a majority of 299 to 20; and in the Upper House, where the Duke of Wellington made an impressive speech in its favour, it was only opposed by a minority of 13. The new Act bears the date of the 14th of August, 1834.

The deviations of the Act, in its final form, from the proposals of the committee, consisted mainly in a limitation of the powers of the Central Department to a period of five years; in the weakening of the proposals made for the repeal of the Laws of Settlement and Removal; and, above all, in an important modification of the workhouse principle which had been so warmly recommended by the Commission. There was a reluctance to require that only indoor relief should be granted to the infirm; and even in the case of the able-bodied, Parliament did not definitely lay down the universal principle that they should not be relieved outside the workhouse (outdoor relief as opposed to indoor relief), but left the gradual introduction of this principle in the hands of the Central Department.¹ We shall see that the later development has been very much in the direction of reverting to the original proposals of the Commissioners. The measures which they had advocated were in themselves the right ones, but the alterations were too great for the traditionally conservative feeling of the country, and so it was only possible to advance step by step as new experience was obtained.

SECTION VIII.

THE POOR LAW OF 1834.

The Act of the 14th of August, 1834, "An Act for the Amendment and better Administration of the Laws relating to the Poor in England and Wales" (4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76), consists of 109 sections. The importance of this Act—which constitutes the basis of the present relief system—makes it necessary that we should give a *précis* of its provisions in their order. The reader will in this way gain a knowledge of the scope and substance of the English poor law.

It is to be observed that the legislation of different States is not uniform as regards the subjects included in the poor law ad-

¹ With a certain self-complacency, but not without justification, Mr. Chadwick, member of the Royal Commission, said at the Social Science Congress in Edinburgh in 1863, that "the measure prepared for England by the Commission of Inquiry, was largely and seriously altered, but nothing was taken from it that subsequent experience has not shown the necessity of having restored, and nothing was added that has not in practice proved to be obstructive."

ministration ; for the supply of gratuitous medical aid, the care of orphan children, free education, and other matters, are, in some cases, but not in others, classed as poor relief. Owing to these differences of legislative practice, it is easy to form an incorrect judgment with respect to matters of this kind in foreign countries.

On this account, a complete but necessarily compressed description of the English Act will be of value. It will also be of interest as bringing to light the difference of form between English and German law.

Sect. 1, after the usual preamble (a very short one),¹ provides for the appointment by His Majesty of three commissioners for the execution of the Act, for their removal at pleasure, and for the supply of vacancies.

Sect. 2 prescribes the style of the commissioners as "The Poor-Law Commissioners for England and Wales," of whom any two are to constitute a Board for carrying out the Act, with power to summon and examine witnesses on oath, and to require the supply of information.

Sect. 3. Rules, orders, and regulations are to be authenticated by the common seal of the commissioners.

Sect. 4. The commissioners are to keep a record of their proceedings, and to submit it to the Secretary of State annually, or as often as he shall require.

Sect. 5. They are to make a general report to the Secretary of State annually.

Sect. 6. They are to report to the Secretary of State on any of their proceedings when required.

Sect. 7. They may appoint and remove assistant-commissioners whose number shall not exceed nine without the consent of the Treasury.

Sect. 8. Neither the commissioners nor the assistant-commissioners are to sit in Parliament.

Sect. 9. The commissioners may appoint a secretary, assistant-secretary or secretaries, clerks, and other officers, whose salaries are to be regulated by the Treasury.

Sect. 10. The appointment and powers of the commissioners are limited to a period of five years.

Sect. 11. The commissioners and assistant commissioners are to take the prescribed oath, and each appointment is to be gazetted and advertised.

Sect. 12. The commissioners may delegate their powers to the assistant-commissioners for a fixed time, or at a particular place, or on special conditions, and may revoke such delegation.

Sects. 13 and 14. Special provision as to evidence, and remuneration of witnesses.

Sects. 15 and 16. The commissioners are entrusted with the administration and control of public relief in England and Wales ;

¹ "Whereas it is expedient to alter and amend the laws relating to the relief of poor persons in England and Wales," be it therefore enacted, &c.

they may make rules, orders, and regulations for the management of the poor, for the government of workhouses, and the education, apprenticeship, and inspection of poor children; for the keeping, auditing, and allowing of accounts and expenditure; for the relief of the poor, and for carrying out the Act in all other respects. General rules are not to take effect until forty days after their submission to the Secretary of State. The commissioners may suspend, alter, or rescind, their rules, orders, and regulations. But they are not to interfere in any individual case for the purpose of ordering relief.

Sect. 17. General rules are to be laid before both Houses of Parliament by the Secretary of State at the beginning of every session.

Sect. 18. A copy of all rules, &c., is to be sent to the overseers and guardians, or their clerks, and to the clerks to the justices, who are to submit such rules for public inspection free of charge, or otherwise to publish them in such manner as the commissioners may direct.

Sect. 19. No inmate of a workhouse is to be compelled to attend any religious service contrary to his principles; nor is any child to be brought up in a creed other than that of its parents.

Sect. 20. Orders and regulations of assistant-commissioners are to come into force only when adopted and sealed by the commissioners.

Sect. 21. The commissioners are to exercise control over the erection, alteration, administration of workhouses, and over loans for this purpose. They and the assistant-commissioners are empowered to attend and take part in the discussions of the local authorities, but without the right of voting.

Sect. 22. Rules and regulations relating to workhouses or relief shall, if made under any local or other Act, only be binding when approved by the commissioners; and no justice is to have power to repeal them.

Sect. 23. The commissioners may, with the consent of a majority of the guardians in the union, or of a majority of the ratepayers and owners of property, require the purchase, hire, erection, alteration, or enlargement of workhouses.

Sect. 24. Loans may be raised for this object subject to the limitation that the principal shall not exceed the average annual amount of poor rate for the previous three years, and that at least one-tenth of the sum borrowed is to be repaid annually.

Sect. 25. The commissioners may, without such consent, require the alteration or enlargement of existing workhouses, provided that the sum shall not exceed £50, nor one-tenth of one year's rates.

Sect. 26. The commissioners may form so many parishes as they shall think fit into a union for the administration of the poor laws, with a workhouse in common; but each parish is to be separately chargeable with the expense of the relief of its own poor, whether in or out of the workhouse.

Sect. 27. Two justices acting for the district may order out-door relief to aged and infirm persons, whom one of such justices shall know to be wholly unable to work.

Sects. 28-30. When a union of parishes is proposed, the commissioners are to ascertain the average expense incurred by each parish during the previous three years for the relief of the poor, and the individual parishes are to contribute to the common fund of the union in proportions based on such average. Upon such funds are to be charged the costs of the erection, enlargement, and maintenance of workhouses, and the payment of the necessary staff. The commissioners may also, on application, or of their own motion, take averages for the future contribution of the respective parishes to the common fund. These provisions are also to apply to unions already constituted under earlier statutes, or under local Acts.

Sect. 31. Repeal of earlier provisions¹ restraining parishes from contributing to a workhouse at a greater distance than ten miles, and limiting the class of persons to be sent to the workhouse.

Sect. 32. The commissioners may, with the approval of two-thirds of the guardians, dissolve existing unions, or may add thereto, or take therefrom, any parish or parishes.

Sect. 33. The guardians of a union may, with the approval of the commissioners, agree that the union shall be one parish for purposes of settlement, and thereupon the obtaining of a settlement in any one parish in the union shall be a settlement in the union. The cost of maintenance and other expenses for poor relief shall thereupon be defrayed out of the common fund of the union.

Sects. 34-36. When the parishes of any union are in the same county, and under the jurisdiction of the same justices of the peace, the guardians may, with the approval of the commissioners, agree that the union shall be considered one parish for the purpose of rating. The guardians shall then, subject to such regulations as the commissioners may prescribe, assess the value of the rateable property in the respective parishes, and thereupon all expenditure for the poor shall be in common.

Sect. 37. New unions not to be formed under previous statutes without the consent of the commissioners.

Sects. 38-41. Provisions as to the election of guardians by the owners of property and the ratepayers. For these two classes there are scales of voting; for the owners, in accordance with 58 Geo. III. c. 69;² for the ratepayers rated under £200 one vote; between £200 and £400, two votes; over £400, three votes. If an owner is also an occupier he may vote in both capacities. Owners may vote by proxy. Ratepayers may not vote unless they have been rated for at least one year, and have paid all parochial rates. The election is to take place within fourteen days after every 25th March. Voting is to be by writing. The commissioners are to fix the number of guardians for each union and for each parish; but every parish is to have at least one guardian. The commissioners are also to fix the sum at which a person must be rated in order to qualify him to act as

¹ Especially 22 Geo. III. c. 83, s. 5, and 56 Geo. III. c. 129.

² Viz. for a rateable value under £50, one vote; and for a rateable value above £50, one vote for each £25 up to a maximum of six votes.

guardian ; but this qualification must not exceed £40 a year. Every justice residing in a parish and acting for the county in which it is situated, is to be an *ex-officio* guardian of the union. Three guardians are to constitute a quorum ; retiring guardians are eligible for re-election. If the commissioners constitute a board of guardians for a single parish, the election is to be the same as in a union. The commissioners are also empowered to establish the same method of election in the case of guardians, visitors, &c., in districts under local Acts or under Gilbert's Act.

Sect. 42. The commissioners may make regulations for present or future workhouses, and may repeal or alter those already in force. If such regulations apply to more than one union, they are to be deemed general rules. Cf. sects. 16, 17.

Sect. 43. The justices may visit workhouses pursuant to 30 Geo. III. c. 49, and may see that regulations and bye-laws are carried out.

Sect. 44. Workhouses outside the district to which they belong shall nevertheless be within its jurisdiction.

Sect. 45. No dangerous lunatic, insane person, or idiot, shall be detained more than fourteen days in a workhouse.

Sect. 46. The commissioners may direct overseers and guardians to appoint paid officers for the relief and employment of the poor. The commissioners may fix the qualifications, duties, and remuneration of the paid officers, and may prescribe the method of their appointment and dismissal, and the amount of security to be given by them.

Sect. 47. The overseers are to account to the guardians and the auditors quarterly for all receipts and payments for relief.

Sect. 48. The commissioners may, of their own motion or on complaint, remove any workhouse master or other paid officer of the union of the parish for incompetence or neglect of duty. Any persons so removed are not to be appointed as paid officers elsewhere without the written consent of the commissioners ; the commissioners may require the appointment of other officers in place of those removed.

Sects. 49-51. The commissioners may issue rules as to the contracts to be made on behalf of the guardians, and contracts not in accordance with such rules are to be null and void. A contract is not to be entered into with any person who is himself concerned in poor law administration. Previous enactments to the contrary are repealed.

Sect. 52 relates to the relief of the able-bodied outside the workhouse. It is as follows :—

“ And whereas a practice has obtained of giving relief to persons or their families who at the time of applying for or receiving such relief were wholly or partially in the employment of individuals, and the relief of the able-bodied and their families is in many places administered in modes productive of evil in other respects, and whereas difficulty may arise in case any immediate and universal remedy is attempted to be applied in the matters aforesaid : be it further enacted that from and after the passing of this Act, it shall be lawful for the said commissioners by such rules, orders, or regulations as they shall think fit, to declare to what extent and for what period the relief to be given to

able-bodied persons or their families in any particular parish or union may be administered out of the workhouse of such parish or union, by payments in money, or with food or clothing in kind, or partly in kind and partly in money, and in what proportions, to what persons or class of persons, at what times and places, on what conditions, and in what manner such outdoor relief may be afforded."

Relief contrary to such regulations is to be disallowed. But the overseers or guardians may delay the operation of the regulations for any period not exceeding thirty days, and may report to the commissioners the special circumstances which make them wholly or in part inapplicable to the district. Relief given before the receipt of an answer to such report shall be lawful. If the commissioners maintain the regulations, they may fix a day from which all such relief shall be unlawful. In cases of emergency, or if the relief shall have been given in food, temporary lodging, or medicine, a departure from the regulations is permitted, provided that such departure and the grounds thereof shall be reported to the commissioners within fifteen days.

Sect. 53. Repeal of previous enactments¹ contrary to sect. 52.

Sect. 54. In future, relief is only to be given by the guardians or select vestries. The overseers may only give relief in cases of sudden and urgent necessity, and only in articles of absolute necessity, not in money. The justices may

(a) order relief in case of urgent necessity when it has been refused by the overseer ;

(b) order medical relief in case of sudden or dangerous illness.

Sect. 55. Masters of workhouses and overseers are to keep the books prescribed by the commissioners.

Sect. 56. Relief given to a wife or to children under the age of sixteen, if not blind or deaf and dumb, shall be considered as given to the husband or father ; and relief given to the children of a widow as given to the widow. The existing obligations of maintenance in the case of other relations are left unaltered.

Sect. 57. The husband is liable to maintain his wife's children born before marriage.

Sects. 58, 59. The commissioners may order that relief given to a person above the age of twenty-one, or to his wife or children, shall be considered as a loan, and be recoverable from wages.

Sect. 60. Repeals previous enactments as to the relief of soldiers' families.

Sect. 61. Justices are to certify that the rules of the commissioners have been complied with in binding poor children as apprentices.

Sect. 62. With the approval of the commissioners, owners and ratepayers may, at a specially convened meeting, raise money on the security of the rates, to an amount not exceeding half the average yearly rate for the three preceding years, for the purpose of emigrating paupers.

¹ Especially the power given by former Acts to justices to order relief to be given to poor persons at their houses.

Sect. 63. Overseers may apply to commissioners of exchequer-bills for advances of money.

Sects. 64-68. Repeal of settlement by hiring and by service. Modification of other grounds of settlement.

Sects. 69-76. Amendment of law as to illegitimate children. Repeal of enactments as to liability and punishment of the putative father and punishment of the mother. The mother is liable for the maintenance of the child up to the age of sixteen ; and relief granted in respect of the child is to be reckoned as granted to the mother. The overseers, however, may apply to the quarter sessions to make an order on the putative father for the support of the child. An illegitimate child's settlement, up to the age of sixteen, follows that of its mother.

Sect. 77. Penalties against poor law officers supplying for their own profit goods or provisions given in parochial relief.

Sect. 78. As to recovery of sums payable by relations of poor persons.

Sects. 79-84. Provisions as to orders of removal.

Sect. 85. The commissioners may call for reports, accounts of trusts and charity estates applicable to the relief of the poor.

Sects. 86-88. Provisions as to stamp duty and postage.

Sect. 89. Payments contrary to the Act or the commissioners' regulations are to be disallowed by the justices.

Sect. 90. Service of summons.

Sects. 91-94. Regulations as to spirituous liquors in workhouses. Penalty on workhouse masters improperly allowing their use, or illtreating inmates. Notice of these provisions to be posted in workhouses.

Sects. 95-104. Penalties for infringement of regulations of the commissioners, for disobedience to the orders of the justices or guardians, and for breach of trust on the part of the poor law officers.¹

Sects. 105-108. The legal validity of orders and regulations of the commissioners may by writ of *certiorari* be brought for decision before the Court of King's Bench. Before application for the writ the grounds for it are to be stated, and to be communicated to the commissioners, and the applicant is to enter into recognizances, and give security for costs. If the rules or order be quashed as illegal, notification to that effect is to be published in all the districts to which it applied.

Sect. 109. Interpretation clause.

From this brief sketch of the contents of the Act it will be seen that in point of form there is none of that text-book system which characterises German legislation. It illustrates the English legislative method of proceeding by slow steps, and introducing innovations tentatively. The Central Department, while invested with powers previously unknown to English local government, was only

¹ See especially s. 96, which provides that no overseer shall be prosecuted for not executing illegal orders of the justices or guardians. The overseers have thus an independent right of appeal against such orders.

tentatively appointed for five years, though it constituted the very key-stone of the Act. Moreover, a uniform system was not prescribed for the whole country, but it was left to the Central Department gradually to apply, at its discretion, the principles laid down. Even here a free hand was not left to it, but, where poor relief was administered under local Acts by special bodies, the organization previously existing was allowed to continue.

On the one hand, the new Act may be regarded as merely consolidating and completing experimental laws which had been long under trial, while on the other hand we see that it introduced a new and transitional system under which further experience was to be collected.¹ It was not till 1867 that the Central Department created in 1834 was made permanent. The formation of the unions was carried out step by step and by slow degrees. The abolition of the special bodies which were allowed to retain their powers under earlier enactments differing from that of 1834 is not complete even at the present time, although the power of the Central Department for dissolving them has been gradually increased, and the number of such districts is now so insignificant that it may be said broadly that there is one uniform system of relief for England and Wales.

SECTION IX.

PROCEEDINGS OF THE POOR LAW COMMISSIONERS.

On the 18th August, 1834, three poor law commissioners were appointed under the new Act: the Right Hon. Thomas Frankland Lewis (afterwards Sir T. F. Lewis, Bart.), Mr. (afterwards Sir) John George Shaw Lefevre, and Mr. (afterwards Sir) George Nicholls.² The commissioners appointed assistant-commissioners, whose number has varied from time to time.³

With regard to the proceedings of this Central Department, and to the poor law administration after its establishment, we find detailed information in the statutory reports annually made by the commissioners.⁴ They contain not merely a precise account of the

¹ The above-cited words of sect. 52, "Whereas difficulty may arise in case any immediate and universal remedy is attempted to be applied in the matters aforesaid," are characteristic of the whole Act.

² Of these three, to whom the reconstruction of the English relief system owes so much, Mr. Nicholls remained in office until 1847, and then became Permanent Secretary of the new Poor Law Board. Sir T. F. Lewis was succeeded in 1839 by the Right Hon. Sir George Cornwall Lewis, Bart., and Sir. J. G. Lefevre, in 1841, by the Right Hon. Sir Edmund Walker Head, Bart.

³ It was the task of the assistant-commissioners to ascertain the condition of the particular districts assigned to them, to make recommendations in their reports to the Central Department as to the application of general principles to such districts, and to supervise the introduction of the necessary reforms. The reports of the assistant-commissioners are printed as appendices to the Annual Reports of the Central Board.

⁴ Up to the year 1847, when the change in the Central Department took place, fourteen Annual Reports appeared, the best of which is undoubtedly that of 1839—a veritable pearl of parliamentary papers. The reports are addressed to the Home Secretary.

measures adopted by the commissioners and of the principles applied, but an abstract of the information and answers obtained by the department by enquiries of the local bodies ; and these afford a striking picture of the relief administration of those days.

The first task of the Central Department was the formation of unions, this being the foundation, according to the Act, upon which the new administration of relief was to rest.

The essentials, as regards the formation of unions, were that, on the one hand, the area should be sufficiently large to prevent the predominance of unduly narrow local interests, and to provide sufficient means for defraying the cost of a proper staff ; and that, on the other hand, it should not be so extensive that personal knowledge and control of the details of current administration would be made difficult or impossible. It was necessary that the careful examination of all local and personal circumstances, and the necessary consideration of the interests of the ratepayers, should not be neglected in seeking to establish a proper relief system founded on principles of general application.

From this point of view it was necessary to have regard not merely to the population and means of each district, but to its area, and also to the extent of its pauperism. Moreover, as each union was to have its workhouse, it was necessary to have regard to the situation of those already existing, and it seemed expedient for the rural districts that the parishes should be grouped round one market-town, so as to provide a suitable centre for the meetings of the guardians and the residence of the paid officers.

It is easily intelligible that the variety of considerations that had to be weighed made it sometimes impossible to satisfy local wishes, though these were regarded as far as possible. The proceedings of the Central Department in this respect became the object of keen attack, though in many instances the necessity for alteration was subsequently recognized. Considering the difficulties of the task, the department cannot fairly be reproached because it did not always hit upon the right plan in the first instance, nor because the new unions show an enormous difference as regards their area and the number of parishes included.¹

¹ The following figures will give an idea of the varieties in existing unions. The Welwyn Union in Hertfordshire consists of four parishes, with an area of 6457 acres, and a population of 2300 inhabitants ; it has five guardians. The Morpeth Union in Northumberland consists of seventy-two parishes, with an area of 97,401 acres, and a population of 36,074 ; it has seventy-nine guardians. The Lincoln Union in Lincolnshire has ninety-nine parishes, with an area of 158,792 acres, and a population of 64,512. The Chorlton Union in Lancashire consists of twelve parishes, with an area of 11,697 acres, and a population of 260,257. With such differences in the number of combined parishes, in their area, in their population and in its distribution, a calculation of the average size of the union would be misleading. It should be noted that in some large urban parishes relief is administered by a separate Board of Guardians. Here there are some still greater anomalies. The parish of Bethnal Green consists of 755 acres, with 127,066 inhabitants ; Islington of 3107 acres, with 282,628 inhabitants ; St. Pancras of 2672 acres, with 236,209 inhabitants.

[The above figures are taken from the Local Government Directory for 1888.]

As to earlier times, there is in the journal of the London Statistical Society,

The only point in which the Central Department can be fairly charged with having erred is that, in the formation of the unions, little regard was paid to the existing boundaries of counties.¹ The result of this error, of which the whole significance was only manifest at a later date, was that when a number of other branches of administration were constituted on the basis of the poor law districts, serious confusion was produced in the local government of the country generally. At the present time endeavours are being made, with much difficulty and inconvenience, to remedy this confusion, which has stood seriously in the way of local government reform. For this blunder, however, comparatively little blame attaches to the commissioners, who were only responsible for the poor law system, and whose regulations were made exclusively in the interests of a good administration of relief. It was the Cabinet, and especially the Home Secretary, whose business it was to see that the general interests of the country were duly regarded.

A much more weighty task occupied the Central Board in the issue of an order prescribing the duties of boards of guardians and making regulations for the government of workhouses. A provision in these regulations, by which man and wife in the workhouse were separated and had to live apart, aroused much opposition. So too the prohibition of relief to able-bodied persons outside the workhouse excited much antagonism, although the board introduced it very slowly and carefully. In the year 1834 the prohibition was only enforced in two districts (Cookham union and Sandridge parish), and in the year 1836 it only applied to sixty-four districts. It was an unlucky hindrance to the extension of the prohibition that in 1836 in some parts of the country, especially in Nottingham, a considerable number of artisans were thrown out of employment by commercial depression, and that the admission of all the able-bodied who were in need of relief appeared an entire impossibility in the then condition of the workhouses. In many places it was necessary to hire special rooms for the reception of the able-bodied, and in this way a heavy expenditure was incurred. These circumstances did something to remove the favourable impression which the first report of the commissioners had produced by the statement that in 112 newly-created unions, the number of paupers had diminished by one-sixth. There was a steady increase in the unpopularity of the Central Department; for, although it proceeded with circumspection, its action² was strong and vigorous, and it paid little heed to trivial and inequitable local demands. The result was that it became a

vol. i., pp. 52-123, a sketch of the districts as they existed immediately after the introduction of the Act of 1834.

¹ According to the report of a select committee on boundaries of parishes, unions, counties, &c., in the year 1873, out of 649 unions in England and Wales, 181 then crossed the boundaries of counties.

² The commissioners in their first year managed to bring about some immigration from the rural districts to the northern manufacturing counties (see s. 62 of the law of 1834). With regard to the special steps taken, and the conspicuous success by which they were attended, see the first Report, page 22.

question whether Parliament would extend¹ the powers of the Act of 1834, which had only been given for five years. In this doubtful position the commissioners, at the end of 1839, prepared a very judicious report of their general proceedings up to that time, and in it they adroitly pointed out that they had merely carried out the principles laid down in the Act of 1834, and that, by the regulations which they had issued, they had, in fact, relieved Parliament not only from the burthen of the work, but also from the unpopularity which it necessarily involved.² This report fulfilled its object; the powers of the commissioners were extended, by 2 & 3 Vict. c. 83, for one year; by 3 & 4 Vict. c. 42, 5 Vict. c. 10, for one year; and by 5 & 6 Vict. c. 57, for five years.

The commissioners thus had sufficient time to bring to maturity the new measures which they had introduced under such great difficulties. The number of the general rules, orders, and regulations which they issued up to the year 1847 was enormous. When the Central Department was reconstituted in that year, the commissioners thought it expedient, before their own extinction, to collect in a general consolidated order of the 24th July, 1847, the most important of the general regulations which they had issued. A consolidation of the provisions as to the grant of relief to the able-bodied had been already made in the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order of December 21st, 1844.³

The General Order of July 24th, 1847, which for the most part is still in force, embraces the whole field of the poor law, and is, next to the Act of 1834, the foundation of the present system. Poor law administration is still conducted in accordance with it, while the Act of 1834 gives it a legal basis, with which, however, the officers of the poor law have practically little concern.⁴

We shall have frequent occasion to refer to the provisions of the

¹ In 1838, a new select committee was appointed for the consideration of this question.

² The report explicitly stated the principles upon which poor relief ought to be based, and which had been set forth in the provisions of the law of 1834, and special stress was laid upon the restriction of outdoor relief. We read "The fundamental principle with respect to the legal relief of the poor is that the condition of the pauper ought to be on the whole less eligible than that of the independent labourer. . . . All distribution of relief in money or goods to be spent or consumed by the pauper in his own house is inconsistent with the principle in question."

³ As to this Order, and its relation to the subsequently issued Outdoor Relief Regulation Order of 14th December, 1852, see page 93.

⁴ This is not to be wondered at. The General Consolidated Order of 1847 occupies, in W. C. Glen's 'Poor Law Orders' (tenth edition, London, 1887), a space of about 250 pages. The entire volume, which only contains the orders still in force, has 986 pages, exclusive of index. It is to be noticed that a great number of the orders have only a limited operation, since they are restricted to particular unions. With this mass of regulations issued for his guidance, the practical official seldom finds time to go back to the laws on which they are based; and this will be the more easily intelligible when we consider that in Glen's 'Poor Law Statutes' (London, 1873), the Acts still in force occupy a space of 1454 pages, and that an addendum of Acts from 1873 to 1879 takes 171 pages more. The necessity for a new consolidation of all the laws and regulations in force is

General Order of 1847 in describing the present poor law system. Here we need only recapitulate the titles of particular sections in order to show what matters are dealt with in the order:—(1) election of guardians (the provisions are amended by the General Consolidated Order of 14th February, 1877); (2) meetings of the guardians; (3) proceedings of the guardians; (4) contracts of the guardians; (5) apprenticeship of pauper children; (6) mode of obtaining medical relief by permanent paupers; (7) relief of non-settled and non-resident poor; (8) orders for contributions and payments; (9) custody of bonds; (10) government of the workhouse; (11) the workhouse visiting committees; (12) repairs and alterations of the workhouse; (13) appointment of officers; (14) duties of officers; (15) receipt and payment of money by officers. In conclusion, there is, as in the Act, a clause defining the expressions employed, and a large number of prescribed forms are appended.

While the Central Department devoted itself to the application, on a large scale, of the principles laid down in the Act of 1834, there was in this period comparatively little legislative interference, and it was almost always directed to the supply of deficiencies in the earlier Acts, or the removal of doubts that had arisen, and upon which the poor law commissioners had commented in their reports.

This was the tendency of an Act of 1836 (6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 96), relating to parochial assessments. This matter had been previously regulated by provisions of the Act of Elizabeth, which in all essential points had remained unaltered. But the expressions used in that Act as to the levying of the poor rate appeared somewhat indefinite,¹ and were interpreted by the courts in a succession of judgments which had the effect of introducing principles that were not only not to be found in the Act of Elizabeth, but were entirely foreign to its intention.²

The Act of Elizabeth, according to the obvious construction, had intended to rate all inhabitants according to their means, taking into account personal as well as real property. But the courts showed themselves disinclined to a rating of personal property, considering this scarcely practicable on account of the difficulty of ascertaining and estimating its value. As a matter of fact, the poor rate was levied exclusively upon real property. The courts laid down very detailed rules as to the mode in which the sums required were to be apportioned upon particular properties. According to these *dicta*,

manifest, but when this gigantic task is likely to be carried out is a matter of doubt (see p. 60, note 1).

¹ "To raise weekly or otherwise by taxation of every inhabitant, parson, vicar, and other, and of every occupier of land, houses, tithes impropriate, or appropriations of tithes, coal mines, or saleable underwoods in the said parish, such competent sum and sums of money as they shall think fit . . . to be gathered out of the same parish, according to the ability of the same parish."

² This is expressly shown in a 'Report on the Laws relating to parochial assessment' (brought from the Lords 26th July, 1850).

the basis for assessment is the sum at which the property could be let from year to year. But from this sum are to be deducted the rates and taxes, which according to law have to be paid by the tenant.

These principles received formal recognition in the Act of 1836; but the terms of that Act were so vague that many fresh disputes arose, which were the subject of a number of fresh judicial decisions, and finally, in the year 1869, were dealt with by fresh legislation, which was, however, limited to the Metropolis. The Act of 1836 contains a number of technical provisions as to the form in which the poor rate is to be prepared and published; and as to appeals against the assessment, which may be carried not only to the quarter sessions but also to special sessions of the magistrates. Finally, power is given to the commissioners on the application of a board of guardians or of a parish to have a new assessment of property made by special surveyors.

By an Act passed three years later (2 & 3 Vict. c. 84, s. 2) authority was given for the appointment of paid collectors of the poor rate. A subsequent Act (7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, ss. 61-2) also authorized the appointment of paid assistant-overseers, whose duties might be discharged by the collectors; and the work of the overseers, whose position had formerly been very important, thus gradually diminished. Their functions, which once ranged over the whole relief system, were reduced to a minimum.

Besides these enactments with regard to rate collection, it is necessary to mention two Acts of 1842 and 1844 (5 & 6 Vict. c. 57, and 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101). Both Acts dealt with a number of special points as to which it had been found necessary to supplement that of 1834, though without affecting its principles. Provision was made for punishing paupers for misbehaviour in the workhouse. It was enacted that the guardians might require from persons received into the workhouse, in return for the food and lodging afforded, the performance of a prescribed task, and might for this purpose detain them for four hours after breakfast on the day after their admission. If the allotted labour were not performed, they might be punished as idle and disorderly persons. It was further provided that the commissioners should not in particular cases alter their general rules, orders, and regulations, without the approval of the Secretary of State, that copies of the official orders purporting to be printed by the Queen's printers should be regarded as authoritative; and that the guardians might appear in legal proceedings by their clerks or other officers. There were also amendments in the law dealing with the fathers of illegitimate children, chargeable to the parish, and new provisions were introduced with regard to the execution of indentures of apprenticeship.¹ Finally, there was a new and uniform voting qualification for owners and occupiers, as well as some other alterations as regards elections of guardians. None of these enactments, however, affect the principles of the poor law system.

Not so certain other measures relating to the organization of the

¹ By s. 13 of 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, the obligation under 43 Eliz. c. 2, to receive pauper apprentices was abolished.

relief administration. In practice, difficulties had frequently arisen, when unions were constituted, in satisfying two conflicting requirements, both of which were essential; namely, that the area should be large enough, on the one hand, to provide means and suitable persons for the due administration of relief; and, on the other, that it should not be too large to prevent the possibility of careful enquiry into the local and personal circumstances of the individual paupers. The Act of 1842 provided that in the case of a parish distant more than four miles from the place of meeting of the guardians, a special district committee might be formed to receive and examine applications for relief, and to report thereon to the guardians. The Act of 1844 further provided that a parish containing more than 20,000 inhabitants might be divided into wards for the election of guardians; and also authorized the combination of several unions for the purpose of the erection and management of schools for paupers up to the age of sixteen, and for the provision of asylums for houseless poor persons in need of temporary relief. For these two objects—district schools and district asylums for houseless poor—the Central Department was empowered to form combinations of unions under a special district Board.¹

Although little use has been made of this last enactment, it has been of great significance as regards the development of the English poor law system. For this is the first embodiment of the principle that particular branches of the relief system may be separated from the general administration, and may be entrusted to large districts.

We may mention another provision of the Act of 1844, which also tends to the formation of larger districts. Power was given to the Central Board to combine several unions, under a single auditor, into a district for the audit of accounts. Hitherto each union had appointed its own auditor. By the new enactment it was intended to improve the account keeping, a matter to which the Act of 1834 had attached much importance, and to establish in the person of the district auditor a salaried expert, devoting his whole time to the supervision of the accounts. At the same time new provisions on the subject were introduced, the proceedings with regard to the audit were prescribed, and in the districts assigned to auditors the powers of the justices with regard to the allowance and disallowance of accounts were abolished.

With regard to those places in which the relief administration was regulated by local Acts, the powers of the Central Board were much

¹ Up to the year 1857, in a period of thirteen years, only six school districts were formed, and those consisted of unions within the metropolitan area. The Central Board limited itself to following the initiative of the local bodies. This resulted not only from considerations of the increased cost of these special institutions, but also from the fact that public opinion was divided as to the advantage of thus bringing together large numbers of pauper children (Cf. Nicholls, vol ii., p. 365). Still the results of such schools were invariably well spoken of in the annual reports. The erection of asylums for houseless poor was only regarded as applicable to London and a few large towns. Accurate particulars as to the number of asylums erected cannot be ascertained, but it was certainly not large.

extended by the Act of 1844. Previously, any alterations, either by addition or separation of parishes, could in such cases only be made by the Central Board, with the approval of a two-thirds majority of the electors. It was now enacted that such approval should not be required in the case of parishes with less than 20,000 inhabitants. The existence of incorporations for the administration of relief under local Acts and under Gilbert's Act was found by the Central Board to be a great hindrance to its attempts to establish a uniform system. The yearly reports frequently express a wish for statutory power to deal with these districts *ex mero motu*, and to organize the system according to general principles. The wish, however, remained unfulfilled. The administration in a number of the large towns for which special local Acts of this kind had been passed continued to exist untouched, with an organization different from that of the rest of the country.

The Central Board had better success in its proposal with regard to the removal of unsettled paupers. It has been already mentioned that the Act of 1834 had not given effect to the proposal of the Royal Commission for a comprehensive alteration of the Laws of Settlement and Removal, but had been restricted in this respect to the abolition of a few of the qualifications for obtaining a settlement. All the inconveniences which the Law of Settlement had produced in the old relief system were continued in the new Act.

These inconveniences increased and became more conspicuous. First of all, the obtaining of a new settlement was made more difficult for the labourer, since the Act of 1834 had abolished mere temporary residence and hired service as a qualification. In addition to birth and apprenticeship, there remained only the qualification of renting land of the value of at least £10 a year, and this naturally excluded most labourers.

The rise of manufacturing industries made the matter worse. Many workmen born in the rural parishes, and thus having a settlement there, betook themselves in prosperous times to the towns, and if, after many years, they became incapable of work, or were thrown out of employment in consequence of stagnation of trade, they were sent back wholesale to their domicile. This involved great hardship and waste of money both for the workmen and for the ratepayers of their birthplace.

The Poor Law Commissioners commented in their ninth report (1843) upon the evils attending the Law of Settlement, and, as a remedy, proposed the abolition of the power of sending cases back to another place after three years of "industrial residence." The then Home Secretary, Sir James Graham, introduced a bill at the end of 1844 founded on this proposal, but providing that five instead of three years should be the minimum period of industrial residence to secure irremovability. This bill, however, was dropped, and in 1845 Sir Robert Peel brought in a new bill, containing a complete codification of the existing Acts relating to settlement and removal. This Bill was much altered by amendments, and before it went through its stages the Peel administration was at an end.

The succeeding ministry did not take up the greater parts of the Bill, and it was only the provisions as to irremovability that became law in 1846 as 9 & 10 Vict. c. 66.

This Act provided that in future a person should not be removed from a parish in which he had dwelt for five years before the proposed removal, but this period was not to include time passed in prison, in a hospital or lunatic asylum, in the naval or military service, or during which he had been in receipt of poor law relief. A widow was not to be removed within twelve months after the death of her husband, nor children under sixteen if their parents with whom they dwelt were not in law removable. Persons becoming destitute in consequence of sickness or accident might only be removed if the justices, in the order of removal, declared themselves satisfied that the sickness or accident would produce permanent disability. The Act expressly provided that these exemptions from liability to removal, should not enable any person to acquire a settlement. Finally, a penalty was imposed on every poor law official who by money, promises, or threats, induced a person to depart to another parish or union district in order to transfer the duty of maintenance.

The above are the provisions of an Act which conferred great benefit both on the labourers and on the rural districts. On the other hand, it certainly did injustice to many parishes in which, owing to special circumstances, there were a great many labourers' dwellings; for it imposed the duty of maintenance, not upon the place where the labourer was employed, but upon that where he resided. This obvious mistake was quickly recognized by many manufacturers and large landed proprietors, who freely took advantage of it. Manufacturers built houses in neighbouring parishes; landed proprietors did their utmost to hinder the erection of cottages in their parishes, and it was even said that they caused existing cottages to be pulled down. The prompt interference of the legislature became a necessity. But the legislation which followed did not merely cure the blunder which had been discovered; for it also further extended the principle, first laid down in this Act, of restricting the power of removal irrespectively of the Law of Settlement.

SECTION X.

THE POOR LAW BOARD.

But before entering upon the later legislation in this respect, we must refer to the alteration made in the constitution of the Central Department.

By the Act of 1834 the commissioners were excluded from Parliament. It had been thought that by keeping them apart from politics in carrying out the sweeping measures entrusted to them, they would be made more energetic, more independent, and less exposed to political and local influences. At the same time it appeared to be

important that officials who had to set up a uniform system of poor relief in the country should hold office without regard to changes of government, and thus should be in a position to bring the necessary measures to completion. In time, however, various disadvantages of this plan became manifest; the energetic reforms of the commissioners had aroused active opposition; and this increased considerably in consequence of the steady augmentation of the poor rate from 1837 to 1843. Complaints against the proceedings of the commissioners obtained more and more attention in Parliament, and while it was impossible for those assailed to give their answer then and there, the effect of a defence was considerably weakened when it could only be made by the Home Secretary after an interval of several days spent in obtaining the necessary information. In the House of Commons it was regarded as contrary to good administration that while every other public office had its representatives in both Houses ready to speak and prepared with answers, there was here a department which, although the object of constant attacks in the press and in Parliament, both as regards general principles and individual cases, remained without direct official responsibility.

The immediate inclusion of the new department in the general organization of the public service was found to be a matter of necessity. This was effected in 1847 by the Act 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, which initiated a new phase in the history of the English poor law. The proceedings of the Central Department ceased to be regarded as exceptional measures.

Under the Act of 1847 the Queen had the power of appointing, at her pleasure, one or more persons as "Commissioners for administering the Laws for relief of the Poor in England." To these were added as *ex-officio* commissioners the President of the Council, the Lord Privy Seal, the Home Secretary, and the Chancellor of the Exchequer.

The first commissioner, who received the title of president, was the chairman, and had a casting vote in case of equality. For current business, the signature of the president or of two commissioners, for general rules or orders (*i.e.* those applicable to more than one union), the signatures of the president and two commissioners, were required. Only the president, the secretaries, and the subordinate officials were paid: the president and one of the secretaries might sit in Parliament.¹

The new department² was invested with all the powers and duties

¹ The Act, s. 9, provides, "The office of President shall not be deemed such an office as shall render the person holding such office incapable of being elected or of sitting or voting as a member of the Commons House of Parliament, or as shall avoid his election if returned, or render him liable to any penalty for sitting and voting in Parliament; and one only of the said Secretaries shall at the same time be capable of sitting and voting in the Commons House of Parliament." This implies, according to English constitutional practice, that the President must obtain a seat in Parliament in order to hold his office.

² In practice the new department was never known by its formal title, "The Commissioners for administering the laws for relief of the poor in England," but merely as "The Poor Law Board." This name, which we shall henceforth use, was legalized by 12 & 13 Vict. c. 103, s. 21.

of the poor law commissioners, with the exceptions made by the Act itself. As one of these exceptions we may mention the repeal of the provisions requiring the commissioners to submit to the Home Secretary minutes or reports of their proceedings, and the substitution of an obligation to present an annual report to the Queen, and to lay it before both Houses of Parliament.¹

The Queen in Council was empowered to disallow any general orders of the commissioners.

The commissioners were authorized to appoint their secretaries and staff. For their assistance in the execution of the poor laws, they might also appoint inspectors, with salaries to be regulated by the Treasury. It was provided that these inspectors should visit the workhouses, and might take part, though without voting, in the meetings of boards of guardians. They might also, by direction of the commissioners, institute special inquiries, and examine witnesses on oath. The commissioners might themselves conduct such inquiries, and with this object might summon witnesses as to any matter connected with the administration of the poor law, and require from them either evidence on oath or statutory declaration. The commissioners might delegate this power to other persons besides the inspectors.

By section 28 the duration of the Act was fixed at five years.²

This provision shows the uncommon caution with which the English legislature sets to work. The newly-organized department is at first only established for a term of years.³ No important alteration was made in the powers of the Central Board as compared with those of its predecessors. The new Commissioners for administering the laws for Relief possessed, apart from the fact of their having seats in Parliament, much the same powers and the same position as the previous "Poor Law Commissioners." The functions of the former "assistant-commissioners" passed by the Act to the newly-created inspectors.

In effect, however, there was some alteration. In reality the president was the only directing and responsible official. The association with him of the *ex-officio* commissioners resolved itself into a pure formality, and no other commissioners, besides the president, were appointed. Moreover, in practice the president

¹ Up to 1871, when the Poor Law Board was merged in the newly established Local Government Board, twenty-three Annual Reports were issued.

² Besides the matters above mentioned, the Act deals, in its 23rd section, with an isolated point in the relief system which has no concern with the organization of the Central Department. It provides that in future married couples above sixty years of age shall not be compelled to live separate in the workhouse. The contrary practice had been the object of frequent attacks. That this point was dealt with in an Act relating to organization, in which it logically found no place, is illustrative of the general plan of English legislation, which makes it so difficult, not only for foreigners, but even for English jurists, to appreciate the relevancy of any particular enactment. In order to obtain the approval of this or that M.P., everything possible and impossible is thrown into a Bill.

³ Nicholls (vol. ii., p. 460) indicates as the ground for this provision "the view of keeping the whole question of the poor law under the close and frequent supervision of Parliament."

held a position entirely independent of the Home Secretary, though the clause under which he had been made subject to that minister remained unrepealed. The limit of the duration of the commissioners' powers was of no practical effect. The Act was extended by 15 & 16 Vict. c. 59, for two years ; by 17 & 18 Vict. c. 41, for five years ; by 23 & 24 Vict. c. 101, for four years ; by 26 & 27 Vict. c. 55, for one year ; by 28 & 29 Vict. c. 105, for two years ; and by 29 & 30 Vict. c. 102, for one year ; and finally, in the year 1867, s. 28 of the Act of 1847 was repealed by 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 1, and the new organization was thus made permanent.

SECTION XI.

LEGISLATIVE IMPROVEMENTS (1847-1860).

The attention of the new department was first directed to the subject dealt with by the last Act passed in the time of the poor law commissioners. It was necessary to remove the hardships which the Laws of Settlement and Removal were more and more felt to inflict on the working classes, and at the same time it was essential to avoid the imposition of an unfair burthen of poor rates upon particular districts.

The Act of 1846, as before mentioned, had not dealt satisfactorily with this question. Moreover, its provisions unluckily gave rise to a number of legal controversies. The fact that the Act contained no clause as to its retrospective operation led to important differences of opinion. It was a question whether the exemptions from the liability to removal applied to persons who, before the coming into operation of the Act, had resided in one place for the prescribed time and under the prescribed conditions. The law officers of the Crown decided that the provisions of the Act were generally retrospective ; but not as regards certain points specially excepted. Thus irremovability was secured by residence in one place for five years, even if this period had been before the passing of the Act ; but the exceptional provisions, under which that period was not to include time spent in prison, &c., or during which relief had been received, were held not to apply to such cases.

This opinion was received with some doubt by the legal profession, and it certainly intensified the hardships of the Act. It frequently occurred that persons had received relief from the place of their settlement, although dwelling elsewhere. There was no motive for removing them, since they had not obtained a fresh settlement, and thus the burthen of relieving them could not fall on the place of their residence. Suddenly to impose the relief of all such persons upon the district where they lived seemed grossly unfair.

It was thought best not to wait for the decision of the Courts¹

¹ A decision of the Court of Queen's Bench was obtained in 1848. It rejected the view of the law officers, and gave retrospective application to all the provisions of the Act.

upon the point, but to cure the evil in some degree by an Act of Parliament. With this object, the so-called "Bodkin's Act" (10 & 11 Vict. c. 110) was passed. It provided that the cost of maintenance in the case of those persons who, according to the Act of 1846, were irremovable,¹ but who in the years just before the passing of that Act had received non-resident relief, should in future be defrayed from the common fund of the union in which they resided. As the parishes contributed to the common fund of the union in proportion to their previous expenditure on relief, the practical effect of the Act was to prevent single parishes within the union from being unequally affected by the new clauses as to irremovability—a point which the small size of many parishes rendered of importance.

The Act was only passed for one year. In the following year however, on the motion of Mr. Charles Buller, President of the Poor Law Board, it was continued by the Act 11 & 12 Vict. c. 110. At the same time the provision that part of the expenses of poor relief should not be borne by the single parishes, but by the common fund of the union, was extended to all classes of paupers who under the Act of 1846 were irremovable, and also to expenditure on destitute wayfarers and on foundlings.²

It is noticeable that by this transfer of the expenditure on relief from the single parish to the union according to the legal method of apportionment of the common charges of the union, no attempt was made to remedy the existing inequalities of the burden of relief. The common expenditure of the union was, in accordance with the provisions of the Act of 1834, charged upon the individual parishes according to the proportion of the expenditure of each for its administration of relief on an average of the last three years, so that the greater part of the common charge was imposed on those which were already most highly rated. It may thus be truly said that the common burthen was adjusted not according to the prosperity but according to the poverty of the particular parishes. The object of charging the new expenditure upon the common fund was the same as that of the provision of the Act of 1834, which threw upon that fund the cost of building and maintaining the workhouses and of paying the officials. In these new enactments it was thought desirable to avoid giving rise to fresh inequalities in the burthens of the individual parishes, and it was also considered that suitable agencies and necessary means for introducing and carrying out the new regulations would be most easily found in the greater area. This view had led in 1834 to the distribution over the whole union of the cost of erection and maintenance of workhouses, and of the payment of officials. In 1844 it was developed by the creation of school districts, and by the combination of unions for the purpose

¹ The Act is very carefully expressed, and leaves undecided the question whether such persons are not actually removable. "Persons who are or may be exempted from the liability to be removed."

² The operation of the Act 11 & 12 Vict. c. 110, was also in the first instance limited to one year. It was, however, continued from year to year, until it was made permanent in 1861 by 24 & 25 Vict. c. 55, s. 8.

of audit, and it now resulted in charging the union with the expenditure on irremovable paupers without a settlement, as well as on foundlings and wayfarers.

A tendency to level the existing inequalities in the burthen of relief had not hitherto found expression in legislation¹ although it appeared in the debate on the Act 11 & 12 Vict. c. 110. The introduction of this Bill had been preceded by searching inquiry. Under the chairmanship of Mr. Charles Buller, President of the Poor Law Board, a committee had in 1847 investigated the practical results of the Act of 1846, and had made a report. In 1848 Mr. Buller commissioned five competent persons to make inquiries in particular parts of the country as to public opinion with regard to the Law of Settlement. It was found that people for the most part pronounced in favour of its repeal, and also urged that the cost of relief should be defrayed in common by an equal poor rate throughout the union. The Central Department, however, was not yet prepared for this strong measure, and Mr. Buller himself, in the speech with which he introduced the Act of 1848 into Parliament, declared that he was in principle in favour of all charges connected with relief being borne equally by the whole union; but he feared that the change would be too great and too sudden.² The Act of 1848 was thus passed, without providing for any new apportionment of the common charges of the union.

Mr. Buller died in November, 1848, after holding office only eleven months. He was succeeded by the Right Hon. M. T. Baines, who (with a short interval in 1852, when the Right Hon. Sir John Trollope was President of the Poor Law Board in Lord Derby's administration) retained his office until August, 1855. He, too, considered that the primary amendment required in the poor law system was in the direction of repealing the power of removal under the law of Settlement, and that a fairer incidence of the cost of relief should be devised. In 1850 he called upon all the inspectors for their opinion on these points. A considerable majority were in favour of the changes suggested.

In February, 1850, Mr. Disraeli proposed that those costs of relief which had hitherto been borne by the unions should be defrayed from the Consolidated Fund.³ The proposal met with little support, and had to be abandoned. It was regarded as the first step towards the transfer to the State of the entire relief expenditure, a measure which was supposed to be the natural sequence of the change.

In 1854 Mr. Baines himself introduced a very comprehensive Bill, providing that the removal of paupers under the law of settlement should be no longer permitted. It was further proposed that in

¹ On the other hand, to this tendency may be partly due the charge on the Consolidated Fund of a portion of the expenditure on relief, namely part of the salaries of the workhouse schoolmasters, of the district auditors, and of the district medical officers. The sum so granted amounted, according to the Report of 1846, to £61,500.

² Cf. Nicholls, vol. ii., p. 424.

³ Hansard III. vol. cxxiii., p. 854.

future the common charges of relief should be borne by the unions, which were to raise the required amount by a uniform rate. In the speech with which Mr. Baines introduced his Bill on the 10th of February, 1854, he described graphically the great disadvantages of the Laws of Settlement and Removal, the repeal of which was called for by all the authorities, and he represented the unfairness resulting from the unequal apportionment of the charges for relief among particular parishes.¹ The Bill had every prospect of acceptance, but in the course of the debate differences of opinion arose as to one point, not affecting the main principle of the bill, and the result was its withdrawal.

It was only proposed to repeal the power of removal for England and Wales, which were henceforth to be regarded as a single district, as regards settlement. A few Irish members raised the question whether after the passing of the bill, the power to remove poor Irish from England would continue in force. Lord Palmerston declared himself willing to extend the benefit of the Act to the Irish, and he admitted that it would be unfair and anomalous to retain the power of removing Irish paupers from England while there was no power to remove English paupers from Ireland.² This view, however, aroused opposition among Lord Palmerston's followers. Mr. Baines himself objected that if the power to remove Irish paupers from England were repealed, ports like Liverpool and Bristol, where (especially in hard times, which often come in Ireland,) large numbers of the Irish poor were landed, would have to bear an unreasonable burthen. Lord Palmerston proposed the appointment of a new committee to report on the powers of removal with regard to Ireland and Scotland.

This committee, of which Mr. Baines was chairman, merely proposed that the power of removal should not be wholly repealed, but that it should be limited, and that irremovability should be obtained by three years' residence. Moreover, for this purpose, residence in the union, and not, as previously, in a particular parish, was to be taken into account.³

Mr. Baines, however, quitted office in August 1855, and thus could not pursue the matter. Nor was it taken up by his successor, the Right Hon. Edward Pleydell Bouverie.

But the next president of the Poor Law Board, the Right Hon. Thomas Sotherton Estcourt, introduced, in 1858, a bill founded on the recommendations of the committee. It was however regarded as a half-measure, and met with no support. Mr. Estcourt proposed the appointment of a new committee for the further consideration of the Laws of Settlement and Removal. This committee was appointed in 1858, and continued in 1859 and 1860. Its chairman was repeatedly changed. At first it was Mr. Estcourt who acted in that capacity ;

¹ Cf. Nicholls, vol. ii., p. 461.

² In Ireland there is no Law of Settlement. Relief follows residence. As to the Irish poor law system, see Kries, 210-316.

³ By this it was hoped to gain the votes of the Irishmen, who would derive profit from the alteration of the existing law. The Report appears as a parliamentary paper of 1855-6, vol. xviii.

then, after his resignation of office at the Poor Law Board, his successor, the Earl of March (afterwards Duke of Richmond) ; and then, in July 1859, the Right Hon. C. P. Villiers.¹

The proposals of the committee, which made its report in 1860² were accepted as regards their main points, and led to the passing of the Act 24 & 25 Vict. c. 55 in the year 1861. This Act makes substantial amendments in the previously existing enactments, and is of great significance in the development of the English poor law.

It is the first Act by which a portion of the charges for relief was transferred from the parish to the union, by raising in a uniform fashion from the whole union the amount required for what were declared to be common charges. Previously, as already stated, these common charges fell very unfairly on individual parishes, and were in fact very unevenly distributed. But under the new Act, individual parishes had to contribute to the common fund in proportion to their rateable value.³ The question whether in the apportionment among the parishes, regard should be paid to their population, was considered by the committee, but decided in the negative. In Parliament, Mr. Estcourt, the ex-president of the Poor Law Board, again proposed to take the population into account ; but the proposal was rejected.

The Act of 1861 contained a number of other provisions as to the common charges of the union. In the first place, the period in which irremovability might be secured was reduced from five to three years. It was also provided that residence in any part of a union should have the same effect as residence in a particular parish. All the statutory provisions, up till then temporary, under which specified charges were made common to the union, were made permanent. Finally, the cost of the maintenance of pauper lunatics was made a new common charge.

The Act thus not only effected an important equalization of the burthen of relief borne by particular parishes, but was another step towards lessening the hardships, with which Peel's Act had previously dealt, of the Laws of Settlement and Removal. It shortened the term of five years to three, and made residence in a union equivalent to residence in a parish. The union, in this respect also, was made to occupy the place of the parish.

Before further pursuing this development, it will be convenient to glance at the action of the Central Board and of the legislature up to the year 1860, though under neither head is there much to record.

The reports of the board for this period are less interesting than those of the poor law commissioners, mainly owing to the circum-

¹ For the short space of sixteen days the Right Hon. Thomas Milner Gibson acted as President of the Poor Law Board, intervening between Lord March and Mr. Villiers.

² Report from the Select Committee, with Proceedings, Evidence, and Minutes. Parl. Paper, 1860, vol. xvii.

³ "In proportion to the annual rateable value of the lands, tenements, and hereditaments in such parishes respectively assessable by the laws in force for the time being to the relief of the poor."

stances of the case. The commissioners had the duty of organizing afresh a relief system which had completely broken down. In effecting this reform it was desirable to make known in detail the grounds upon which the new regulations were based, in order effectually to do battle against the numerous interests opposed to change. At the same time, the commissioners sought by their reports to inspire the administrators of relief with new principles of action. Upon the establishment of the Poor Law Board in the year 1847, this reform might to some extent be considered as accomplished. The new department could the more easily be content with short annual statements of their proceedings, since they had sufficient opportunity, by their representatives in Parliament, of bringing disputed questions and complaints before the House, and of giving verbal explanations without delay. It was generally considered¹ that the English poor law now only required prompt reform in two respects: namely, the abolition of the hardships connected with removal, and the introduction of a more equitable apportionment of the charges for relief. It was, however, determined to give the newly organized machinery a fair trial, in order to see how far it would lead to an improved poor law system.

During this period the annual reports of the Poor Law Board, after reviewing the proceedings of the year, dealt in detail only with such matters as possessed special interest, in consequence of proposals in Parliament, of recommendations of parliamentary committees, or of new legislation. The questions of removal and settlement were of course prominent. The report of 1851 discussed the system of audit, that of 1854-5 the organization of medical relief, while several of the reports entered fully into the question of a uniform assessment for the poor rate. We need only refer shortly to these points.

The Act of 1834 had given great importance to a proper system of accounts. In pursuance of this Act a special official for the supervision of the accounts was appointed as auditor for each union. On the 1st March, 1836, the commissioners issued a general order expressly defining the expenses chargeable to the poor rate. For any expenditure not thus sanctioned the poor law officer was personally responsible. The Act of 1844 conferred upon the commissioners the power of uniting several unions into one audit district, so as to secure the services of a more capable auditor and one more independent of particular unions. In order to make the auditors still less dependent upon the guardians of the combined districts, the remuneration of the auditors was subsequently paid by the State.

¹ See Nicholls, vol. ii., p. 463, who, with regard to the introduction of Mr. Baines's Bill in 1854, says that "when compulsory removal is abolished and union chargeability substituted for parochial chargeability, there will be little occasion for further changes in our English poor law, which may be then consolidated into one clear and comprehensive code." Unfortunately this anticipation has not been fulfilled; and as Mr. W. C. Glen (the best authority in this matter) informed me in a private conversation, there is no prospect of consolidation of the poor law, mainly owing to the difficulty of including in one Act the countless legal provisions still in force. See above, p. 47, note 4.

The Act of 1844, and also one of 1848 (11 & 12 Vict. c. 91), contained further provisions as to audit, and to appeals against the auditor's decision. An appeal might be made either to the High Court of Justice, or to the Central Board, who might decide it on equitable grounds, and sanction expenditure not warranted by law.¹ As the judicial tribunal has no power of this kind, and as the appeal to the board is simpler and cheaper than the ordinary legal procedure, the Central Department became the regular court of appeal against the decisions of the auditors, and thus secured a fresh power of control over the current administration.² This power proved to be of great importance. All the acts and omissions of the auditors came under the constant supervision of the board, by whom they were paid, and by whom they could be dismissed. On the other hand, the board was enabled, in case of excusable irregularities on the part of the guardians, to do away with the hardship caused by strict application of the law.³ Its controlling power must thus have appeared to the local bodies in a milder light than would otherwise have been the case.

Another point much discussed in the annual reports was the appointment and payment of poor law medical officers. Of these there are two classes: namely, medical officers of the workhouse, and district medical officers who attend upon outdoor paupers. With regard to the latter, the poor law commissioners, in their report of 1839, recommended that the payment should be per case treated. This mode of remuneration, however, led to many complaints, both on the part of the medical men and against them. A Parliamentary committee of 1844 came to the conclusion that the permanent appointment of medical officers at an annual salary would secure better men and be at the same time more economical. In practice, however, many mistakes seem to have crept into the new system; and, especially, complaints were made that, in order to effect a saving, inordinately large districts were assigned to individual medical officers. In 1854 a new committee was appointed to consider the question. This committee also decided in favour of fixed salaries, and recommended that the appointments should be for life, in order to secure a better class of medical men. Moreover, it recommended the formation of smaller districts, which were in no case to include more than 15,000 acres or 15,000 persons.⁴ Thereupon, the poor law board

¹ 11 & 12 Vict. c. 91, s. 4. "To decide . . . according to the merits of the case, and if they shall find that any disallowance or surcharge shall have been or shall be lawfully made, but that the subject matter thereof was incurred under such circumstances as make it fair and equitable that the disallowance or surcharge should be remitted, they may . . . direct that the same shall be remitted."

² The scope of the board's business was thus much enlarged. Section 12 of the Act 14 & 15 Vict. c. 105 operated in the same direction, by providing for a reference to the board of disputes between unions or parishes as to settlement, removal, or chargeability. The Poor Law Board thus in several respects was invested with the judicial functions of a Court of Appeal.

³ For details see pp. 141, note 3, and 142, note 1. In illustration, the following figures may be given. Out of 346 appeals in the course of a year, the auditor's decision was reversed in 64 cases. Of the 282 cases in which it was confirmed, the Board remitted the surcharge in 264.

⁴ See Parliamentary Papers of 1854, vol. xii.

issued two general orders of 15 and 23 Feb. 1854, which, however, were repealed by the "Medical Appointments Order" of 25th May, 1857. On the 10th Dec. 1859, a further Medical Officers' Qualification Order was issued. According to the order of 1857, both classes of medical officers were to be appointed for life, and only to cease to hold office upon their resignation, insanity or other legal disqualification, or upon their removal by the Poor Law Board. Moreover, in order to secure improvement in the *personnel* of the medical officers, half their remuneration was paid by the State; they were granted special remuneration for operations and midwifery cases; and were also allowed certain other fees for vaccination, &c. Their position was thus substantially improved; so that a committee of the year 1864 came to the conclusion that there was no need of further regulations on the subject.

During this period a number of special legal enactments were passed with respect to the treatment of pauper lunatics.¹ Many questions besides those connected with the poor law are here involved, and need not be discussed in detail in this place. It is enough to say that the legislature endeavoured to secure the erection of lunatic asylums for counties. The cost of erection of these county asylums was charged upon the county rate, while the cost of maintenance for the pauper lunatics received as inmates was at first borne by the individual parishes, and after 1861 by the union. In case of the settlement not being ascertained, the county also bears the cost of maintenance. It is worth remarking that for this branch of the pauper relief system a larger district, namely the county, took the place, as regards unions, which the union occupied as regards the parish. Here too there is a very extensive power of the magistrates to charge the poor law officials with the care of pauper lunatics.

Finally, we must take notice of the numerous attempts in this period to attain uniformity in the assessments of the poor rate in individual parishes.

The Act of the year 1836 consolidated, as already stated, the main Acts as to rating, which had been based upon usage and legal decisions; and property was assessed on the rent at which it would let, free of tenants' rates and taxes, and deducting the probable cost of repairs and maintenance. This provision not only led to much litigation, but also to important differences in the assessment of particular parishes. As regards a number of properties, especially canals and railways, there was much difficulty in fixing the letting value, as such properties were of course not in fact let. Moreover, the proportion to be deducted from the rental in order to ascertain the rateable value for assessment was by no means uniform, and ranged from 10 to 50 per cent. These inequalities in assessment were

¹ 8 & 9 Vict. c. 100; 16 & 17 Vict. c. 96 & 97; 18 & 19 Vict. c. 105. The Act of 1853 (16 & 17 Vict. c. 97) "to consolidate and amend the laws for the provision and regulation of lunatic asylums for counties and boroughs, and for the maintenance and care of pauper lunatics in England," is the main enactment on this subject, and is in force at the present time as regards its chief provisions.

certainly less felt in the individual parish where, owing to its small area, every ratepayer could himself investigate and compare the circumstances, and might appeal to the sessions. On the other hand, they were very material in the case of the county rate, the valuation for which, in accordance with 55 George III. c. 51, was based on the poor rate. In the year 1845, the Act 8 & 9 Vict. c. 111, sought to cure this blot by providing that justices in the respective counties should be empowered to form committees of their number in order to make a correct assessment of the individual parishes for the purposes of the county rate. This enactment had no effect as regards the assessment for poor rate in individual parishes, first because the committee of justices had to concern themselves only with the valuation of the collective property in the parishes, and not with that of particular properties; and secondly because the overseers were in no way bound to base the poor rate on this assessment. In 1850 Sir G. C. Lewis introduced into the House of Commons a bill by which the committee of justices were to be entrusted with the assessment of property in the individual parishes. About the same time Lord Portman, in the Upper House, proposed the appointment of a committee to report upon the legal provisions with regard to local taxation. This committee recommended in its report that for the assistance of the overseers in the work of assessment, committees of ratepayers should be elected by the vestry, and that there should be an examination of the assessments by committees of the justices nominated at quarter sessions.¹ These recommendations, however, did not lead to any immediate result. An Act of 1852 (15 & 16 Vict. c. 81) substantially repealed the provisions of the previous Act of 1845 with regard to assessments for the county rate.

New measures appeared to be required to get rid of the inequalities of valuation. The Reform Bill, which based the right of voting upon the rateable value of property, and the repeated proposals to raise the common fund of the union by a uniform rating of parishes, again brought forward the question of a better valuation. In 1860 the House of Lords appointed a new committee. In the House of Commons Sir George C. Lewis, then Home Secretary, again introduced his former bill. But the matter progressed very slowly. The representatives of railways and canals were very strong in the House of Commons, and did their utmost to hinder the reform of the valuation system; fearing, with reason, that a considerable raising of the rates on railways and canals would be the result.

But after the Act of 1861 (24 & 25 Vict. c. 55) had required parishes to contribute uniformly to the common fund of the union, the question of a uniform valuation became a burning one. The president of the Poor Law Board, Mr. Villiers, communicated to the different unions the bill introduced into the House of Commons in order to obtain their opinion upon it. For the most part they approved. The bill was again referred to a committee, numerous

¹ Report on the Law relating to Parochial Assessments, brought from the House of Lords 26 July, 1850.

additions were made in committee and in Parliament, and it eventually became law as 25 & 26 Vict. c. 103. The main provisions of this measure, known as the Union Assessment Committee Act, 1862, are as follows :—

The board of guardians is at its first meeting to choose from six to twelve of its members as an “assessment committee,” of which at least one-third must consist of *ex-officio* guardians. Within three months after the appointment of this committee, the overseers are to prepare valuation lists, in which the rateable value is to be reckoned upon “the rent at which the hereditament might reasonably be expected to let from year to year, free of all usual tenants’ rates and taxes, and tithe commutation rent-charge if any.” (Sect. 15.) In order to obtain a fair and correct valuation, the committee may give directions as to the assessment, which the overseers must obey. It may order a new valuation, and for this purpose may, with the guardians’ approval, nominate valuers in place of the overseers. The valuation list is to be open to inspection; and appeals against it may be made either by individual ratepayers with regard to their own assessment, or by overseers on the ground of their parish being unfairly affected by the assessment of another parish. The committee has to determine these complaints, and may also, of its own accord, make alterations in the valuation lists. The amended lists are again to be open to inspection. Individual ratepayers may, in conformity with the existing legal provisions, appeal against their assessment to the special or quarter sessions. The overseers who consider that their parish is injuriously affected by being too highly assessed, or by another parish being assessed at too low a rate, may, with the approval of the vestry, appeal to the quarter sessions. The quarter sessions may decide directly upon this appeal, or may have a new assessment made by a surveyor specially nominated. The valuation list as finally settled is to be the basis for levying rates.

The direct result of this Act was, as might have been anticipated, a sensible increase in the rateable value, which grew larger from year to year as new valuation lists were prepared and settled in place of those previously in force. The Act forms a substantial part of the measures taken during this period to introduce a uniform distribution of the burthen of relief, and to extend the functions of the union in relation to those of the parish.

SECTION XII.

POOR LAW REFORM: SELECT COMMITTEE OF 1861.

The year 1860 inaugurated a new period of progress. Previously, attempts had been made to cure the defects discovered by the Royal Commission in 1834, by improvements of administration, by repeal of the worst provisions of the Law of Settlement, and by the establishment of a larger and more convenient poor law area in the

place of the parish which was for various reasons too small for the purpose. The leading principles of the Act of Elizabeth had been for the most part preserved: namely, that persons incapable of work should be supported, that pauper children should be educated, that the able-bodied should be set to work. The chief innovation was to treat the workhouse as the suitable means of obtaining all these objects, and its use for that purpose under the Act of 1834 was energetically promoted.

In the beginning of the sixties, public opinion began to occupy itself with the details of poor law administration. At the Social Science Congress in Glasgow in 1860 there were not less than four speakers who discussed the existing system in detail, and specially drew attention to the dark side of workhouse management.

The inspector of the poor in Glasgow, Ebenezer Adamson, while recognizing, in his paper upon the poor laws, the great general advantages of maintenance in the workhouse, was of opinion that, in particular cases, outdoor relief was not only more economical, but also more humane; while for poor children, especially for orphans and foundlings, he emphatically affirmed that treatment of another kind was imperatively necessary. If these children were to become useful members of society, and not a permanent burden upon it, they ought to be completely separated from adult paupers.

The second address was given by Miss Louisa Twining on the subject of "Workhouse Inmates." She especially blamed the injudicious treatment of the sick in workhouses. Neither the accommodation nor the staff was adequate for the requirements of the sick, regarded from a sanitary point of view. The sick ought, therefore, to be dealt with outside the workhouse.

The two following speakers, Miss Margaret Elliott and Miss Frances Power Cobbe, referred to paupers suffering from incurable sickness. It was not proper that this class should be treated in the workhouse. Humanity required that persons suffering from incurable disease of mind or body should be dealt with in another fashion. The object should be to alleviate their sufferings, and to make their unhappy life as pleasant as possible.

Thus we find three entirely different classes of paupers, whose removal from the workhouse, or whose treatment separately from the other inmates, is here advocated: namely, the children, the sick in need of special treatment, and the incurables.

The workhouse was thus no longer regarded as the means by which the entire relief of the poor could be provided for. As a matter of fact, these papers represented the general opinion of the time.¹ People

¹ In the later proceedings of the Social Science Congress we may specially mention the address, at the meeting at Edinburgh in 1863, of W. S. Walker, the Secretary to the Board of Supervision for the relief of the poor in Scotland, and of R. E. Warwick, Chairman of the City of London Union ("Transactions," pp. 725-733 and p. 770.) The first-named specially dilated upon the evil consequences of receiving children in workhouses: "to injure the generation which is growing up around us would probably be productive of greater evils than those present disabilities which the system is designed to overcome." Mr. Warwick

had arrived at the conviction that in the poor law administration there must be more specializing, more consideration of the different kinds of treatment suitable to particular classes of paupers.

Circumstances led to the entire system being thoroughly tested. In the winter of 1860-61 demands for public relief had reached an extraordinary height, especially in London. In consequence of depression of trade many persons were without employment, and the long and severe winter increased the applications for assistance. The number of those relieved in London alone showed in five weeks an increase of 38,367, and reached the colossal height of 130,317 persons. Public opinion jumped to the conclusion that the existing pauper institutions were not in a position to cope with this distress. Relief funds were established, and were distributed by the police magistrates. The statement that "the poor law had broken down" went through the entire press, and as generally happens on such occasions, every part of the poor law system was subjected to violent attack. The President of the Poor Law Board, Mr. Villiers, took what was in these circumstances decidedly the best course when, on the 8th February, 1861, he proposed to the House of Commons the appointment of a select committee "to inquire into the administration of the relief of the poor under the orders, rules and regulations issued by the Poor Law Commissioners and the Poor Law Board pursuant to the provisions of the Poor Law Amendment Act, and into the operation of the laws relating to the relief of the poor." In the speech with which Mr. Villiers introduced this motion, he said that there was a general feeling that a thorough inquiry into the administration of the poor law was necessary, and he trusted that the result would be a clear and rational decision. It was really time that something definite and stable should be determined. They had had the benefit of considerable experience and legislation, and ought to decide what were the best permanent means of providing relief for the poor. In the subsequent discussion it was manifest that there were wide differences of opinion. Mr. Ayrton, the representative of the Tower Hamlets, declared that the Poor Law Board was unnecessary; that the guardians could carry out the relief system at least as well without it. Lord Robert Cecil, the present Marquis of Salisbury, in a brilliant and exhaustive speech, replied that there was indeed necessity for an inquiry, not into the conduct of the Poor Law Board, but into the local administration, especially as regards the management of the metropolitan workhouses.¹

A committee of twenty-one members was appointed, with Mr. Villiers as chairman, and Lord Robert Cecil and other prominent statesmen as members. The evidence of the witnesses examined in 1861 alone occupies 1073 pages in the blue book. The committee was reappointed in 1862, 1863, and 1864, and issued its report on the 31st of May, 1864.

further specially urged the necessity in administering the poor law of respecting the humane sentiments of the population: "poor laws to be effective must be popular, and to be popular must be just and equitable in their charge, kind and merciful in their operation."

¹ See Hansard, *Parl. Deb.* III., vol. clxi., pp. 224-247.

Before we touch on its recommendations, which are based on an extraordinarily exhaustive inquiry, we must refer briefly to the action of Parliament in 1862, to which was partly due the fact that the recommendations of the committee went further than had been originally expected.

In consequence of the great cotton crisis in 1862, considerable distress occurred among the operatives in the English cotton districts of Lancashire, Cheshire, and Derbyshire. It was obvious that individual parishes would not, on account of the greatness of the emergency, be able to provide adequate relief. On the 22nd July, 1862, the President of the Poor Law Board introduced a special bill on the subject. The statute of Elizabeth, as already stated, provided for a "rate-in-aid." If the inhabitants of a parish were not in a position to raise the sum necessary for the costs of relief, the neighbouring parishes, the hundred, or even the entire county might be called upon for a rate-in-aid by the justices. This provision has very seldom been put in practice. Mr. Villiers now made it the basis of his bill by proposing that if in a particular parish the poor rate exceeded by two-thirds the average of the last three years, a rate-in-aid should be levied on the remaining parishes of the union.

This proposal met with strenuous resistance. The rate-in-aid clause of the statute of Elizabeth was declared inapplicable to the present case, and it was further asserted that to levy a charge of that kind on the whole union was opposed to the essential principles of the poor law system, and was objectionable in itself. The parish had been rightly made to bear the charges of relief, since a careful and economical administration could only be secured if it was undertaken by persons directly interested, such as the ratepayers in a small area where the circumstances of each case came under view. It would be better to give the distressed parishes the power of raising loans for the assistance of their unemployed workmen. Mr. Villiers found himself obliged to submit to a compromise. This followed in the Union Relief Aid Act (25 & 26 Vict. c. 110), which provided, in the case of the poor rate in one of the distressed parishes exceeding fifteen per cent. of the rateable value, that, with the approval of the Poor Law Board, either a loan repayable within seven years might be raised, or a rate-in-aid might be demanded from the remaining parishes of the union. In case the rate exceeded twenty per cent. the remaining unions of the county might be called on by the Poor Law Board for a rate-in-aid.

The Act was only passed for one year, and has thus no special significance, but the debate which took place upon it is of general interest in so far as it shows that in the then Parliament the transfer of the general burthen of poor relief from the parish to the union would have encountered strenuous opposition.

And yet one of the recommendations made by the committee of 1861, in its report of the year 1864, was in favour of "making the whole cost for the poor in each union chargeable on the common fund of the union." Its other proposals dealt with two main points ;

(1) the strengthening of the powers of the Central Department, especially so as to secure more efficient local administration ; and (2) the exceptional treatment of the metropolis, where the difficulties of its peculiar circumstances were recognized.

With regard to the Central Department, the committee considered that it should have power to introduce a systematic and uniform administration. For that purpose it should be made permanent, and its position should be raised ; it should be invested with the appointment of the district auditors, so that they should be independent officials of the State ; and it should have the same powers with regard to local bodies constituted under Gilbert's Act or special Acts as with regard to unions constituted under the Act of 1834. The Committee were further of opinion that the guardians, subject to the control of the Poor Law Board, should have the power of giving superannuation to union officers, who, in consequence of age or infirmity, were no longer fit for service. Finally, the Board was to have greater powers to compel the very necessary classification of paupers in workhouses.

With regard to the metropolis, it was considered most important to introduce a uniform administration for the entire district. It was necessary to make an end as soon as possible of the system by which poor law relief in a third of the area was administered under local Acts in different fashion from the rest of the metropolis. For the casual and houseless poor, whose treatment urgently demanded improvement, the whole metropolis ought to be dealt with as one district, as it depended purely on chance in what particular union this class of paupers solicited help. Suitable wards should be provided for them, the cost of erection of these buildings and the maintenance of their inmates to be borne uniformly by the whole metropolis.

These were the main recommendations of the committee. Their adoption by Parliament was gradual, but they formed the groundwork of most of the poor law measures of the succeeding years. Just as the Report of the Royal Commission of 1834 had previously formed the basis for legislation, so the proposals of the Select Committee of 1861-4 became the basis for the further development of the system.

After the presentation of the report to Parliament on the 31st of May, 1864, Mr. Warren, on the 27th of June, asked the President of the Poor Law Board, in the House of Commons, whether he proposed to introduce a bill based on the committee's recommendations. Mr. Villiers answered that a number of measures for carrying out its proposals were in preparation, and should be laid before Parliament as soon as possible.¹ The Government had decided to introduce the amendments not, as in 1834, by one comprehensive measure, but gradually, dealing separately with the different matters as to which alterations were proposed. This decision was judicious, for public opinion was in favour of certain of the amendments proposed, while in the case of others there was strong opposition.

¹ See Hansard, Parl. Deb. III., vol. clxxvi., p. 334.

Mr. Villiers himself, who quitted office on the 11th of July, 1866, could only deal with a portion of these recommendations, while others were carried into law during the short tenure of office of his two successors, the Right Hon. Gathorne Hardy (President of the Poor Law Board from July 12, 1866, to May 20, 1867) and the Earl of Devon (President from May 21, 1867, to December 15, 1868). Without discussing the merits of these two statesmen (the latter of whom had distinguished himself during eight and a half years as Permanent Secretary of the Poor Law Board), it may be said that the introduction of the comprehensive reforms recommended by the Committee of 1861-4 was mainly due to Mr. Villiers, who had been chairman of the Select Committee, and had held the presidency of the Poor Law Board during no less than seven years of a critical period of the development of the English relief system.

SECTION XIII.

LEGISLATIVE AMENDMENTS (1864-1867).

The first measure which obtained legislative sanction was the Act of 1864 (27 & 28 Vict. c. 42). This Act empowered the guardians, with the assent of the Poor Law Board, to grant superannuation allowances to officers who, in consequence of permanent incapacity of mind or body, or of old age, were incapable of efficiently discharging their duties. The pension must not exceed two-thirds of the salary, and in the case of superannuation on account of advanced age, the applicant must have served twenty years as paid officer of a union or parish, and must have completed his sixtieth year. This Act¹ gave an opportunity for securing the retirement, without excessive hardship, of officers whose resignation appeared to be desirable in the interests of efficiency. It was hoped, too, that the pension system would attract a better class of men to offices under the guardians.

The next Act, which passed easily enough, was the Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, 1864 (27 & 28 Vict. c. 116). It was at first enacted only for twelve months, but was amended and made perpetual in the succeeding year by 28 Vict. c. 34. The main provisions are to the effect that in every union or parish under a board of guardians within the metropolis suitable accommodation shall be provided for the reception of destitute wayfarers, wanderers, foundlings, or other destitute persons who merely seek shelter for the night. The accommodation provided is to be approved by the Poor Law Board, who must cause it to be inspected at least once in every four months. The Board must testify by a special certificate, which may at any time be revoked, that the accommodation is satisfactory. Admission to these so-called casual wards is to take place, from October to March between 6 P.M. and 8 A.M.; in the remaining months between 8 P.M. and 8 A.M. The police have the right

¹ It was extended by the 29 Vict. c. 31, 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113, and some later enactments.

of securing the admission to these casual wards of any destitute person found by them to be without shelter. With regard to the costs of management of the casual wards and the maintenance of the inmates, the Poor Law Board has from time to time to fix a specified contribution per head of the persons admitted, which is to be paid to the union or parish within which the ward is situate by the Metropolitan Board of Works,¹ out of the rates which it levies throughout the metropolis; or the Poor Law Board may fix a round sum to be paid for each casual ward in place of a payment per case. These allowances however are subject to the condition that the casual ward has been certified by the Central Department.

A number of new principles were developed in this Act. Of these the most important was the constitution of the whole metropolis, for the first time, as one district for a definite part of the poor law system. It is also significant that at the same time the powers of the Central Department were increased. The Poor Law Board had the absolute right of deciding whether the accommodation provided was sufficient; it depended on the Board's certificate whether the costs were repayable from the common fund. Finally, the provisions as to the treatment of the houseless poor are noteworthy. The casual paupers were withdrawn from the workhouse, in the management of which difficulty and disorder might easily be caused by the admission of persons only requiring assistance for a single night. Moreover, the police were made to take a share in dealing with such persons. It was this last point which in the debate aroused the greatest differences of opinion. Some wished to leave the relief of the houseless poor entirely in the hands of the police, in order thus to gain a handle for the suppression of mendicancy and of vagrancy. Others opposed any devolution of this duty on the police, on the ground that it would draw them away from their proper functions. The Act therefore embodies a sort of compromise in this matter between antagonistic opinions.²

Unquestionably the most important Act of this period was the Union Chargeability Act, 1865 (28 & 29 Vict. c. 79). The bill met with strong opposition, in which Sir R. Knightley, Mr. Bentinck, Mr. Thompson, and Mr. Henley in the House of Commons, and the Duke of Rutland in the House of Lords, took a leading part throughout its different stages.

As a matter of fact, the bill adopted, as of general application, the very principle which had aroused so much opposition when proposed in an exceptional case of emergency in the year 1862. The union was made to bear the burden of relief in place of the parish. Great as this change was in itself, it was only the final result of a long and gradual historical process. This process had begun in 1834, by the

¹ The Metropolitan Board of Works is no longer a contributory authority. See 30 Vict. c. 6.—[TR.]

² The differences of opinion as to the employment of the police again found expression in the discussion of a subsequent measure in the year 1871. We may specially mention a speech by the Earl of Kimberley, in which all the arguments pro and con are set forth. See Hansard III., vol. cciv., p. 920.

transfer of certain special charges to the common fund of the union, on which certain other expenses were subsequently thrown; it made important progress under the Act of 1861 introducing a uniform basis of assessment of individual parishes; and it was now completed by the provision that in future all the costs of relief should be defrayed from the common fund of the union.¹

In another respect the Act contains a further development of the existing law. The enactment of 1861, under which, after three years' residence in a place, a person had been irremovable, was altered so as to give irremovability after a residence of one year. With the Act of 1865 also were concluded the protracted attempts to abolish the evils of the Law of Settlement, and henceforward there could be no more question of hindering the freedom of migration from place to place, and the still existing power of removing persons in need of relief whose residence in a place has been less than one year is only a means of checking wanton vagrancy.²

After the Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, 1864, had paved the way for exceptional treatment of the metropolis, and had been followed by satisfactory experience of uniformity in dealing with one class of paupers—the houseless poor—there came the question of effecting the comprehensive reform which had been proposed by the committee of 1864 as regards the metropolis.

The poor law system of London urgently demanded amendment. In one-third of the area it was carried out under special local Acts in a manner which, in many respects, was not in harmony with the principles which had been laid down in the Act of 1834, and had been extended by later legislation as well as by the orders and regulations of the Central Board. Moreover, the inequality in the poor rate within the metropolis was enormous. In those districts which were mainly inhabited by the propertied classes there was only a small number of applicants for relief, and the consequence was that here the system was frequently extravagant and irrational. The contrary was the case in the poorer districts. Here the number of applicants was great, while on the other hand the circumstances of the ratepayers were such that a proper administration of relief was frequently thwarted by the want of sufficient means. On this account the most important object to be attained was an equalization of the poor rate and the introduction of a more uniform system of administration.

The Act of 1867, however (30 Vict. c. 6), was not confined to the amendment of existing defects. Its title was "An Act for the establishment in the metropolis of asylums for the sick, insane, and other classes of the poor, and of dispensaries, and for the distribution over the metropolis of portions of the charge for poor relief, and for

¹ Certain other charges, for vaccination, registration, and pauper burial, are also paid from the Common Fund.

² This at least was assigned as the main reason for saving the power of removal. See Lumley's 'Poor Removal and Union Chargeability Act,' 2nd ed. Lond. 1865, p. 10: "A check upon vagrancy and reckless importunity of the idle and thriftless poor."

other purposes relating to poor relief in the metropolis." The design was to introduce substantial improvements in the general system, and these could be carried out most easily in London, with its crowded population and its wealth. London was thus treated as an experimental ground for reforms in the matter of poor law administration, and these reforms were extended by subsequent legislation. A number of measures could be tried here directly under the eyes of the Central Department before changes were made elsewhere.

We proceed to describe the various provisions of this very comprehensive Act, which comprises 82 sections.

First, the Central Department was empowered to constitute boards of guardians, to be elected according to the general poor law Acts, in those districts in which the relief administration had been carried out under local Acts. These boards were to have the same rights and duties as those formed under the Act of 1834, and to be subject in like manner to the orders and regulations of the Central Board. Orders issued by the Board for the whole metropolis or particular districts were not to be general orders, and thus were not subject to the restrictive provisions applying to orders addressed to more than one district. The Board was at the same time authorized to nominate as additional guardians resident magistrates, or ratepayers assessed at not less than £40 to the poor rate, provided that the number of guardians thus nominated, together with the *ex-officio* guardians, should not exceed one-third of the elected guardians. The Board was also empowered, on failure of the guardians to appoint any poor law officer within fourteen days after receiving a requisition from the Board, itself to appoint such officer.

As regards the poor law administration, the Act created for the entire metropolis a "Metropolitan Common Poor Fund," to be raised by contributions from the respective unions and parishes in proportion to their rateable value. From this fund were to be paid—

- (a) The maintenance of lunatics in asylums ;
- (b) The maintenance of fever and smallpox cases in the hospitals to be specially provided for them ;
- (c) The maintenance of pauper children so far as this is carried on in special schools outside the workhouses ;
- (d) The cost of the casual poor ;
- (e) All charges for medicines and medical appliances ;
- (f) The salaries of all officers in the district schools, asylums, and poor law dispensaries.

To these may be added the expenditure for the matters already mentioned as associated with the poor law system,—vaccination, registration of births and deaths, &c.

For the administration of the common fund a special official, "the receiver," was to be appointed by the Poor Law Board. As regards the contributions of the respective unions, it was provided that every union should in the first place defray the expenses incurred within its own district, and that in each half year the auditor should settle in the case of each union the sum which it has to receive from the other

contributory unions ; and, on the other hand, the sum which it has to pay to the common fund. It is the difference between these two sums which it has to pay or to receive.

The chief innovations as regards the metropolis had reference to the treatment of the sick poor. Power was given to the Central Board by the combination of several unions to create districts for the establishment of asylums for the sick, insane, infirm, and other classes of paupers. These asylums were to be administered by special managers, some to be elected by the guardians, and others nominated by the Poor Law Board. The Board might settle the number of managers and the proportion of those nominated to those elected, but so that those nominated—resident justices or ratepayers assessed at over £40—should not be more than a third of those elected. The Poor Law Board was empowered to order the erection of asylums and the conversion of existing workhouses into asylums. For this purpose loans might be raised, payable in twenty years, but the amount borrowed must not exceed one-third of the aggregate annual poor law expenditure during the preceding three years. The expenditure for the erection, repairs, furniture and staff of the asylums, was to be borne by the combined unions, while the expenses of the maintenance of the inmates were to be separately charged on the particular union from which they were sent.

By the removal of particular classes of paupers from the workhouse, it was hoped to secure not only more suitable treatment for such classes, but also an improvement in the condition of the rest. After the removal of the sick and infirm requiring special care, a more strict and uniform system could be carried out in the workhouse.

In order to obtain the classification of paupers by placing them in different establishments suitable to special cases, and not, as previously, by merely making divisions in the workhouse itself, the Poor Law Board was further empowered to direct that particular workhouses should be reserved for particular classes of paupers. In these special establishments, paupers from other unions might be received under conditions laid down by the Board.

The previous enactments as to the contributions of the respective unions towards the provision of district schools were amended, so that the expenditure for the erection and maintenance of these buildings, and for the payment of the staff, should be defrayed proportionately by the combined unions. As the cost of the children received was to be borne, according to the provision already mentioned, uniformly by the whole metropolis, it was hoped that, without overburdening the individual union, the result would be to secure the removal of pauper children from the workhouses, and to place them in suitable institutions.

Finally, the Act introduced a new system for the supply of medicines for the poor. It provided that in each union and in each separate parish of the metropolis a poor law dispensary should be erected, from which all drugs prescribed for paupers might be obtained. For the dispensary a special dispensary committee was to be nominated

by the guardians. To this committee was also confided the appointment of the district medical officers. It was hoped that through this arrangement poor law medical relief outside the workhouse would be better and more cheaply organized.

The recommendations of the committee of 1864 were thus completely carried into effect by legislation, with the exception of the one proposal to make the Poor Law Board a permanent department.¹ This measure followed in the last place as a crowning of the whole work of reform. By the Act 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, the Poor Law Board was declared permanent, and thus this department, which had hitherto borne an experimental character, was raised to the rank of a substantive department of government. At the same time the Act increased the power of the Central Department by allowing it, at the request of one-tenth (in value) of the overseers and ratepayers of the parish or parishes concerned, to divide larger parishes, or to unite the divided parts of a parish with a neighbouring parish. The board might further, on the request of a simple majority of the guardians of unions or parishes in which the administration was still carried on under local Acts, repeal such Acts by provisional orders, or amend them at its pleasure. Such provisional orders must be submitted to Parliament for confirmation.

SECTION XIV.

LEGISLATION FROM 1868.

The legislature had thus, in the short space of three years, 1864-7, introduced important alterations into the English relief system. These alterations were partly the final result of a long previous development, but partly they were the first cautious steps towards reforms which remained to be completed by subsequent legislation. In the first category may be specially included the transfer of the burden of relief from the parish to the union, the limitation of the Law of Settlement as regards the power of removal with its attendant hardships, and, finally, the permanent establishment of the Central Board.

To the second category of measures which were newly introduced, and required subsequent legislation for their full development, belong :

1. The exceptional treatment of the whole metropolis as a single area for the introduction of a uniform and improved system of poor law administration, and a fairer apportionment of the expenditure.

2. The increase of power conceded to the Central Board, in order to secure a uniform and proper system in three respects, viz. :

- (a) With regard to the administration of the poor law in districts under special local Acts ;

- (b) With regard to the readjustment of the limits of unions ; and

¹ The proposal of the committee that the appointment of district auditors should be transferred to the Poor Law Board was carried into effect in 1868 by the Act 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 24.

(c) With regard to the combination of several unions for particular objects.

3. The removal of particular classes of paupers out of the metropolitan workhouses.

From 1868 attempts at legislation were directed to the development of these three principal points. In other respects, the main object was to supply certain omissions in existing Acts with regard to the levying of the poor rate, the raising of loans for poor law purposes, &c. ; and no new principles were introduced.

Apart from legislation, the proceedings of the Central Department after 1868 began to assume a prominent position, and to exercise a still more important influence on the poor law administration. The department was not only active in carrying out the provisions of the law so as to secure uniformity and to introduce fixed principles with regard to the grant of outdoor relief, but it assumed the position of a reformer by endeavouring to obtain for the poor law organization the co-operation of charitable societies and institutions.

After these general remarks upon the development of the poor law system in the last period here to be treated, we may proceed to the measures of particular years.

The action of the Poor Law Board was especially important as regards the Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867. For the metropolitan asylum district a board of managers was constituted, consisting of forty-five persons elected by the guardians, and fifteen nominated by the department. This board began with the erection of two great asylums for insane persons in Leavesden and Caterham, and of several hospitals for infectious diseases, especially fever and smallpox. Then followed the combination of a number of unions for the erection of sick asylums, in which were to be received all paupers requiring thorough medical treatment.¹ Five such sick asylum districts were provisionally constituted, while the larger and more opulent unions were required to erect their own infirmaries. Finally, dispensaries gradually began to be established for single unions.

With this provision for the treatment of the sick poor, the Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867, had also given the means for the better education of pauper children. By this Act the costs of maintenance to such children in district schools or other specially certified institutions were made a general charge on the metropolitan common fund, while the cost of children brought up in the workhouses fell on the respective unions. This provision made unions more inclined to combine with others for the erection of district schools, and in the first year of the operation of the Act three school districts were formed. Comprehensive as were these reforms in the metropolis, it was thought that they might be extended by new legislative provisions.

¹ By 32 & 33 Vict. c. 63, s. 16, the guardians were permitted, with the approval of the Poor Law Board, to enter into contracts with hospitals and infirmaries to receive special classes of sick paupers. By the exercise of this power proper care had been secured for those sick persons whose treatment in the workhouses was absolutely impracticable. See also 14 & 15 Vict. c. 105, s. 4.

In the year 1869 an Act (32 & 33 Vict. c. 63) was passed for the amendment of the Metropolitan Poor Act of 1867. The powers of the Central Board were in several respects strengthened; facilities were afforded for merging several unions or parishes in one union, and the Poor Law Board was further empowered to combine separate portions of a union with some other adjacent union for the sake of improved administration. This power was immediately utilized. The limits of the relief areas were improved and rearranged; their number was reduced from thirty-nine to thirty, of which thirteen consisted of single parishes, while there were seventeen unions of two or more parishes. The Poor Law Board was further empowered to dissolve existing asylum and school districts, and this was especially useful in securing the suitable re-adjustment of school districts. The Act also gave the Poor Law Board the important power of suspending certain repayments out of the Metropolitan Common Poor Fund to any union until the guardians had complied with the requirement to build a dispensary. This was a very effective mode of securing the erection of dispensaries, a matter in which little progress had hitherto been made. It was ordered at the same time that in the dispensary there should be a special room in which the district medical officer should attend for consultation at fixed hours. In this way poor law medical assistance, so far as given outside the workhouse or other institutions for indoor relief, was concentrated in the dispensaries, of which, in a short time, one was erected for each district of the metropolis.

The Act also contained a number of special provisions, of which we need here mention only one. In section 11 the guardians of the respective unions or school districts were authorized, with the approval of the Poor Law Board, to buy or hire ships upon which to train pauper boys for the sea. This enactment, which was immediately utilized with conspicuous success, bears witness to the strong disposition at this time to treat pauper children in an improved fashion. In their case the question of the charges involved was kept in the background; the chief object was to bring up the children satisfactorily. Great stress was laid on the necessity of raising the children from pauperism and bringing them up to be useful members of society. People came to the conviction that for this object mere education in workhouse schools was not of itself sufficient, but that the physical improvement of the children, who had been often neglected in the matter of health, and their systematic training for some career, were necessary in order to arouse in them a taste for work.¹

Almost at the same time as the Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, was passed the so-called "Valuation (Metropolis) Act, 1869" (32 & 33 Vict. c. 67), which was practically an extension of the

¹ We shall revert to this point in our description of the present poor law system, and need only remark at present that the education of pauper children may be reckoned among the best organized branches of the English poor law administration.

above-mentioned Union Assessment Committee Act, 1862, with the object of introducing for the whole metropolis one uniform assessment.¹ Of still greater importance was the Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1870 (33 & 34 Vict. c. 18). This Act completed the tentative enactments of the statute of 1867 in the direction of a fair division of the charges for relief within the metropolis.

It will be remembered that by the Act of 1867, the general charges of the whole metropolis were poor law medical relief, the maintenance of children, of sick and insane persons in the asylums specially provided for them, and the costs of casuals. These general charges were already more than a third of the collective expenditure for poor relief, but public opinion, soon after the Act of 1867 came into operation, pronounced in favour of a further extension of the expenses borne in common. The Poor Law Board believed it to be desirable, in the first place, to collect further experiences on the subject.

It was specially necessary to take care that these attempts to secure an equitable distribution of the burdens of pauperism over the whole metropolis should not lead to an increase of expenditure by inducing less care and economy in the administration of relief. A danger of this kind was probable in proportion as those who administered relief felt in a smaller degree the cost incurred. This argument had been previously used against the transfer of the charges from the parish to the union. There is no doubt that, men being what they are, administrators who feel that each blunder, each extravagance, and each increase of expenditure directly touches their own pockets, are likely to be more careful, more attentive, and more economical than those whose expenses are distributed over a greater area among a larger number of ratepayers, and who have therefore less personal interest in a reduction. Too great weight should not be attached to a consideration of this kind, and it should not be allowed to hinder improvements which are admittedly required. It cannot, however, be wholly disregarded in practice.

The Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1870, was designed not only to avoid these dangers, but to supply an opportunity for further progress and improvements. Its provisions are as follows:—

1. For the maintenance of paupers over sixteen in workhouses or asylums (not only the special asylums already provided under the Act of 1867), 5*d.* per day per head is to be paid out of the Metropolitan Poor Fund.

2. The Poor Law Board is to fix for each establishment the maximum of persons who may be admitted into it. If this number is exceeded, there is no payment from the common fund.

3. If the guardians or managers, in the course of the half-year over

¹ The Act formulates rules as to the assessment of particular classes of property, and attempts to settle more clearly a number of points which had given rise to differences of opinion. It also contains new provisions as to appeals against the assessment, which in the first instance are to be made to the justices in petty sessions of the particular division, and thence to specially constituted assessment sessions.

which the accounts run, omit to carry out an important order of the Poor Law Board,¹ the board has the right of suspending payment of the contributions to the district in question out of the common fund, and, in case the order remains without effect during the following half-year, payment may be entirely withheld.

In order properly to understand these provisions, it is necessary to bear in mind that before the introduction of the Act, the Poor Law Board had made detailed enquiries as to the average accommodation of the pauper institutions in the metropolis, and the cost per head of maintenance in them. It was thus found that the maintenance of a pauper in the workhouse cost on an average about 5*s.* a week.² There were fluctuations between 4*s.* and 6*s.*; in one workhouse, Bermondsey, the cost was only 3*s.* 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ *d.*, while in another, Kensington, it was over 6*s.* With a repayment of 5*d.* a day, or 2*s.* 11*d.* per week, as provided in the Act, every district has itself to bear a portion of the charges for the paupers admitted,—the more economical the administration, the less the proportion.³ On the other hand, abuses are guarded against by regulations with regard to diet (the daily ration for each inmate is prescribed), and also by fixing, in accordance with the Act, the maximum number of inmates of each class to be received. There is also a detailed system of books and accounts.

Not only did the Act of 1870 introduce a further equalization of

¹ The Act defines the kind of orders referred to; such as orders with regard to structural alterations in the establishments, to the separation of particular classes of paupers, and to the appointment of officials, &c.

² Costs of the building, payment of the officials, &c., are not included; there are also the current costs of maintenance.

³ A few figures will show the significance of this decision. Suppose that in district A 120 inmates of a workhouse are maintained at 3*s.* 6*d.* a week (an amount which we take as the lowest possible), while in another district, B, a similar number are maintained at 5*s.* 10*d.* (an amount which is frequently found in the rich and dear West of London). District A thus receives (according to the provision of the Act by which 2*s.* 11*d.* weekly is to be paid from the common fund for each inmate) five-sixths, while district B scarcely receives half of its outlay. In other words, district A maintains at its own expense 20 inmates of the workhouse, district B 60 inmates. If, moreover, we consider that district A is in the poor quarter of the town, where there are many applicants for relief, while district B is in the West, which contains few paupers, we may reckon that for 120 inmates of the workhouse in district B, there are at least 360 in district A. Of these, according to the above figures, district A has to maintain at its own cost one-sixth or 60 persons, district B one half or 60 persons, and thus the difference in the number of paupers in districts A and B is equalized. The difference in the charge for relief is removed to a much greater extent than appears at first sight. Mr. Goschen, the President of the Poor Law Board who introduced this Act, has, among other good qualities, that of being a first-rate statistician, and he has made full use of this quality in the Act in question. It should be remarked that the higher expenditure in district B is not only due to more costly administration, but partly to the great difference, in the price of necessaries, between the rich and the poor districts of London. In the Thirteenth Annual Report of the Local Government Board (Appendix, p. 231), there is a table of prices paid in workhouses for articles of food, and the following differences are exhibited. For bread in St. George's, 14*s.*, in Shoreditch 9*s.* 9*d.* per cwt. For beef in the City of London, 8*s.* 5 $\frac{1}{2}$ *d.*, in Stepney 3*s.* 6*d.* per stone. For lard in Lambeth, 93*s.* 4*d.*, in Bethnal Green 46*s.* 8*d.*, per cwt. [But of course differences in quality count for something.—TR.]

the charges for relief within the metropolis, without producing any want of care or economy in the administration, but it also contained other useful provisions; for instance, the clause allowing a contribution from the Metropolitan Common Fund for the costs of indoor relief, while the cost of outdoor relief was to be borne by the respective unions, must naturally tend to incline the unions to indoor rather than outdoor relief. This quite corresponds with the tendency which found expression in the Act of 1834, and which was steadily developed by the Central Board. Along with the attempts already mentioned to secure a suitable education for pauper children, the strict enforcement of the workhouse test is one of the chief points which at this time engrossed the attention of the Board. Before, however, pursuing this subject, the course of legislation must be further indicated. We have hitherto only mentioned those Acts which especially concern the metropolis. These end with the year 1870. We shall, however, again meet with the principles embodied in them as we examine the general Acts now to be enumerated.

The first of these general Acts (31 & 32 Vict. c. 122), of the year 1868, extends to the whole country some of the wide powers of the Central Board which at first had been restricted to the metropolis. This is the case especially with regard to local bodies administering relief under special Acts of Parliament. In any of such cases power was given to make alterations in the area of the unions without the assent of the guardians being necessary. The Central Board might also, in these districts, without any such assent, require the election of guardians to be as prescribed in the Act of 1834, and the orders under it. The Central Board was further empowered to unite extra parochial places with neighbouring parishes. It might also unite smaller parishes of less than three hundred inhabitants with neighbouring parishes for the purpose of election of guardians. Besides these provisions, which go to strengthen the powers of the Central Board, the Act contains a few other clauses of less importance.¹ Next was passed the Poor Rate Assessment and Collection Act, 1869 (32 & 33 Vict. c. 41), the object of which was to obviate the difficulties which had arisen through the system of compounding the rate.

The rate, as already explained, had to be levied upon the occupier. For considerations of convenience, however, in order not to burden the overseers with the collection of small sums, the Act 59 George III. c. 12, s. 19, had provided that in the case of dwellings rented at between £6 and £20 for any less term than one year, or on any agreement by which the rent was payable at any shorter period than three months, the owner instead of the occupier might be rated. This compounding system was then extended by the Small Tenements

¹ Thus it is provided that throughout the country, as had been the case in the metropolis under special Acts relating to school districts, the contributions of the combined unions should be regulated according to the rateable value. Moreover, in the Act, the one measure still necessary to complete the carrying into effect of the proposals of the committee of 1861-4, viz., the appointment of district auditors by the Central Board, was now made obligatory.

Act of 1850 (13 & 14 Vict. c. 99), which authorized the assessment of the owner instead of the occupier in the case of all houses below £6 in rental, but so that the owner should be only assessed on three-fourths of the rent. This system, and still more the modifications which in many cases it received by local Acts, had given rise to many doubts and disputes with regard to those Acts which made the franchise dependent on assessment to the poor rate. The position was made so complex after the Reform Act of 1867 (30 & 31 Vict. c. 102), that it was necessary for the Legislature to interpose.

This was done by the Act of 1869.¹ This Act prescribed one uniform system of compounding the rates, and provided that in the preparation of the poor rate, even if the rate was payable by the owner, the name of the occupier should be entered in the proper column as ratepayer, and that this should regulate the franchise. If, however, the name is not entered, the vote is not lost, provided that the person concerned establishes his right subsequently. In this connection we may refer to two other Acts which do not, in strictness, belong to this period.

The most important is the Rating Act, 1874 (37 & 38 Vict. c. 54). By this were repealed the existing exemptions from poor rate of woods, sporting rights, and certain classes of mines, and special provision was made with regard to the assessment of these three classes of property. Especially important is the taxation of mines, as Parliament had frequently occupied itself with this particular exemption. Proposals to make mines liable to rating had been made almost every year since 1855, and in 1856 and 1857 select committees had reported on the question. After it had once more been threshed out by the select committee of 1868, whose report was published in 1873, it was finally settled by Act of Parliament.

The other statute, which may be here referred to, is the Union Assessment Act, 1880 (43 & 44 Vict. c. 7). It applies the provisions of the Act of 1862, with regard to the assessment of unions, to parishes not included in a union, but carrying out their own administration through a board of guardians, by virtue of local Acts, or of power conferred by the Central Board under the statute of 1834. The provisions as to assessment for the poor rate are thus made generally and uniformly applicable throughout the country.

We now continue our chronological enumeration of legislative measures of this period.

In 1871 the Local Government Board Act (34 & 35 Vict. c. 70) effected a transformation of the central department of poor law administration. It was of great importance as regards the general organization of local government in England, but as far as the poor law is concerned, it introduced no material change. The newly-created Local Government Board is a second Ministry of the Interior, to which are entrusted not only the collective functions of the

¹ As to the details of this Act, which exclusively deals with matters of assessment, we speak more fully below, p. 150.

late Poor Law Board, but also sanitary and highway administration, as well as the general supervision of local authorities.¹

The Local Government Board is, like the previous Poor Law Board, a Committee of Ministers, and consists of a President, of ministerial rank, with the President of the Privy Council, the various Secretaries of State, the Lord Privy Seal, and the Chancellor of the Exchequer, as *ex-officio* members. Practically, however, the President of the Local Government Board, like the President of the Board of Trade, has the sole direction, and the association with him of *ex-officio* members is a pure formality. All Acts of the Local Government Board must be done under its seal, and are valid if signed by the president or by one of the *ex-officio* members, and countersigned by one of the secretaries or assistant-secretaries. One of the secretaries must, like the president himself, have a seat in Parliament. The annual reports of the Local Government Board up to 1875-6 were divided into three parts: Relief of the Poor, Local Government and Sanitary Acts, and Public Health. Since that time the arrangement is—(1) Administration of the laws relating to the relief of the poor; (2) Administration of the laws affecting local government and public health; and (3) Local taxation and valuation.²

In the year 1871 was passed the Pauper Inmates Discharge and Regulation Act (34 & 35 Vict. c. 108). This Act is concerned especially with a particular class of paupers, the so-called casuals—viz., those who become destitute in tramping from place to place, or otherwise, and only require temporary relief and shelter. For the metropolis, special provisions relating to this class were enacted by the Metropolitan Houseless Poor Acts of 1864 and 1865. The new law contained general clauses which dealt with this class of paupers more stringently. It required the guardians to erect special casual wards, and the Central Board was empowered to issue regulations as to the diet and work of the persons admitted. A casual pauper is not entitled to discharge himself until the completion of the prescribed work, or before 11 A.M. on the day following his admission. If admitted more than twice in one month into the casual wards of a particular union, the period of detention is to be extended until 9 A.M. on the third day after his admission. For this purpose, the entire metropolis is regarded as one union. For offences committed by casual paupers, special penalties are prescribed.

This Act had a very good effect, particularly where it was stringently enforced. The number of casual paupers was much diminished. The success of this experiment led to the passing of the Casual Poor Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 36), by which the enactments against this class were made more severe, and henceforth the casual pauper might be detained till 9 o'clock on the morning of

¹ The Local Government Board was by a number of subsequent Acts entrusted with new powers of a special character, which, however, are not within the province of poor relief, and therefore need not be enumerated here.

² The financial part of the relief administration is also treated in the statistical tables annually appearing under the title of 'Local Taxation Returns.'

the second day following his admission, and this period, if he had been received more than once within a month into the casual ward of a particular union (or of the metropolis), might be extended to 9 A.M. on the fourth day after his admission. For cases demanding special treatment, the superintendent of the ward was empowered to make an exception from this provision. The guardians were also empowered by resolution to exempt special classes of vagrants from the operation of the Act. These legal provisions for casual paupers constitute an important extension of the penal laws which have been in force since the year 1819 against beggars and vagabonds.

Besides these matters, the legislation of this period is occupied with the settlement of a number of points which, though more or less connected with the poor law, are of no great importance.

Under this head come the numerous Acts as to local loans to poor law and other authorities.¹ Their tendency is to modify the provisions of the Act of 1834 with regard to loans for poor law purposes, and to facilitate the obtaining of such loans at moderate interest. The Central Board perceived that the carrying out of the measures which were considered necessary, especially the erection of costly institutions like hospitals, district schools, &c., would not be practicable unless part of the cost were imposed on the next generation by means of loans. In order, however, to avoid extravagance and the overburdening of particular places with debt, the Central Board was entrusted with large powers with regard both to the raising and paying off of loans. As a rule, loans must be paid off by annual instalments within thirty years. The Local Government Board can extend or shorten this period. It may also sanction loans, not merely for the erection or rebuilding of poor law establishments, but also for their fittings, &c. The amount of loan is limited by a provision that it is not to exceed two-thirds of the poor rate raised within the district during the previous three years. Loans were originally secured on the poor rate of the parish; then, after the transfer of charges to the union, upon that of the union, and in particular cases upon that of a still larger area, a combined district, or the entire metropolis. As to the metropolis there are a number of special enactments; thus the Metropolitan Asylums Board receives from the Metropolitan Board of Works loans to a certain amount at exceptionally low interest, and only repayable within sixty years. Under a general order of 25th April, 1879, statistical returns are annually to be made to the Local Government Board as to the amount of loans effected, repaid, and outstanding, and in this way an adequate control is established.²

Another subject of legislation may be here touched upon, since its connexion with the relief system is a peculiar characteristic of English

¹ The most important provisions as to local loans are enumerated in the 8th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. lii., and Appendix, page 95.

² Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 790. The return must be tabulated so as to show (a) amount originally advanced; (b) when advanced; (c) whether by Public Works Loan Commissioners, a company, or otherwise; (d) for what object; (e) for what period; (f) rate of interest; (g) mode of repayment; (h) amounts paid this year; (i) amount of principal still owing.

law. The prosecution of claims against the putative fathers of illegitimate children has been from early times dealt with by legislation in connexion with the poor law. The Royal Commissioners of 1832-4 went carefully into the question of the Bastardy Laws. The legal amendments introduced at their suggestion (by which the responsibility of the mother of an illegitimate child was increased, and the duty of maintaining the child was imposed upon her) were among the points which specially aroused opposition against the new Poor Law of 1834.¹ In subsequent poor law legislation it was found again and again necessary to intervene with the view of enabling the parish to recover the charges imposed upon it by the relief required for illegitimate children.² The guardians were empowered, in certain circumstances, to proceed independently against the father of an illegitimate child. An Act, which was in force for a short time, even allowed the appointment of a special official in the parish or union to take the necessary measures against the father. The legal procedure was simplified for compelling the father to provide a maintenance for the child. Finally, the Local Government Board was empowered to issue new or altered forms and detailed rules for such procedure. It is unnecessary here to enter into particulars; the matter has only been mentioned in this place on account of the connexion which, according to the English law, it has with the relief system.³

Of greater importance as regards the poor law are the legal enactments which were passed at this period with reference to changes in the boundaries of parishes, and to the formation of unions.

By the Act of 1867⁴ the Central Board was empowered on the requisition of one-tenth of the owners and ratepayers to unite divided parts of one parish with another, and to divide parishes of inconvenient extent. These powers were to be carried out by provisional orders, requiring the confirmation of Parliament. But this power proved inadequate. Such alterations often clashed so much with local interests that the requirement of an application from the locality frequently made it difficult, if not impossible, to effect a readjustment of district boundaries, which was on various accounts desirable. Moreover, alteration in the area of parishes often involved a readjustment of unions which was not provided for by law. The Act of 1834 had given the Central Board the power to create and dissolve unions, but the exercise of this power was

¹ See Fowle, p. 98: "No part of the new poor law was more fiercely attacked than this, and strong efforts were made either to modify it, or so to administer this clause as to punish the man or provide a civil remedy for the woman."

² 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122 s. 41; 35 & 36 Vict. c. 65; 36 Vict. c. 9.

³ The forms framed by the Local Government Board and published on the 4th August, 1873, and 8th January, 1874, are printed in Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' pp. 600-646, thus occupying 47 large printed pages. Their thoroughness, which seems to provide for all possible cases, is as remarkable as the fact that to the Local Government Board was entrusted the duty of framing them.

⁴ 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 3, see above, p. 74.

subject to the approval of two-thirds¹ of the guardians, which was often unattainable. On the ground of this experience it was thought necessary to make sweeping alterations in the law, and in the year 1873 a Select Committee was appointed on the subject. The recommendations² of this committee formed the basis of three Acts: viz., the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 (39 & 40 Vict. c. 61), the Poor Law Amendment Act, 1879 (42 & 43 Vict. c. 54), the Divided Parishes and Poor Law Amendment Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 58).

The result of this legislation was that the Central Board received a free hand as to the dissolution and formation of unions, and as to the treatment of detached parts of parishes. It was provided that the board might separate detached parts of a parish, and either join them to other parishes or form them into independent parishes.³ Protection was given to local interests by enacting that upon the dissent of one-tenth of the ratepayers, the order should become provisional, and should require the confirmation of Parliament. In the case, however, of a detached portion entirely surrounded by another parish, the Act of 1882 provided that it should be amalgamated with such parish forthwith; though if the population exceeded 300, application might be made to the Local Government Board to form it into a separate parish. Moreover, the dissolution and formation of unions might be carried out without the approval of the majority of the guardians.

All the powers above mentioned apply not only to the unions constituted under the Act of 1834, but also to those formed under local Acts. The latter were thus doomed to extinction. Unions under Gilbert's Acts had already vanished.⁴ Henceforth, we may speak of a uniform administration of the relief system throughout England, and of a uniform application of the powers of the Central Board.⁵

The three Acts above mentioned contain a number of other provisions, of which we need only mention the following. In the Act of 1876 the previous law of settlement was altered, so that thenceforth a settlement should be obtained by three years' unbroken residence in the parish, and that such settlement should continue until a new one had been legally acquired. This provision

¹ 4 & 5 William IV. c. 76, s. 32.

² See 'Report on Boundaries of Parishes, Unions, and Counties,' 1873.

³ See Chalmers, 'Local Government,' London, 1883, p. 53: "The union is as potter's clay in the hands of the Local Government Board, and can be moulded at its will. The Board may create new unions, alter the constituted parishes of existing unions, and dissolve unions."

⁴ Gilbert's Acts (22 George III. c. 83, and 41 George III. c. 9) were expressly repealed by the Act 34 & 35 Vict. c. 116.

⁵ It may here be mentioned that the Act of 1879 extends to overseers and churchwardens, &c., the power previously possessed by the guardians of applying to the Central Board for the repeal of existing local Acts. The number of districts in which poor law relief administration is still carried out under local Acts is so small that we may leave it out of consideration in treating of the present relief system.

had no great significance with regard to the relief system, as irremovability was already based on residence for a single year. A more important provision is that of the Act of 1879, by which the Central Board is empowered to combine two or more unions for any purpose connected with the administration of the relief of the poor, for the sake of economy, or of public or local advantage. This is the basis of the formation, for particular objects, of greater districts, such as had already been formed in the metropolis under special Acts. Finally, it should be noticed that the Act of 1882 contains special provisions for dealing with parishes and unions with boundaries overlapping those of the county. The ample powers here given to the Central Board were introduced in view of the intended change of the county administration and the formation of county boards.¹

We must next mention the District Auditors Act (42 Vict. c. 6). Previously the district auditors who, under the Act of 1844, had taken the place of the union auditors, had been Government officials, whose appointment under the Act of 1868 was made by the Poor Law Board; but their remuneration rested mainly with the local authorities. As a matter of fact, the greater part of the payment was already derived from the State, as Parliament annually voted a large sum for the purpose. By the Act of 1879 it was provided that the district auditors should be exclusively paid from imperial funds. Contributions of the local bodies were levied in the form of stamp duties according to a scale based upon the amount of the expenditure included in the financial statement submitted to audit. As to this financial statement the Act contains a number of provisions which were elaborated by a general order of the Local Government Board of 25th April, 1879.

We must here mention an important report of a Select Committee of the House of Commons of 1879 on the Laws of Settlement and Removal, although it has not yet been followed by any legislative result.

In the sitting of the House of Commons of 2nd July, 1878, Mr. M'Carthy Downing called attention to the differences in the Acts of the Three Kingdoms in regard to settlement and removal. While in England settlement is obtained by a three years' residence, and irremovability is established by residence for a single year, in Ireland there is no settlement and no power of removal; and in Scotland, settlement can only be obtained by five years' residence, and mean-

¹ See the speech of the late President of the Local Government Board, Mr. Slater Booth, at the annual meeting of the British Association of 1882, printed in the journal of the London Statistical Society, vol. xlv., p. 549. It is there specially stated that in the formation of parishes, and still more in that of unions, the interests of local administration had been alone regarded, without reference to the boundaries of counties. Consequently, out of 649 unions, 181 crossed the county boundaries, and many unions lay in three counties. In order to cure this blunder, it was necessary to make use of the new powers very carefully and gradually, as disadvantageous consequences would ensue if vested interests were treated too roughly.

while there is power of removal. In the House of Commons the unfairness of this state of affairs was generally recognized, and particular speakers advocated the entire repeal of the power of removing an applicant for relief on the ground of his not having obtained a settlement. The result of the debate was the appointment of a select committee on the Laws of Settlement and Removal.

The new committee examined a large number of persons. Most of the witnesses were in favour of the entire repeal of removal. The Scotch, however, and the representatives of particular sea-ports, were of a contrary opinion. They contended that by the repeal of the power of removal an unfair burden would be cast on particular places, and especially that sea-ports would suffer, because many persons, especially from Ireland, landed in a condition of perfect destitution. The number of such persons, whose relief ought not to be imposed upon the ratepayers of the port where they happened to land, would be much increased if the power of removal was repealed. Moreover, it served as a means to prevent persons from applying for public help. It was thus a test of pauperism supplementary to the workhouse test. If this power were repealed the number of applicants for relief would be augmented.

The committee, which presented its report on the 10th of July, 1879,¹ confined itself to the following recommendations: that in England the power of removal should be generally abolished, and should only be retained at seaports with regard to the persons landing there. In Scotland it was desirable to introduce a gradual approximation to the laws of settlement and removal existing in England. The position in Ireland was to be left unchanged. These proposals have, as stated above, not been carried into effect as yet. The Gladstone administration, which came to the helm, did not pursue the matter, but public opinion is entirely in favour of the complete repeal of the power of removal, and it is thought that this is only a question of time.²

The most recent law on the relief system is the Poor Law Conferences Act, 1883 (46 & 47 Vict. c. 11). This Act allows unions to pay out of the common fund the reasonable expenses incurred by any guardian or clerk to the guardians, in attending poor law conferences, and also authorizes the purchase of reports of the proceedings of such conferences. This provision, insignificant in itself, is of importance as the official recognition of an institution established of late years.

The so-called Poor Law District Conferences owe their existence to Mr. Barwick Baker. In 1868 he called a meeting of the poor law officials of his district (the so-called West Midland Conference), over which he himself presided. The object of this conference was the

¹ Parliamentary Papers, 1879, vol. xii., p. 561.

² This assurance has been given me from various quarters, especially by Mr. W. C. Glen, and by Mr. Hedley, the general inspector. Evidence to the same effect is afforded by the fact that in many places, especially in Manchester, the power of removal is no longer employed. See the speech of Mr. Hibbert in the debates of the House of Commons of 2nd July, 1878, already mentioned.

exchange of opinions of men of practical experience in poor law administration with regard to the measures adopted in particular districts, and their results. Certain new methods of procedure were also discussed, with a view to their uniform application to the whole district. The idea was taken up in other districts. In the year 1869 Mr. Corbett, a poor law inspector, called a meeting of the guardians of the eastern districts of London, in order to consider the general measures to be adopted for east London, with regard to the then existing distress.

From the very first, the Central Board recognized the value of meetings of this kind, as a means of securing greater uniformity in the administration of relief and common-sense treatment for particular branches of the poor law. To its initiation was due the assembling of the first Central Conference in London in 1871. At this conference an advance was made by the formation of a Central Committee of the Poor Law Conferences. The new institution made more and more progress year by year, and gradually formed a complete organization of its own. There were in time twelve district conferences in various parts of England, and since 1875 the poor law officers of the metropolis have had a distinct conference for themselves. Representatives, either guardians or clerks to the guardians, are sent by particular unions to the district conferences; such conferences in turn choose delegates for the central conference, which is annually held at a different place. The district conferences have also been held annually since 1878. At the central conferences the subjects are settled which, during the current year, are to be treated by the district conferences and also by the next central conference. The proceedings of both district and central conferences have been published since 1875, and these publications, after the reports of the Local Government Board, are the best source of information as to the present poor law system.¹

The Central Board shows its appreciation of the new institution by sending to each conference at least one and frequently several inspectors, who ordinarily take an active part in the debate. The Minister in person habitually attends one conference in the course of the year. The subjects of discussion are frequently referred to in the reports of the Local Government Board. In this way, without any intervention of the legislature, is secured a co-operation of the Central Board with representatives of the local authorities, which is more effective than any Act could have brought about.²

The conferences have not only occupied themselves with questions

¹ 'Reports of the Poor Law District Conferences,' Knight and Co.

² This co-operation is significant in another way. I am informed that a number of appointments made by the Local Government Board have been due to the part taken at these conferences by the persons selected. It is also understood to be a fact that the constitution of boards of guardians in the last ten years has been much altered and improved under their influence. Formerly, candidates for the office of guardian were mainly small tradesmen, but now persons of ability and position are willing to take the office, as a stepping-stone to higher public positions.

of carrying out existing Acts, but have also discussed suggested alterations of the law. The Casual Poor Act, 1882, above mentioned, is directly founded upon the conclusions arrived at by such conferences.¹

The subjects mainly treated by the conferences were (1) Treatment of the casual poor, including that of beggars and vagabonds; (2) The formation of larger districts, by which the relief system generally or particular branches of it may be more suitably dealt with; (3) The administration of outdoor relief; (4) The education of pauper children, and (5) Poor law medical relief. Some of these matters were, as we have seen, the subject of legislation during this period. To others public attention was directed by the Board.

We may supplement these remarks with a brief statement of the proceedings of the Central Board during the latter period here referred to.

SECTION XV.

PROCEEDINGS OF CENTRAL BOARD.

In December 1868 the successor of the Earl of Devon as President of the Poor Law Board was the Right Hon. George Joachim Goschen, who is the author of a new departure, in more than one particular, of the English poor law system, and to whom its further development is in great measure due.² Although Mr. Goschen, who resigned in March 1871, was unable to carry out the measures which he had introduced with the object of securing a better relief administration, his successors in office followed in his footsteps and proceeded with the work which he had begun.

Next to Mr. Goschen came the Right Hon. James Stansfeld, who, after the Poor Law Board had been merged in the Local Government Board, was the first President of the new department. In 1874 he was succeeded by the Right Hon. G. Sclater Booth, who in his former position as Parliamentary secretary of the Poor Law Board had acquired experience in poor law work. From 1880 till 1882 Mr. Dodson was president of the Board, and subsequently the position was occupied by Sir Charles Dilke, who had already made a name in another sphere of politics.³

¹ Mr. Albert Pell, who has especially advocated these proposals at the conferences, introduced into the House of Commons a measure based upon them. The then President of the Local Government Board, Mr. Dodson, supported the Bill in the House of Commons, while Lord Carington had charge of it in the House of Lords; and it was passed into law without substantial alteration.

² We may specially mention the 22nd Annual Report of the Poor Law Board, which was issued under Mr. Goschen's presidency. This report is distinguished not only by the fulness of the matter treated, but also by the highly scientific mode of treatment, and the formulation of important principles. Especial attention is given to statistics, a favourite subject of Mr. Goschen's.

³ We must also mention a number of the higher officials serving under the presidents. Two names are especially prominent, those of Mr. Henry Longley, general inspector of the poor for the metropolitan district, whose reports upon poor law administration in London are masterpieces, and give a clear impression

It is remarkable that all these presidents, no matter what their political party, pursued the same policy as to the administration of relief, so that changes of ministers had no effect on the department. The principle which Mr. Goschen first adopted was recognized by all political parties as the right one. By it the English system has been thoroughly transformed without the aid of any important legislation. Good points have been developed, and as to the defects with which the system has often been charged, and which are still insisted on by foreign writers, it has been shown by abundant evidence that they are not inherent on the system, but depend on the way in which it is carried out. With improved administration they have for the most part disappeared.

Special circumstances in the metropolis gave the first impetus to the intervention of the Central Board in relief administration. The commercial crisis, which began in 1866 and lasted till 1868, had produced, especially in the east of London, an amount of distress¹ which engrossed public attention. The existing accommodation for paupers was absolutely insufficient for the reception of all the applicants. It was thought possible to aid the poor and afflicted East of London by private charity and by grants from the numerous charitable foundations of the metropolis, but the Central Board recognized the great danger to a sound system of relief which would result from affording assistance by private benevolence in addition to, but independently of, relief by the guardians.

With the want of organization in private charity there would be a danger that, owing to false representations, which could not be thoroughly investigated either by individual donors or by benevolent institutions, help would be received by persons in no need of it. It was also probable that, through private charity, persons already in receipt of assistance from the rates would obtain further sums to such an extent that the position of those relieved would be made better than that of the independent artisan. The country had already had unfortunate experience as to this. People still remembered the demoralizing influence caused by the misapplication of relief which had taken place before the Act of 1834, and which operated not only on the recipients but also on the entire working population. Further, the principle of the workhouse test, upon the importance of which the Royal Commissioners had especially insisted, was undermined and compromised by the extended operation of private charity.

The Central Board considered that these dangers could only be

of the position and proceedings of the inspectors (see Appendices to the 3rd and 4th Annual Reports of the Local Government Board), and Mr. J. T. Hibbert, who from April 1880 to April 1883 was Parliamentary Secretary of the Local Government Board. That office was next filled by Mr. G. W. E. Russell, and Mr. Robert Hedley was then general inspector for the metropolis. The names of others who have done much for the improvement of the English poor law system will be mentioned as occasion requires.

¹ This distress was aggravated by the outbreak of cholera in the summer and autumn of 1866, and by the hard winter of 1866-7.

averted by drawing a hard and fast line between private charity and public relief. It appeared of great importance to recall the principles introduced into the English poor law system after the Act of 1834 as regards the grant of public assistance. The then general inspector of the poor, Mr. Corbett, with the Parliamentary Secretary of the Poor Law Board, Mr. Sclater Booth, had first of all to carry this out in the metropolis. It was the fortune of these two officials, in the most difficult circumstances, to succeed admirably in this direction. It was in the poor districts of the east of London that it was found possible to establish a judicious combination of public and private relief, making charity the complement of the poor law, and thus to set a good example to other districts.

This experience, acquired at a time of exceptional distress, induced the Central Board to make inquiries how relief was administered elsewhere. At the same time it was necessary to instruct public opinion as to the dangers associated with unorganized charity, and as to the necessity of rigidly adhering to the principles of the workhouse test as laid down by law.

With this object, Mr. Goschen issued a circular on November 20, 1869, to the metropolitan relief authorities.¹ This declares that "it is of essential importance that an attempt should be made to bring the authorities administering the poor laws, and those who administer charitable funds, to as clear an understanding as possible, so as to avoid the double distribution of relief to the same person, and at the same time to secure that the most effective use should be made of the large sums habitually contributed by the public towards relieving such cases as the poor law can scarcely reach." It is therefore necessary "to mark out the separate limits of the poor law and of charity." A recognized principle of the poor law is that enunciated by the Royal Commission of the year 1834, that "relief should only be given to those actually destitute, and not in aid of wages." The workhouse test should be strictly maintained; only by this means is it possible to obtain certain proof that the applicant is really destitute. And only by relief in the workhouse is it possible completely to avoid the danger of making relief an aid to wages. In particular instances, rigid adherence to these principles might appear not only harsh, but also wasteful, since it is certainly cheaper to give a subsidy to a person who can himself earn part of his maintenance than to admit him into the workhouse. But from considerations of public policy, it is necessary to disregard what might be the proper treatment for this or that individual case. Not only for the entire working population, but also, in the long run, for the rate-payers, nothing is more dangerous than to make up insufficient wages from public funds. Only by a rigid adherence to principles would it be possible to lessen the dangers which the legal provision of public relief brought with it. From these principles the province in which charity can act effectually is at once apparent.

¹ Minute of the Poor Law Board, printed in the Appendix to the 22nd Annual Report, p. 9.

Private charity can in the first place most easily deal with those who are not entirely helpless, but yet stand on the border line of destitution. It can prevent them from coming on the rates. Private charity can also deal with those destitute persons who have been brought to poverty by no fault of their own, and deserve special consideration ; but for these latter cases there must be co-operation with the bodies which administer public relief. In all circumstances, it is necessary with regard to persons who receive public relief to avoid giving money, or such form of assistance as is already provided by the guardians. On the other hand, it may be useful to buy or to redeem clothes or tools for such persons, or to pay their rent. If private charity is to interpose in a judicious fashion, it must itself be organized. Charitable institutions must be brought into relation with each other. In every district a general register should be kept of the names of persons who have already received relief from public institutions or private charity.

So much for this circular, in which the boundary between public relief and private charity is defined in a way which deserves consideration outside England. For the practical carrying into effect of the circular, Mr. Goschen issued a further instruction. The inspectors were directed to afford every help in order to introduce in their districts a cordial understanding between the guardians and the private charitable institutions, so as to bring about a systematic plan of relief. It was pointed out that the paid relieving officers were specially suited to act as intermediaries between the guardians and the charities. The relieving officers could indicate to the institutions the persons who deserved special consideration, or might yet be saved from pauperism, and the charities could, on the other hand, inform the relieving officers of those requiring public relief. Mr. Goschen issued this circular to all the great charitable institutions and boards of guardians, with a request that their views and proposals might be communicated to the Central Board.

The suggestion fell on fruitful ground. The local bodies were almost unanimous ; the charitable institutions for the most part assenting.¹ Public opinion had occupied itself with the subject for some time. In 1863 the Rev. W. G. Blackie, at the Social Science Congress in Edinburgh, in a paper on "The Collisions of Benevolence and Social Law,"² had strenuously contended that in many places charity was doing too much, and often worked in a way which did more harm than good. He therefore insisted on the necessity that "the men with warm hearts" should unite with the "representatives of social laws." In 1868 Dr. Stallard, at the Social Science Congress at Birmingham,³ also insisted on the necessity of regulating private charity, which expended far more than public bodies on the poor. Such regulation was certainly necessary, for the classified directory of London charities for 1868 gave 1,059 charitable societies, with a yearly income of £4,114,845, the real income being estimated at a

¹ See 22nd Report of Poor Law Board, page xxxii., and Appendix, p. 13.

² Transactions, 1883, pp. 707-712.

³ Transactions, 1868, pp. 593-602.

still higher figure, and reaching no less than £7,000,000 a year.¹ The Social Science Congress at Bristol, in 1869, passed a resolution to the effect that a committee of charitable societies should work with the board of guardians, and that thus the system of making house to house inquiries should play an important part in the granting of relief.²

One result of Mr. Goschen's circular was the formation of the London Charity Organization Society, for which public opinion was now prepared. Men of note placed themselves at the head of the movement, which had for its object the establishment of a connecting link between the public and the charities on the one side, and the poor law administrators on the other. The society, whose president for several years was the late Duke of Albany, began its successful and useful career in 1870. At the present time it has branches in eighteen of the larger towns of England, and in two towns in Scotland. The Charity Organization Society has become one of the most important elements in the English relief system.

The object of the society is to be a nucleus for private charity, and for all charitable efforts. It is to be the centre for all individual charitable institutions. It aims at directing charity into proper channels, and thus supplementing public relief, with the administrators of which it is in constant connection. In contradistinction to the poor law, which only has to relieve actual distress, the society regards the prevention and the cure of poverty as being within the province of charity. Cases which appear incurable, and which cannot be permanently helped by temporary relief, must be left to the poor law. The connection with the boards of guardians is carried out by district committees, some members of which often take part in the meetings of boards of guardians in order, on the one hand, to report to the committee as to the cases suitable for charitable institutions, and, on the other hand, to inform the guardians as to any cases in which it has appeared that relief is necessary, but not from private charity. By a searching investigation through special district-visitors of all the cases brought to its knowledge, the committee endeavours to obtain complete information as to the character and circumstances of each individual applicant for help. As to the organization and principles of administration in particular cases, we shall speak in detail in discussing the poor law system of the present time. Here we only aim

¹ See the speech of Mr. Forsyth, already quoted, at the Social Science Congress at Aberdeen in 1877. In order to avoid misunderstanding we may say that under the word charities are comprised benevolent institutions of various kinds, hospitals, and other places for the relief of those in need, and, after these, educational institutions and almshouses.

² With regard to this point the importance of searching inquiries into the personal circumstances of applicants was repeatedly insisted on by the Board. At the conference of guardians summoned by Mr. Corbett in the year 1871, the necessity of an increase in the number of paid relieving officers was urged, and it was thought that no Relieving Officer ought to have more than 250 or at most 300 paupers on his list, so that he should be able to keep himself informed of the circumstances of those relieved.

at giving the general characteristics of this new portion of the English machinery of relief, which may be described as a sort of clearing-house of charities.¹

The object of the circular of Nov. 20, 1869, was not only to secure the organization of private charity, but to induce Boards of Guardians rigidly to insist upon the main principles of the English poor law, especially the workhouse test. In order to see how far this was carried out, Mr. Goschen called upon the general inspectors to make detailed reports on the subject.² These reports showed that there was a great difference among boards of guardians as regards the principles observed in the administration of relief, and that scarcely any rigidly enforced the workhouse test. In consequence of this, Mr. Goschen's successor, the Right Hon. James Stansfeld, issued a fresh circular on the 2nd Dec. 1871, in which the question of the grant of outdoor relief was specially discussed, and the principles were laid down upon which, in the opinion of the Central Board, it should be administered.³

We must here point out that, as regards the administration of outdoor relief, the Central Board had sanctioned a system for certain of the larger towns, differing from that of the rest of the country. In most districts the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order⁴ of 21 Dec., 1844, is in force, by which outdoor relief for able-bodied paupers was only permitted on account of sudden and urgent necessity, of illness, and, with certain restrictions, in the case of widows. If the guardians grant outdoor relief in cases other than those expressly mentioned (where, indeed, the expression "sudden and urgent necessity" gives a very wide scope), they are to report to the Central Board within fifteen days the reason for this departure from the regulations, and that Board may approve the relief, or may disallow it.

As regards the metropolis, and a number of the other larger towns,⁵ the Board considered it impracticable to enforce this strict rule. For these districts it issued the Outdoor Relief Regulation Order of 14 Dec., 1852, providing that the guardians, in the grant of outdoor relief to other than adult able-bodied males, should only be so far restricted as to be prohibited from giving relief except weekly, and from devoting it to certain specified objects, such as the purchase or redemption of tools and trade implements, or the establishment of the applicant in business. As

¹ See Appendix I., also *Charity Organization Papers*, published by the Society for Organizing Charitable relief and Repressing Mendicity. Longmans, London, 1883.

² The reports are published in the Appendix to the 23rd Annual Report of the Poor Law Board, pp. 32-239; that of Mr. Wodehouse being especially practical and thorough.

³ The circular is published in the first Report of the Local Government Board, Appendix, p. 63.

⁴ See Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 265.

⁵ Thus Manchester, Liverpool, Newcastle-on-Tyne, and other towns, especially in the manufacturing districts.

to able-bodied men, their relief outside the workhouse is absolutely forbidden as long as they are employed for wages or other remuneration. If relief is granted outside the workhouse to any able-bodied male person, at least half must be given in food, fuel, or other articles of absolute necessity. Men must also, if relieved out of the workhouse, perform a prescribed task under the superintendence of some person appointed by the guardians. Within thirty days a report must be sent to the Central Board as to the character of the task imposed, and the supervision that has been maintained. Exceptions to these general principles may be made in a number of cases, *e.g.*, of sudden and urgent necessity, and of assistance afforded in consequence of illness. If in particular cases the guardians depart from the regulations for some special reason, they must, within twenty-one days, furnish the Central Board with a statement of the grounds of their decision, and that Board may either give its sanction or disapprove.

The circular of 2 Dec., 1871, declared that these regulations constituted the basis for a rational system of relief, and that, through the different treatment of the great towns and of the rest of the country, sufficient regard had been shown to all the special circumstances demanding consideration. But the regulations must be strictly carried out. The circular proceeds expressly to set forth in what manner, on this basis, particular classes of applicants are to be treated, and instructs the inspectors to lay these considerations before the guardians. After the receipt of their reports as to the steps taken by the guardians, the Central Board would be able to determine whether it is necessary to make further regulations, or to amend the law in order to carry out a well-organized system of outdoor relief.¹

This circular, also, was attended with the best results.² The Poor

¹ In February, 1878, the Local Government Board issued a new circular relating to the administration of outdoor relief. See 7th Report of Local Government Board, Appendix p. 217. In this last circular stress is laid upon the favourable results which followed the issue of the circular of December, 1871, the chief practical points of which are recapitulated in order to secure the attention of those unions which had not yet adopted its recommendations. It may here be mentioned that the fashion in which the annual reports of the Central Board repeatedly commended those boards of guardians by whom a judicious treatment of outdoor relief had been adopted, acted beneficially in consequence of the great fondness of the English for being publicly praised. The Local Government Board expressly directed the inspectors with regard to those unions in which no improvements had been carried out, "to call the particular attention of the guardians to the unfavourable light which the statistics throw on their management, as compared with that of neighbouring unions" (2nd Report, p. xviii.). The carrying out of the improvements is mainly due to the admirable and laborious action of the inspectors. Of the numerous reports of inspectors as to the administration of outdoor relief in their districts, we may mention those of Mr. Longley (certainly the most brilliant), Mr. Wodehouse, Mr. Andrew Doyle, and Mr. Sendall (See Appendix to the 1st Report of the Local Government Board, p. 88; 2nd Report, p. 56; and 3rd Report, p. 66).

² The 2nd Report of the Local Government Board, p. xvii., expressly states that the main principles laid down in the circular have received a general assent.

Law Conferences,¹ in particular, exercised a beneficial influence on the administration of individual unions by placing outdoor relief foremost among the subjects of discussion at the yearly meetings, and thus throwing all possible light upon the system. From year to year the proportion of cases in which outdoor relief was granted became less, and with the decrease of outdoor relief there came (apart from the cost of maintaining pauper lunatics) a diminution² of paupers and poor rates. This fact is the more remarkable because the grant of indoor relief in individual cases is much more expensive than that of outdoor relief, and because large expenditure was incurred in connection with indoor relief by the erection of many costly new workhouses.

To this last point respecting the new methods introduced in connection with indoor relief, we need only refer briefly in this place. The tendency of the legislation of this period was, as already stated, to remove from the workhouses to special institutions three classes of paupers. For the sick, infirmaries and asylums were provided; for the pauper children, district schools; for the temporarily homeless, casual wards. The casuals were to be subjected to stricter discipline, and in their case police regulations were to be more rigidly enforced. As regards the pauper children, the main principle was to bring them up so as to secure the improvement of the future generation. The treatment of the sick was to be altered, from considerations of humanity, and also on account of the danger entailed on the community by the existing system, especially in cases of infectious

¹ See especially the speech of Professor Bryce at the South Midland Conference, 1876. The late Professor Fawcett also pronounces very strongly in favour of strict adherence to the workhouse test (see Fawcett's 'Pauperism, its Causes and Remedies,' London, 1871, and the pamphlet 'Labour and Wages,' already quoted). He maintains (p. 71) that the extent to which outdoor relief is permitted exerts more influence than any other circumstance in determining the amount of pauperism. So too the fourth Report of the Local Government Board, p. xviii., states that "the beneficial results which invariably follow steady adherence to the workhouse system are no longer a matter of conjecture, but have been proved by long and continuous experience." It is significant as showing the altered attitude of boards of guardians, that in many places where the Outdoor Prohibitory Order was not in force, its principles were voluntarily adopted. A regulation of the Manchester guardians as to the grant of outdoor relief deserves special mention, because in many respects, particularly as regards the relief of widows, it goes further than the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order. At the Poor Law Central Conference in London on Dec. 6, 1876, it was resolved that the last-named order should be made universal. The Local Government Board answered a memorial to this effect by promising that the proposal should be taken into consideration, and saying that the Central Department was fully in accord with the memorialists in the desire to place the administration of outdoor relief on a sound and proper basis throughout the country.

² The statistics of paupers will be given in Appendix II. Here we need only mention the fact that in 1871 the number of able-bodied men in receipt of indoor relief was 24,700, and that of outdoor paupers was 147,760, and that these figures had fallen in the year 1883 to 21,558 and 77,592 respectively. The number of able-bodied men relieved outside the workhouse for whom the workhouse test had been specially devised had thus in twelve years diminished by nearly one half. The percentage of the entire number relieved to this population fell from 4·6 in 1871 to 3·0 in 1883.

diseases. By removing these from the workhouses, it would be possible to introduce better discipline and administration among the remaining inmates.

In order to carry out these measures, it appeared desirable to constitute larger districts over which might be distributed the cost of providing these special institutions. In the first instance, the Act of 1867 authorized the formation of such districts for the metropolis; and that of 1879 provided for the combination of extra-metropolitan unions for particular branches of the poor law. This, however, was not limited to the separation of the three clauses above named, but generally authorized the combination of unions so as to make a workhouse available for any particular class of paupers.

This exclusive appropriation of a workhouse to a particular class was thought especially desirable in the case of the able-bodied, in order to secure more suitable and profitable occupation for them. The combination of several unions for this last object was in the first instance carried out in the metropolis, where in particular the workhouse of the Poplar Union is exclusively used for able-bodied men. As the Central Board has, in its Annual Reports, repeatedly advocated the provision of a special workhouse for the able-bodied, it may be anticipated that the practice of combining unions for this purpose will be further extended.

With regard to the three classes of paupers above mentioned, the Central Board endeavours to secure the provision by the guardians of separate buildings, on the cell system, for casual paupers. This system is not prescribed by law; but wherever it has been introduced, especially in the metropolis, it has given such good results as to make its extension desirable. Its effect is to supplement the police regulations against mendicancy, which are in many respects ineffective.

With regard to the treatment of sick paupers, the new system has hitherto been adopted only in the metropolis and in a few other large towns. Its introduction throughout the country is hindered, in the first place, by the costliness of separate infirmaries, and further by the difficulty of providing one such establishment, for several unions, that would not be too distant from some of them to allow of the convenient conveyance of sick persons to it. The Act of 1879 has therefore empowered the guardians, with the approval of the Central Board, to subscribe to asylums for the blind, deaf, and dumb, and to any other institutions from which help in the administration of relief may be expected, in order to acquire the right of using such institutions for poor law purposes.¹ In this way, unions without special infirmaries

¹ An Act of 1851 (14 & 15 Vict. c. 105, s. 4) had already permitted the guardians, with the approval of the Central Department, to subscribe to hospitals and infirmaries devoted to the reception of the sick and disabled, or of persons suffering from chronic complaints. The Act of 1879 thus merely extended a power granted. It had, however, the further object of providing training institutions for male and female nurses, so that skilled nursing might be obtained for the sick poor. These institutions, which have been extraordinarily developed in the course of the last fifteen years, have exercised a powerful influence in the improvement of the treatment of sick paupers. At the present time special nurses have

have been authorized to make adequate provision for their sick poor apart from the workhouse.

With regard to other improvements in medical relief, the Poor Law Conferences, at which this question has been largely discussed, have done much. A suggestion from them, which was readily adopted and put forward by the Central Board, has resulted in means being taken throughout the country to obtain better medical officers. These officers are paid better than formerly, and have smaller districts. An attempt was further made to arrange that every union should, so far as its means permit, have its own dispensary. In London, under the special provisions as to this matter in the Act of 1867, the system is now universal. Each metropolitan union has its own dispensary.¹

On the whole, the treatment of the sick poor in London is now arranged in model fashion. The legislation which in 1867 gave the first impulse to improvement in this respect has achieved complete success, owing to the intelligent intervention of the Central Board. Between 1867 and 1883 there were established twenty-two infirmaries or sick asylums, four asylums for imbeciles, five hospitals for fever patients, and one hospital and several hospital-ships for small-pox cases. The number of medical attendants increased from forty-four to seventy-five, assisted by a staff of 984 trained nurses. There is indeed justification for the satisfaction expressed by the Central Board in a recently-published report,² at the extraordinary improvements effected at its instance with respect to this matter.

During this period the treatment of pauper children has also occupied the Central Board's attention in a conspicuous degree. Opinions were much divided as to the best method of bringing up such children. The district schools, which at first were regarded, if not as perfection, at any rate as a marked improvement on workhouse education, were the subject of keen attack. It was thought that the collection of a large number of poor children, often neglected in body and mind, like those in district schools, involved great danger both as regards health and morals. An endeavour was made to substitute the system of boarding children in labourers' families. This plan also met with much objection. The great difficulty was to find suitable foster-parents, and to exercise adequate supervision over the children. It was also urged as objectionable, from an economic point of view, that the children of paupers were thus placed in a better position than those of needy but independent labourers.³ In addition to the workhouse school, the district school, and the boarding-out system, a number of other schemes were started, the chief of which was to

been appointed everywhere, and the Central Board has latterly approved the appointment of such nurses only as have gone through a special course of nursing and have obtained the prescribed certificate.

¹ Particular success in carrying out the dispensary system in London is due to Dr. Bridges, who was specially entrusted with this duty by the Central Board.

² 13th Annual Report, p. xxxi.

³ This is the special contention of Professor Fawcett, who was a strenuous opponent of the boarding-out system. Fawcett, 'Pauperism,' p. 80.

promote the emigration of pauper children, and to bring them up abroad especially in Canada; and this for a time found favour. But here, too, difficulties were found to exist, not only as regards cost, but also as regards the necessary supervision of the children in a distant country.

With these differences of opinion as to which method was most suitable and most practicable,¹ the Central Board adopted what in the circumstances was the best course, by favouring no particular one, while giving each a fair trial, and at the same time, by successive reports as to the results of the different systems, providing the public with the material for forming a judgment as to their relative advantages. The inspectors reported annually as to the experiences of their districts in this respect.² In 1869 Mr. Henley was sent to Scotland, in order to report on the working of the boarding-out system in operation there.³ In 1874-5 Mr. Doyle was sent to Canada, in order to obtain information as to the condition of the pauper children sent there under the care of Miss Macpherson and Miss Rye.⁴

The Central Board only interposed with regulations, in order to remedy particular defects which the system brought to light. On the 25th of November, 1870, a boarding-out order⁵ was issued, in which were laid down definite rules as to the bringing-up and supervision of the children. On the 3rd of December, 1873, the Board addressed to the Metropolitan Boards of Guardians a circular recommending that every child, before being sent to a district school, should be examined by the medical officer, to ascertain whether he is free from infectious disease, and "in such a state of health as will permit of his taking part at once in the ordinary discipline and occupations of the school."

In this way the Central Board took the surest means of arriving at definite conclusions and effecting real improvements in the education of pauper children.⁶

¹ As to the different views, see the speech of Mr. Tufnell at the Social Science Congress of 1878. 'Transactions,' p. 638.

² A specially valuable report by Mrs. Nassau Senior on the "Education of girls in pauper schools," is printed in the 3rd Annual Report of the Local Government Board, Appendix, pp. 311-395. Something like a rejoinder to it is contained in the report, in the following year, of Mr. Tufnell, contradicting Mrs. Senior in particular points, and strenuously advocating the erection of large district schools. Beside those of Mr. Tufnell and Mrs. Senior, detailed reports were made by Messrs. Doyle, Murray Browne, Bowyer, and Mozley. Like the opinion of the public, the views of these inspectors were much divided as to the advantages of the different systems.

³ The report is in the 22nd Annual Report of the Poor Law Board, Appendix, p. 71.

⁴ The Report is referred to in the 4th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. xxxii., and is among the Parliamentary Papers of 1875.

⁵ See Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 553. This order is extended by the general order, "as to outdoor relief within unions," of 10 Sept. 1877. Glen, p. 733.

⁶ It is to Mr. Goschen that belongs the credit of having first adopted this line of policy. He pronounced the main task of the Central Board to be the supply of a basis for impartial judgment in detailed reports by experts. See the passage on this subject in the 22nd Report of the Poor Law Board, p. LII.

Indeed one hesitates whether to praise most the activity of the Board in energetically pursuing the object which it had set itself to attain, or its painstaking and comprehensive efforts to form an impartial judgment upon doubtful points. In concluding this historical sketch, we may assert one thing, namely, that the present excellent system owes as much to the action of the Central Board as to the legislation which, operating gradually, and effecting improvements bit by bit, has built up and developed the English poor law.¹

SUMMARY.

If we review the alterations which the English relief system has undergone since the first great poor law statute of Elizabeth in 1601, we are met by the astonishing fact that the greater part of that statute is still in force after the lapse of nearly three centuries. And yet, during this long period, legislation on the subject has not stood still. On the contrary, the number of Acts dealing with relief is so great that a complete survey is made impossible by their very multiplicity, and in the foregoing sketch we have had to restrict ourselves to a mere abstract of the main provisions of the most important statutes.

Here, in the province of the poor law, is illustrated the general spirit of English legislation, on which we have already taken occasion more than once to remark. Legislation only advances very cautiously in the direction of novelties. Almost every reform of importance is preceded by an experimental measure, in which the innovation is in the first place gradually introduced for a limited time, or in respect only of particular places, or its adoption is left optional with the authorities. Then, after it has been tried, the next step is to apply it generally. But if once embodied in a general Act it is carried out to the end with what seems to be nothing less than obstinacy. No doubt the changed circumstances of the time and the necessity for improvements are duly regarded; but nevertheless it is the old Act which constitutes the foundation, and while a new spirit is introduced in the provisions added, the form of the existing law is left as far as possible unaltered.

The Act of Elizabeth had provided for the appointment in every parish of overseers, who by levying a special rate were to supply the

¹ The Board has not restricted itself to the experiences of England, but has also, partly through the Foreign Office, partly by inspectors sent abroad, collected accurate information as to the systems in vogue in foreign countries. Reports on 'Poor Laws in Foreign Countries,' were edited by Mr. Doyle, and laid before Parliament in 1875 (Parl. Papers C. 1255 of 1875). Mr. Sendall (afterwards Assistant-Secretary of the Local Government Board) reported on the relief system of Holland, and Mr. Henley on that of the chief towns of North America (Parl. Papers C. 1868 of 1877). We may direct special attention to these reports as in several respects amplifying the well-known German compilation by Emminghaus.

means of supporting pauper children, of setting to work persons out of employ, and of maintaining the infirm. This provision remains unaltered at the present time. These three classes of persons with whom the relief system has to deal are still treated separately; by the provision of simple relief for the infirm, of employment for the able-bodied, and of maintenance and education for pauper children. The necessary funds are still raised by a special poor rate. The levying of this rate is still in the hands of the overseers of the individual parishes. And yet how manifold are the changes which the English relief system has experienced in the long period since 1601, and how different has been the spirit in which in the course of centuries it has been administered.

In the separate treatment, under the Act of Elizabeth, of the three classes of paupers, it is clear that there were three different points of view. Considerations of humanity demanded the relief of the infirm; the interests of public order made it necessary to deal with the needs of the able-bodied; and those of education with the pauper children. Before the passing of the Act of Elizabeth, the enactments as to poor relief were almost entirely of the nature of police regulations. In the eighteenth century, benevolent motives had a paramount influence in the relief system. In the reaction which followed in the year 1834, it was hoped that the introduction of the workhouse principle would not only remove the drawbacks which, while mere benevolence was supreme, had crept into the administration of relief, but would also provide a means for satisfying the respective interests of humanity, of public order, and of education. The subsequent development of the system has resulted in a higher degree of attention being paid to the suitable education of pauper children, and in the effort again to remove from the workhouses the particular class of paupers, namely, the sick, in whose treatment it is fitting that considerations of humanity should have the greatest weight.

The relief system as a whole having thus been formerly swayed in turn by repressive and by humanitarian motives, it is now the practice mainly to have regard to the question of the particular treatment most suitable to each particular class of paupers. The children are educated so as to fit them to become useful members of the community; the sick are placed in hospital so as to cure them as effectually and as expeditiously as possible, or, if they are incurable, to make their existence tolerable; while, as regards other classes of the poor, the main object is to repress pauperism. If, instead of supporting themselves, they claim relief from the public, this relief, according to modern ideas, must not be refused, but it is to be given in such a form as to prevent the community from being exposed to the danger of reliance on public assistance being substituted for a sense of the necessity of labour and the importance of saving. Here the workhouse comes in. The classification of paupers, as established by the Act of Elizabeth, is at the present day the basis for the different methods of dealing with them. Centuries of experience

have served to show the wisdom of this classification, and to carry out its principles by applying a different treatment to each class.

Let us turn from the question of relief to that of rating. The Act of Elizabeth had imposed the burden of the poor rate upon the individual parish, on which, under the previous system of Church charity, the charge had practically fallen. The new system was thus merely an amendment of the old one, but an amendment by which the character of the charge was completely altered. When the State allowed the parish to levy a special rate for the provision of relief, it transformed what had previously been a duty, undertaken from motives of humanity by the Church, into a public business to be conducted in the interests of the community. The work was to be done by the parish because it was the parish that had previously administered relief.

No real ground for this connection between the pauper and the particular parish is visible in the Act of Elizabeth. It was an Act of Charles II. in 1662 that first established an intimate connection between the poor and the parochial area by the association of the duty of relief with the possession of a settlement. This duty appears in the Act as a result of the legal relation in which the pauper stands towards the district of his birth. The connection between relief and settlement was attended with so many drawbacks as regards the community at large, and especially the working classes, that the legislature repeatedly took action in the matter of the Law of Settlement. But the general tendency of these amendments in the law was diametrically opposite to what was required, and to what might have been anticipated from the changed economic conditions and from legislation on other subjects. While in general a constant effort was being made to increase individual freedom, the presumed amendments of the Law of Settlement tended to bind down the individual more stringently to the place where he had obtained a settlement. The acquisition of a new settlement was made harder by each successive Act. The grounds upon which a settlement could be obtained, as fixed by the Acts of 1662 and 1691, in what appeared a comprehensive fashion, were practically diminished, until at last only birth and apprenticeship were in fact left to the working classes as constituting a claim to settlement. The close connection which had originally subsisted between the place of relief and the person to be relieved (since relief depended on settlement) had thus lost its real justification. To make it depend on the chance of a person having been born in this place or in that, whether a particular district should be bound for ever to provide for one who perhaps had given up, or had never had, any practical connection with his birthplace, must have appeared all the more unfair and uneconomical in consequence of the general tendency towards a free circulation of labour.

But it was not until the passing of the Act of 1846 that a reaction took place. This Act severed the connection between relief and settlement, as it had previously existed, by providing that a prolonged residence in one place involved the legal right of being relieved by a

district other than that of the person's birthplace without the liability to be removed. The development of this principle after the passing of the Act of 1846 gave poor law relief more and more the character of an abstract duty, the fulfilment of which had been entrusted, merely for the sake of convenience, to local districts with defined boundaries.

After this acceptance of the view of relief as a duty delegated by the State, it became more easy to settle the local area on which the burthen was to fall. It was transferred from parishes to larger districts, so that the poor rate might be equalized, and means for its better administration might be secured. It was in 1865 that this transfer took place. Succeeding legislation established still larger areas (combinations of unions, or the metropolis itself) for special branches of the relief system. This resort to larger districts was designed to secure the erection of better institutions for the education of pauper children and the treatment of the sick poor. Thus the principle was established that the question of the particular local districts to which the administration of relief and the burthen of poor rates should be delegated by the State should be solely determined by considerations of what was most suitable to the special object, what would secure the best administration, and how the burthen of the charge might best be equalized.

Poor law relief had now become a matter not merely of local, but of imperial concern. The first step was taken in 1601 by the levying of a poor rate to provide means for the relief which was recognized as a public duty. The second step was under the Act of 1834, which established a Central Board for the control of local administration. Subsequent legislation has strengthened the connection of the local bodies with the Central Board by the appointment of independent government officials, such as inspectors and auditors, and has at the same time steadily enlarged the scope of the board's action. And so at last the question to what local bodies the administration and the burthen of relief should be committed was settled in accordance with the view of the State.

The development of the relief system as a matter of State concern was thus gradually effected, and culminated in the establishment of a supervising Central Board with extensive powers. The recognition of a duty by the State affects the levying of the poor rate, and constant efforts are made to secure its equitable apportionment. Finally, it is from the point of view of the State that the poor law administration is controlled, so that due regard is paid to the respective questions of humanity, of order, and of education. England may thus be regarded as the classical land of State relief.

In the road which the English legislature has pursued to obtain this result, three stages may be distinguished. In the first place, the only object was the repression of mendicancy. After it became plainly necessary that positive means should also be adopted for providing for the poor, the Act of Elizabeth prescribed relief as a statutory duty, and at the same time authorized the levying of a special rate to supply

the necessary means. Finally, the last period was marked by the tendency of the legislature to give more prominent expression to the imperial character of the system, by regulating the form in which relief should be afforded. Precautions were taken to bring the method of relief into accordance with the general interests of the community.

By the strict formulation of the principles upon which public relief is to be granted, it becomes possible to define the limits within which private benevolence may usefully act as complementary to it. On this basis there has recently been some co-operation of public and private action in the field of relief, while at the same time private charity has been organized. England is not only the classic ground of State relief, but is also in advance of all other countries in the judicious regulation of private charity.

PART II.

THE EXISTING RELIEF SYSTEM.

INTRODUCTION.

It has often been described as characteristic of the English poor law that it recognizes a right to relief. This statement requires qualification.

In a strictly legal sense, no right to relief is recognized. If such a right existed, it would be enforceable by law, and proceedings would lie for damages for the improper refusal of relief. But this is not the case. We should rather say that the obligation of relieving the poor is imposed by the State on certain local bodies, and that this obligation has the character of a public duty. It may be permissible to speak of a right to relief as consequent on the obligation thus imposed, though it is necessary to add that the word "right" is not used in a strictly legal sense.¹ But an accurate statement of the case is that there is an obligation to relieve, but that a right to receive relief is nowhere recognized by the English poor law, which merely regulates its grant.

The mode of formulating this proposition, however, is less important than its real significance. Even if it were more or less accurate to speak of a right to relief, such right would be without any real value. The meaning of a right depends on the possibility of enforcing it. If the circumstances of the case prevent such enforcement, the assertion of the purely theoretical proposition that a right exists is of no great importance. Now this would seem to be so in the case of a "right to relief." A really destitute person is not

¹ Mr. E. Lee Hamilton quotes the expression that "no one has a right to public relief, but the bestowal of such relief is a duty incumbent on the State." See the 'Report on Poor Laws in Foreign Countries' (already cited), p. 137. See, too pp. 5 *et seq.* of the same report, where the same view is taken as in the text. "It is not quite accurate to speak of the English system as giving a right to relief. . . . The English law imposes upon certain authorities the duty of relieving destitution, and will under certain circumstances punish the neglect of that duty. But the applicant for relief can under no circumstances claim it as a 'right,' cannot enforce it by any process of law, or recover for the withholding of it as he could if a legal 'right' existed. It may not perhaps be easy to distinguish the effect of imposing an obligation to relieve from the result of giving a legal 'right' to relief."

in a position to avail himself of this right, because he cannot afford the time or provide the costs that would be involved in its enforcement. A man without any means is unable, if he is refused relief, to wait for the decision of a court of law. Moreover, having regard to the limited extent to which a pauper can avail himself of legal procedure in England, it would be absolutely impossible for him to have recourse to it. The proposition that the pauper has a right to relief is thus deprived of all practical significance, and may be classed with other abstract rights of man.

The distinctive character of a State system of relief does not depend upon a theory of this kind, but upon the mode in which practical measures are taken for securing that relief shall be given, and upon the extent to which it is provided by law. These are the two points in which different countries differ most from each other ; and they form the best basis for a classification of relief systems. The difference between compulsory and voluntary charity, and the popular distinction between countries in which a special poor rate is levied, and those in which the funds for relief are otherwise provided, do not touch the root of the matter. In France, the classic land of voluntary relief, particular branches of the system, namely the care of orphans and lunatics, are dealt with under compulsory enactment ; the difference between France and countries with an obligatory system consists only in the fact that having regard to the rich revenues arising from charitable endowments which have been appropriated to the relief of the poor, and also having regard to the great development of private charity, the obligatory system has in France been restricted to a small class of the destitute.

But this difference cannot serve as the sole basis for the classification of systems, since there is no uniformity in this matter among countries where relief is compulsory. For instance, the Scotch system, which is the same as the English in most essential points, differs from it in that very particular which has been of most importance as regards the administration of the English system ; it embraces no regulation for the relief of the able-bodied. On the other hand, according to English law, the Elberfeld system, under which relief is afforded to persons who are not entirely without means, in order to save them from becoming wholly pauperized, would be inadmissible and illegal.

Next to the question of the scope of relief, the most important point, in comparing different systems, is to see what are the securities for its being duly given. This depends on two different points, first, on the machinery for relief ; secondly, on the means adopted for raising the necessary funds.

The first question is what security for the carrying out of the relief system is afforded by the agents through whom it is administered. It is necessary to enquire whether the officials are paid or unpaid ; if they are paid, whether they are appointed by the State or by local bodies ; whether there is more than one agency to which the destitute can apply ; finally, whether there is a Central Department which

supervises the local administration of relief, and, if so, what are its powers and how are they exercised. On the character of this organization depends the question whether the duty of relief is effectually carried out, and unless this is the case, it is idle to speak of a practical and real right to relief.

Next in importance to an effective organization is the security for providing funds to meet the expenses incurred. Whether they are derived from a special poor rate, or from general taxation, or partly from voluntary contributions and partly from rates, is unimportant in forming a judgment upon a relief system. What is essential is to see whether the provision of means is assured for supplying whatever relief is necessary ; or whether the grant of relief depends on what means are available, so that the amount of relief is not regulated by any fixed principle, but by the funds which can be devoted to it.

The following are the special points embraced in this account of the English system. Chapter I. treats of the scope of the poor law, and of rights and duties in connection with relief ; Chapter II. deals with the expenditure and the mode of raising the funds ; Chapter III. with the organization of the system. The general principles of the English poor law being thus stated, Chapter IV. describes particular branches of relief, and, finally, by way of appendix, some account is given of private charity and its co-operation with the poor law.

CHAPTER I.

THE POOR LAW—RIGHTS AND DUTIES.

SECTION I.

THE LAW REGULATING RELIEF.

The Act of Elizabeth specified three classes of persons whom it was a public duty to relieve :—

- (a) Poor children ;
- (b) Infirm adult paupers, whether their inability to work arose from age, illness, or other infirmity ;
- (c) Able-bodied persons without means, who “ use no ordinary and daily trade.”¹

It is unnecessary to attach special significance to the fact that in the case of the last-named class the Act employs the expression “ having no means to maintain them ” instead of the word “ poor.” Entire destitution is, in the case of all these classes, a condition of relief. This has been explicitly stated in later Acts.

In an Act of 1848² it is expressly provided that any person in possession of money, or other means, who applies for public relief shall be punished as “ idle and disorderly,” if he fails to “ make correct and complete disclosure ” on being questioned by the guardians or their officers on this point. By two Acts³ of 1871 and 1882 this penalty is extended to all persons who, in order to obtain relief for themselves or others, make any untrue statement, or give a false name.

If the guardians discover that the person relieved by them has property, or if he subsequently acquires property, they have a claim on such property to an amount equal to the relief granted within the previous twelve months. Similarly, in case the property is discovered after the death of the pauper, they are entitled to deduct from it the costs of burial as well as that of the relief granted during twelve months before such death.⁴

So, too, the guardians may recover the costs of relief from those near relations who are liable to maintain the pauper ; namely, parents, grandparents, and children. The obligation of the relations, however, is restricted to the case of public relief given in consequence

¹ 43 Eliz. c. 2, s. 1.

² 11 & 12 Vict. c. 110, s. 10.

³ 34 & 35 Vict. c. 108, s. 7, and 45 & 46 Vict. c. 36, s. 5.

⁴ 12 & 13 Vict. c. 103, ss. 16 & 17 ; 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 23 ; and 42 & 43 Vict. c. 12. In the latter enactment special provision is made with respect to the recovery of sums due to the pauper from a Friendly or Benefit Society.

of age, illness, or infirmity; and does not apply to the receipt of relief by the able-bodied. If a person threatens to become chargeable to the rates, the guardians may obtain from the magistrates in petty sessions an order requiring the maintenance of the destitute person by the relative, or the payment of a specified sum for the purpose. If this order is not obeyed, there is a penalty of 20s. for each month during which the maintenance order is disregarded.¹ The guardians may also proceed against a husband in order to compel him to maintain his wife who has come upon the parish.²

If a person, able to maintain himself and his family by work or by other means, wilfully refuses or neglects to do so, and if he or she, or any of his or her family whom he or she is bound to maintain, thereby become chargeable to the parish, such person may be punished as idle and disorderly. Any person running away and leaving a wife or child chargeable to the parish may be punished as a rogue and vagabond.³ In the former case the penalty is imprisonment with hard labour for a period not exceeding one month, and, for a second offence, two months. In the latter case the imprisonment may be for three months. In accordance with the general provisions as to the punishment of idle and disorderly persons, and of rogues and vagabonds, the incorrigible may be imprisoned for twelve months. Those idle and disorderly persons who have been already twice convicted, and those rogues and vagabonds who have been once previously convicted, are held to be incorrigible.

If a parent has wilfully neglected to provide adequate food, clothing, medical aid or lodging, for his child under fourteen years, and if the health of such child has thereby been seriously injured or endangered, the parent is liable to six months imprisonment.⁴

If the parent has not the means of providing proper food and nourishment for children incapable of taking care of themselves, and neglects to apply for poor law relief, he may be indicted for manslaughter if the death of the child is caused by such neglect.⁵

In the case of illegitimate children, the mother has to maintain them up to the age of sixteen. She may, by an Order of Affiliation, obtain an allowance from the putative father. If the mother dies, and the child becomes chargeable to the poor rate, the guardians may enforce the claim against the putative father. The guardians may also proceed independently against him in case poor law relief is obtained for the child. On the marriage of the mother of an illegitimate child, the husband is bound to maintain it up to the age of sixteen years, or until the death of the mother.⁶

¹ 43 Eliz. c. 2, s. 6; 59 Geo. III. c. 12, s. 26; 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 78; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 36.

² 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 33. If a wife possesses separate property of her own, it is applicable to the maintenance of her husband and her children. 33 & 34 Vict. c. 93, ss. 13 & 14; 45 & 46 Vict. c. 75, s. 21.

³ 5 Geo. IV. c. 83, ss. 3 & 4.

⁴ 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 37.

⁵ *Reg. v. Mabbett* (5 Cox, C. C. 339).

⁶ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 57; 35 & 36 Vict. c. 65, s. 8.

Poor law relief given to a wife is considered as given to her husband. If relief is given to a child under sixteen, being neither blind, nor deaf and dumb, it is considered as given to the father or mother.¹ Special provision is made with regard to pensioners of Greenwich and Chelsea Hospitals. Only a prescribed proportion of their pensions—one-half or two-thirds—is chargeable for the maintenance of wife or children.²

If relief is claimed on behalf of a wife or of a child under sixteen, the application is to be treated as made for the husband himself, or for the father or mother, as the case may be.³ If the grant of outdoor relief to the latter is prohibited, relief can only be granted to the wife or child by admission, with the husband or parent, into the workhouse.⁴ But this condition does not apply to the payment of school fees. If the guardians are satisfied that the parent is unable, by reason of poverty, to pay the school fee, they are to pay such fee, not exceeding 3*d.* a week for each child of school age, and their doing so is not to create a *status pauperis* for the parent.⁵

Apart from this last case, (where the money paid is not technically "relief,") every grant of public relief involves the loss of the franchise, both for Parliament and for local elections, for the space of one year. The Act provides that a person who has received poor law relief in the twelve months before the 31st of July shall not be inserted in the list of electors for the elections of the current year which is published on that day.⁶

On the occasion of the new Franchise Bill being under discussion by Parliament, Mr. Horace Davey proposed that the receipt of medical relief should cease to be a ground of disfranchisement. The proposal was rejected on the second reading, but on the third it was accepted in a thin House (sittings of 6th and 12th May, 1885). In the House of Lords the amendment was rejected on the 19th of May, and when the Bill was remitted to the Commons the amendment was struck out. On the part of the radical party the rejection of the amendment by the Upper House was made the subject of special attacks in public meetings against the House of Lords. It certainly

¹ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, ss. 56 & 57.

² 19 Vict. c. 15, s. 8.

³ Before the passing of the Act of 1834, this point was left doubtful in districts in which a kind of workhouse system had been set up under 9 Geo. I. c. 7. See *R. v. North Shields* (1 Douglas 330; Cald. 68). In this case, which was argued in three courts, the judges of the Appeal Court were divided in opinion whether a wife whose husband was in prison, and who applied for relief for two children but not for herself or for her other child, could be compelled by the guardians to take the whole family into the workhouse. The parish officers had refused to grant relief out of the workhouse, but they were forced to grant it by the final decision, from which, however, one of the judges expressly dissented. In another similar case, the Court of Appeal had given judgment to a contrary effect (*R. v. Carlisle*, cited in *R. v. Haigh*, 2 Nol. P. L. 357).

⁴ An exception is made in the case of a wife whose husband lives apart from her, is at sea, or is in a lunatic asylum.

⁵ 39 & 40 Vict. c. 79, s. 10.

⁶ 2 Will. IV. c. 45, s. 36; 30 & 31 Vict. c. 102, s. 40; 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 14.

seems doubtful whether, in England, where educational relief does not involve the loss of the franchise, medical relief ought to be followed by a forfeiture of this kind.¹

In granting relief to any person over the age of twenty-one years, or to his wife and children, the guardians may declare that such relief is afforded as a loan, and its repayment may be required, not necessarily within the period of twelve months, but any at time when the pauper comes into possession of means.² Repayment may be enforced in a summary manner, and there are special provisions, with regard to the recovery of arrears of wages. In practice, the power of giving relief on loan is in some unions largely exercised, especially in the case of medical assistance. In this case, where there is no compulsion to enter the workhouse, it is considered that on general principles the required relief ought not to be delayed for exact investigation of the circumstances of the applicant; and the grant of relief in the form of loan has a practical effect in preventing an improper application of the poor rates.

SECTION II.

CONNECTION OF RELIEF WITH DOMICILE.

The Act of Elizabeth³ required the respective parishes to give relief, but did not precisely indicate the persons for whom each parish was responsible. The parish was bound to afford aid to all the destitute within its boundary. It was only by the Act of Charles II.⁴ in the year 1662 that this obligation was limited by making the parish only liable for the relief of those settled in it, while other destitute persons were to be sent back to their own homes.

The duty of relief in case of destitution was thus made dependent upon domicile. Thenceforth the Law of Settlement and Removal constituted an essential part of the relief system.

The disadvantages, especially as regards the working classes, resulting from this association of the poor law with the laws of settlement have been discussed in the first part of this volume, where we have mentioned the successive legislative amendments which were introduced in order to remove or to lessen these disadvantages. Here we need only briefly trace the development of which the present system has been the result.

¹ [This alteration of the law subsequently took place. See the Medical Relief Disqualification Removal Act, 1885 (48 & 49 Vict. c. 46), which removes from any person who has received poor law medical relief for himself or for any member of his family the disqualification to which he was previously subject as regards voting in certain elections. But as regards the election of guardians, the disqualification remains. Tr.]

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 59; 11 & 12 Vict. c. 110, s. 8. See also the instructional letters of 24th December, 1844, and 25th August, 1852, printed in Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 288 (note a), and p. 294 (note b); with regard to the allowance of school fees by way of loan, see the general order of Jan. 9, 1878, Glen, p. 753.

³ 43 Elizabeth c. 2, s. 1.

⁴ 14 Car. II. c. 12.

The Act of Settlement of Charles II. had prescribed as qualifications for obtaining a settlement:—(a) birth; (b) property as householder; (c) residence, service, or apprenticeship, for a period of at least forty days.

Removal from a place in which a settlement had not been acquired was permitted not only in cases of actual destitution, but also if there was a probability that the person would become chargeable to the rates. This particularly harsh enactment was repealed in 1795,¹ when it was provided that the removal of a person not having a settlement should be only allowed on his becoming actually chargeable. But in spite of this amendment, the disadvantages of the legislation with regard to settlement and relief still continued; and as the changed conditions of society led to greater use being made of the right of free migration of labour, the want of economy and the injustice of sending back destitute cases to their place of settlement became all the more manifest. Besides, the acquisition of a new settlement, which the Acts of Charles II. and William and Mary had facilitated, was made more and more difficult; mere residence and service ceased to constitute a title to settlement; and the conditions for obtaining a settlement by ownership of a residence and tenancy of land were so modified as to be practically impossible of fulfilment by a labourer. Birth and apprenticeship remained in effect the only qualifications left.

This aggravation of the difficulty of obtaining a settlement appeared particularly unreasonable, as the parish to which the settlement applied was frequently so small that the poor man might be described as *adscriptus glebæ*, bound to the clod. If we accept the principle that relief depends on settlement, it is necessary, if we are not to run counter to the whole principle of free migration of labour and to modern progress, to facilitate as much as possible the acquisition of a new settlement, and to place the right of settlement on as broad a basis as possible, in order to minimize its influence upon the free movement of labour.

English legislation has been very tardy as to these two points. It was not till 1876² that the Law of Settlement was modified to the extent of making three years uninterrupted residence a ground for obtaining a new settlement. Even now settlement is limited to the parish. It is true that this limitation has lost much of its significance since the Act of 1865³ substituted the union for the parish as respects the poor rate. The result is that in case of destitution there is no removal from parish to parish, but from union to union, and therefore the only question of consequence is, whether the pauper possesses a settlement in any parish within the union.

But before the last-mentioned alteration in the Law of Settlement was carried out, the poor law discarded the entire principle of making relief dependent on settlement.

This was the result of the Act of 1846.⁴ As this Act pro-

¹ 35 George III. c. 101.

² 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 34.

³ The Union Chargeability Act, 28 & 29 Vict. c. 79.

⁴ 9 & 10 Vict. c. 66.

hibited removal as regards numerous pauper cases, and imposed a duty of relieving such cases, irrespective of their settlement, upon the place of residence, it destroyed the chief connection which had previously existed between relief and settlement.

Consequently, as the legislation which followed the Act of 1846 extended irremovability, relief at the place of residence became the rule, and at the place of settlement the exception. The question where the pauper was settled now began to take a subordinate place in the poor law system. At present the first question is whether the particular person is liable to removal from the place in which he becomes destitute. It is only when this is answered in the affirmative that the second question arises, to what place is he to be removed. This latter point alone is affected by settlement. Irremovability extends to so many cases that the entire law of settlement no longer exercises an important influence on the relief system. In any further reforms it would have to be decided not whether the law of settlement should be amended, but whether the power of removal in case of destitution should be altogether done away with.

This question has been practically decided in the affirmative. In 1865, when irremovability was allowed¹ to be acquired by a single year's residence, the right of removal was only maintained on the ground that it would be a useful check on vagrancy.² An opinion to this effect was expressed by the Committee of 1879 upon the Laws of Settlement and Removal. The Committee recommended the retention of removal only in the case of persons landing at sea-ports, in consequence of the unfair burthen which its abolition would impose on such districts.

Though this recommendation of the Committee has not yet been carried into law,³ the entire abolition of removal and the consequent devolution of the duty of relief on the place of residence, irrespective of settlement, is regarded only as a question of time.⁴ It is a significant fact that even now in many places scarcely any use is made of the right of removal which exists, and this is especially the case in the larger towns, in which the number of persons who

¹ 28 & 29 Vict. c. 79.

² See Lumley's 'Poor Removal and Union Chargeability Act,' 2nd edition. London, 1865, p. 10.

³ In 1882 Mr. Dodson and Mr. Hibbert introduced into the House of Commons on June 26th a bill based on the recommendations of the committee of 1879. It was, however, withdrawn on August 23rd, "in consequence of the pressure of time." The want of time for dealing with measures which are not of a political and urgent character afterwards became permanent with the Gladstone ministry.

⁴ I have been assured that this is the case by various persons who take a prominent part in the English poor law administration, especially by Messrs. Glen, Hedley and Sendall. The last named thought that the only difficulty lay in the necessity for special provisions with regard to Irishmen becoming destitute in England. To my question whether the change referred to in the text would not impose a heavy burden upon the great towns, I was answered that it was considered unnecessary to have regard to this probable burden, because the great towns derived advantages from the labour of the working classes, and that it was these classes who mainly contributed to the ranks of pauperism.

might, according to the Law of Settlement, be removed, in case of destitution, is above the average.¹

The witnesses examined before the Select Committee in 1879 were almost unanimous against the right of removal. It was generally recognized that the principle involved an attack upon freedom of choice of residence, and especially an improper restriction on the working classes in the application of their labour. Stress was also laid on the unprofitable expenditure involved in ascertaining the place of settlement, in carrying out the legal formalities, and finally in removing the pauper.² With regard to the frequently expressed apprehension, that if the power of removal were abolished, each union would endeavour to get rid of its paupers by treating them harshly, or otherwise inducing them to settle in another union, it was urged that in Ireland, where the law now makes relief dependent on residence, abuses of this kind are not ordinarily found to exist. Besides, the active control of the Central Board would be sufficient to prevent the too rigorous treatment of paupers. The improper transfer of poor persons is already made penal by an Act which in case of need might be strengthened.³ Moreover, it was considered that special importance no longer attached to the consideration that particular districts would be overburdened through the abolition of removal, since the poor rate had been spread over greater areas. This danger need only be regarded in the case of the sea-ports, especially those where large numbers of the Irish poor landed.

It is, in fact, only the special considerations in regard to Ireland that present any difficulties in the way of the entire abolition of removal. As early as the year 1854, when the then President of the Poor Law Board, Mr. Baines, introduced his Bill for the entire repeal of removal, it was only the hesitation as to abolishing the right of removal in the case of the Irish, that caused the withdrawal of the Bill. So far as England alone was concerned, public opinion was inclined towards Mr. Baines's proposal. Even in 1848 the result of inquiries addressed to the local authorities by the then President of the Poor Law

¹ See the Parliamentary debate of July 2nd, 1878, already referred to on p. 85, and also a speech of Mr. Wright at the Yorkshire Poor Law Conference of 1882 ('Report for 1882,' p. 357). See also G. C. T. Bartley's 'Handbook for Guardians of the Poor,' London, 1876, in which (p. 220) it is stated that having regard to the costs involved in enquiries as to the settlement of a pauper and the measures required for the removal, it is frequently best for the guardians of the place of residence voluntarily to relieve a person whose removal is warranted by the law.

² The costs of obtaining orders of removal and for removing the paupers to their place of settlement amounted in the year 1881 to £9,263. Mr. Wright, from whose address already quoted we take these figures, reckons the further costs for ascertaining the settlement, for clerical work, and for removals carried out without an order (this course being permissible when the union in question agrees to receive the pauper), at an additional £5,000.

³ 9 & 10 Vict. c. 56, s. 6, imposes a penalty of from £2 to £5 upon any poor law officer who, with the intention of transferring the charge to another parish, induces a person by money or any other relief, by promises or by threats, to betake himself to another parish in order that he may there become chargeable to the poor rate.

Board, Mr. Buller, was to show that the majority were in favour of the repeal of the Law of Settlement. In 1850, a majority of the inspectors expressed a similar opinion on the question being referred to them by Mr. Baines. So too the numerous Parliamentary Committees on the question of Settlement and Removal, of 1854-7, 1858-9, 1860, and 1864, were unanimous in condemning removal in case of destitution.

Public opinion has thus for a long time been ripe for the entire repeal of the right of removal, which is likely to take place shortly. The same practice would thus be established in England which already obtains in Ireland, where it answers satisfactorily. The character of poor law relief as a general duty of the State, independent of the personal connection of the applicant with a particular place would thus be fully asserted.

The present position is that the cost of relieving a destitute person falls in the first instance on the place of residence or the union to which such place belongs; but that, if none of the legal exceptions applies, the removal of a person who has not acquired a new settlement may be effected by a magistrate's order.¹

In this connection the following questions arise :—

(1) When is it permissible to remove a person who has become chargeable to the poor rate?

(2) To what place is such person to be removed? How is his settlement to be decided?

(3) How is the removal to be effected? How can use be made of the right of removal?²

SECTION III.

LAWS OF SETTLEMENT AND REMOVAL.

I. A poor person is to be relieved at the place where he became destitute, and at the cost of the union to which the parish belongs, as long as his destitution lasts :—

¹ See also pp. 121-122.

² The Laws of Settlement and of Removal used to go together. Every pauper was liable to removal if he possessed no settlement in the place where he became destitute. In time, however, the Legislature made one exception after another to this principle, so that now the irremovability of the non-settled poor is the rule, and removability the exception; and accordingly it seems proper even in theory no longer to set forth the Laws of Settlement and regard the cases of irremovability as exceptions, but, as in the text, to start with the cases in which relief follows residence, and then, where this is not so, to discuss the Laws of Settlement. On the whole matter see Stephen's 'New Commentaries on the Laws of England,' 8th ed., London, 1880, vol. iii., pp. 52-64; Burns's 'Justice of the Peace,' 30th ed. London, 1869, vol. iv., pp. 316-838; and Archibald's 'Justice of the Peace,' 13th ed., London, 1878, vol. iii., pp. 388-749; also on the special subject, Symond's 'Handbook on the Laws of Settlement and Removal,' London, 1882; and Lumley's 'Poor Removal and Union Chargeability Act,' 2nd ed. 1865. To these works we must refer for an account of the numerous contested questions which have arisen in connection with this matter. We here entirely abstain from entering upon the many judicial decisions which have been pronounced on the question of settlement and removal.

(a) If legally settled in any parish within such union.¹ (As to the acquisition of a settlement, see II.)

(b) If he is a foreigner and without a settlement in England. An order of removal is only granted on proof that the pauper was born in Scotland or Ireland, or has obtained a settlement in some other part of England. The acquisition of a settlement is independent of naturalization; foreigners may obtain it as well as Englishmen.²

(c) If before the application for a warrant of removal he has resided without break during a complete year within the limits of the particular union.³ What is to be regarded as a break is specially discussed in numerous legal decisions. Their effect is that a short absence is not to be considered a break if it is clear from the facts (*e.g.*, leaving part of the family behind, or retaining the house) that there is an intention to return. Admission to a lunatic asylum, or imprisonment in consequence of civil or criminal process, is not a break; but, on the other hand, time which has been spent in prison, in a lunatic asylum, or in hospital, or during which public relief has been received from any source, or the period of service as a soldier or a sailor, is not to be reckoned as part of the year above specified.⁴

(d) If the person at the time of destitution is living on his own freehold, copyhold, or leasehold property. This rests on the common law principle, that no man is to be removed from his own land. If such property has been obtained otherwise than by purchase ("by descent, devise, marriage, or gift"), or if the purchase-money has exceeded £30, the owner, if he has at any time resided for forty days in the parish in which the property is situate, cannot in case of destitution be sent elsewhere so long as he dwells within a distance of ten miles from his property.⁵

(e) If the destitution is only due to sickness or accident, unless the justices expressly declare that they are satisfied that the sickness or accident will produce permanent disability.⁶

(f) If the destitute person is a child under sixteen years of age,

¹ In contradistinction to the settled poor, those who have no settlement are designated the casual poor (33 Geo. III. c. 35, s. 3). The expression casual poor or casual paupers, is, however, also used for a special class, namely the "destitute wayfarer or wanderer applying for or receiving relief" (34 & 35 Vict. c. 108, s. 3).

² See Stephen, p. 60. If the foreigner has not thus obtained a settlement, the obligation to relieve him, so long as he is not sent back to his own country, rests with the place in which he lives.

³ 28 & 29 Vict. c. 79, s. 8. The period of residence was originally five years (9 & 10 Vict. c. 66, and 11 & 12 Vict. c. 111) but was reduced by 24 & 25 Vict. c. 55 to three years, and since 1865 has been one year.

⁴ See Stephen, p. 61, note (a), and 12 & 13 Vict. c. 163, s. 4.

⁵ 9 Geo. I. c. 7, s. 5, and 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 68. Before the Act of 1834 an absolute settlement was acquired by ownership of land. But as it was afterwards provided that such settlement should only be valid so long as the owner lived on his property or within ten miles thereof, it appears proper that this entirely exceptional basis of settlement should be mentioned here, and not among the general grounds of settlement specified below, under II. Stephen calls this "settlement of a temporary kind."

⁶ 9 & 10 Vict. c. 66, s. 4.

whether legitimate or illegitimate, and dwells with parents, step-parents, or the reputed father, in any case where such last-named relations are not liable to removal.¹

(g) If the destitute person is an orphan under sixteen years of age who resided with the surviving parent up to the time of the death of such parent, provided that such parent had acquired exemption from removal.²

(h) If the destitute person is a widow who was living with her husband at the time of his death. In this case exemption from removal is limited to the period of one year,³ and is also conditional on the widow remaining single during that period. If she continues to live in the place for a complete year after the death of her husband, she acquires irremovability of her own right [compare (c) above.]

(i) If the destitute person is a wife deserted by her husband, she is treated as a widow, and is, after such desertion, exempt from removal after a year's residence.⁴

For the rest, a wife, like children under the age of sixteen, is liable to removal in case the husband or father is removed. The removal of the wife alone to her place of settlement is not permissible.

II. If a person becomes destitute in a place which, according to the rules set forth in I., is not liable to relieve him, such place has only to afford relief provisionally, and may effect the removal of the pauper to his place of settlement. There are seven grounds on which a claim to settlement may be based :—

(a) Birth.—Every person has *primâ facie* a settlement in the place where he was born. This settlement, however, only lasts until he has obtained another of his own right. The settlement based *primâ facie* on birth is superseded by—

(b) Settlement by parentage, in case the parents have a settlement in some place other than that in which the child was born, or acquire such settlement while the child is under their control. As a matter of fact, settlement by parentage in the case of legitimate children only comes in question so far as the settlement of the parents is non-existent, or is not ascertained. Children, as long as they are under parental control, have the settlement of their father, or, if he is dead, that of their mother. When out of such control, they preserve the settlement by parentage until they obtain a new one of their own right. A child on reaching its majority of twenty-one years is its own master; this is also the case on marriage, on setting up a separate household, or on the assumption of a position which excludes parental control, *e.g.*, entry into the army or navy. Illegitimate children, until the Act of 1834, could not obtain a settlement by parentage; but this rule produced serious

¹ 9 & 10 Vict. c. 66, s. 3.

² 24 & 25 Vict. c. 55, s. 2.

³ 9 & 10 Vict. c. 66, s. 2.

⁴ 24 & 25 Vict. c. 55, s. 3, and 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113, s. 17.

abuses, since each parish systematically expelled pregnant single women in order that their illegitimate offspring might not become a burden upon the place of birth. The Act of 1834 therefore provided that the illegitimate child should follow the settlement of its mother until it attained the age of sixteen years, or acquired a settlement of its own right.

(c) Settlement by marriage.—The wife has the settlement of her husband, and continues to have it after his death. If the husband has no settlement, or it is unknown, she preserves her previous settlement, viz., that by birth or parentage. So long as the marriage lasts, the wife cannot obtain a settlement of her own right.

The three grounds above-mentioned are described as derivative settlements.¹

On the other hand, there are the following grounds on which an original settlement may be obtained.

(d) By apprenticeship.—A settlement is obtained by indenture or other deed if the apprentice, in pursuance of the deed, resides forty days in a particular place. The contract is, in the case of pauper apprentices, executed by the guardians. They are not allowed to apprentice a child before its ninth year, while in other cases an indenture may be entered into when the child is seven years old. It is essential that the indenture should provide for learning a trade, and not for a mere hiring out of labour. The apprenticeship of a boy to the sea, or to fishing, is not to constitute a settlement.²

(e) By renting a tenement.—The tenement must be taken *bonâ fide* for at least one year at a rent of not less than £10 annually. The tenant must actually have taken possession of the tenement in accordance with the lease, and have paid the rent of £10 for the space of one year; he must also have been assessed to the poor rate during the same period, and must have paid the rate. Finally, he must have resided at least fourteen days in the particular parish.³

(f) By being charged to and paying the public taxes and levies of the parish. This ground is not substantially different from the previous one of renting a tenement; here also it is made a condition that a tenement is *bonâ fide* rented for at least one year for not less than £10, and actually occupied, that it is assessed at the annual value of not less than £10, and that the rates have been

¹ A special provision is contained in 39 & 40 Vict. c. 51, s. 35, by which any child under the age of sixteen years, whether legitimate or illegitimate, so long as it has not obtained a settlement for itself, is to retain that of its parent. But if the settlement derived from the parent cannot be shown without enquiry into the derivative settlement of the parent, the child is deemed to be settled in the parish in which it was born. This provision, intended to remove ambiguities, and settle disputed points, has itself given rise to much litigation in consequence of its want of clearness. See Stephen, p. 35, note (h).

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 71, s. 67; 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 12.

³ 6 Geo. IV. c. 57, s. 2; 1 Will. IV. c. 18, s. 1; 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 77, s. 66. This ground of claim, originated by 13 & 14 Car. II., c. 12, s. 1, has in the course of time been much altered and limited by legislation and judicial decisions.

paid for one year.¹ The main difference between the two grounds is that in the latter case it is of no consequence whether the tenant sub-lets part of the tenement, while in the former case (*e*) sub-letting would do away with the ground of settlement.²

(*g*) Residence during three years.—This ground was first introduced in 1876;³ from that time a settlement has been obtainable by a residence of three years in a parish, subject to the same conditions under which a person is made irremovable according to the existing Acts, namely those with regard to the period of residence and break of residence specified in I. (*c*).

These are at the present time the grounds upon which a settlement can be acquired. Up to 1834 there were two others, viz., by hiring and service, and by filling a parochial office; but these two grounds were repealed by the Act of 1834.

It is necessary here to mention the general principle that an existing settlement is superseded by the acquisition of a new one; till this happens, a settlement once obtained remains in force. It is therefore out of the question that a person born in England should be without a settlement, though this may be the case as regards foreigners until they acquire a settlement in a place in England. Its acquisition is, as already stated, independent of naturalization.

III. If a place wishes to avail itself of its right to remove a pauper, an order of removal must be obtained. It used to be one of the main duties of overseers to take the necessary steps for this purpose. Now the duty falls on the guardians. By the Act of 1876 the Local Government Board is authorized to give this power also to guardians of parishes having a separate poor law administration.⁴

On the application of the guardians, an order of removal is to be issued by two justices, or, in the metropolis, by a police magistrate, if it is shown (1) that the person in question is in actual receipt of relief, (2) that he is not settled in the place where he became destitute, but in some other place in England, or that his birthplace is in Scotland or Ireland, and (3) that none of the conditions exist which constitute irremovability.⁵

It should be pointed out that an order of removal is not obtainable

¹ 3 Will. and Mary, c. 11, s. 6; 35 Geo. III. c. 101, s. 4; 5 Geo. IV. c. 57; 6 Geo. IV. c. 37, s. 2; 1 & 2 Will. IV. c. 42, s. 5. With regard to this ground of claim, too, legislation has made many experiments, with the result that it has finally lost all significance as a ground of settlement apart from that of renting a tenement.

² The provision for settlement by renting a tenement expressly stipulates that "such house or building or land shall be actually occupied under such yearly hiring by the person hiring the same."

³ 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 34.

⁴ 28 & 29 Vict. c. 79, s. 2; 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 25. In pursuance of the latter enactment the Board issued an order on the 22nd Sept. 1876, relating to the parish of Stoke-upon-Trent; and similar orders have since been issued as to other parishes. See Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 701.

⁵ As to the removal of paupers to Scotland and Ireland, there are special Acts: 8 & 9 Vict. c. 117; 24 & 25 Vict. c. 76; 25 & 26 Vict. c. 113; 26 & 27 Vict. c. 89.

to determine points of law, the facts are decided by the quarter sessions without appeal.

If the order of removal is not appealed against within twenty-one days, or if it is confirmed, the union to which the order was addressed has to bear the cost of relief from the day on which it was served.¹ The costs up to that time and those of removal have to be borne by the union in which the person became destitute.²

The removal itself may take place as soon as the guardians of the union which is chargeable agree in writing to submit to the order. Otherwise it is necessary to wait for the period of twenty-one days, during which an appeal may be made, and, if there is an appeal, for its decision. The pauper removed is to be delivered at the work-house of the district chargeable.³

If the pauper is unable to travel on account of sickness or other infirmity, the justices may suspend the operation of the order. The suspended order has to be served within ten days, otherwise no charges for relief or maintenance are recoverable. The amount advanced may be recovered quarterly.⁴

Unions can also voluntarily agree that the pauper shall be relieved at his place of residence at the cost of the place to which he is chargeable. With regard to the administration of this so-called "non-resident relief," a number of provisions and restrictions have been issued by the Central Board. The Board has intimated that on account of the smallness of the supervision which can be exercised with regard to the paupers, it does not regard non-resident relief as generally desirable. There is also the danger that if non-resident relief is given, relations may feel less inclined to help the pauper in order to avoid his removal. With regard to some cases the Central Board has expressly forbidden the grant of non-resident relief, and, with regard to others, has formulated special provisions in order to insure the proper application of the money transmitted.⁵

Besides the legal procedure for removal, there is an administrative method by which it may be voluntarily arranged. Since the year 1851 the guardians or overseers of two unions or parishes are authorized to agree in writing that any contested questions arising between them with regard to settlement and removal shall be sub-

¹ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 84.

² As to the costs of transport see 33 & 34 Vict. c. 48.

³ 9 & 10 Vict. c. 66, s. 7; 14 & 15 Vict. c. 105, s. 13.

⁴ 35 Geo. III. c. 101, s. 2; 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 84; 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 26.

⁵ General Consolidated Order of 24th July, 1847, art. 77-80. Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order of Dec. 21st, 1844, art. 3. Outdoor Relief Regulation Order, Dec. 14th, 1852, art. 4 (see Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' pp. 94, 274, and 291); see also the minute of the Commissioners of Jan. 26th, 1841, on the relief of persons non-resident within their union (7th Annual Report of the Poor Law Commissioners, Appendix, p. 106). Against the argument of the Central Board with regard to the drawbacks of non-resident relief, we may set the fact that the grant of non-resident relief affords substantial assistance in mitigating the hardships associated with the Law of Settlement and Removal. See Wright at the Yorkshire Poor Law Conference, 1882 (Report, p. 357). With regard to the special provisions as to non-resident relief, see below, p. 134.

mitted for the determination of the Central Board. The decision of the Central Board is final and without appeal.¹ In pursuance of an enactment of the year 1865, the removal of a pauper is also authorized without an order, if the union against which the claim is made voluntarily consents to receive him. If, however, the pauper refuses to allow himself to be removed under this arrangement, it is necessary to obtain an order of removal.²

These provisions show the desire of the legislature to limit as much as possible the unprofitable expenditure caused by the Laws of Settlement and Removal. In this respect, too, the disadvantages of making relief depend on settlement have been recognized and minimized. A few figures may, in conclusion, be given to illustrate the present working of those laws. The number of orders of removal has fallen from year to year. In the year 1849 it amounted to 13,867, and Nicholls reckons that the number of persons affected by these orders was about 40,000. In the year 1882 there were 4,211 orders of removal affecting 6,233 persons.³ In addition to these, 2,692 paupers were removed without an order, in accordance with 28 & 29 Vict. c. 79, s. 6. The total number of persons actually removed only amounted to 5,922. It thus appears that non-resident relief is extensively granted. The costs of the legal procedure and of the transport of paupers are given as £9,283 2s. 4½d. In spite of the important amendments in the law, and although many places voluntarily abstain from exercising the right of removal, more than £9,000 annually is thus wasted.

In July 1875 special figures were given with regard to the effect of the existing Acts upon Ireland on the one side, and upon England and Scotland on the other.⁴ It appears that in the period 1870-74 1,286 paupers were sent back to Ireland from England and Wales, and 1,151 from Scotland, the yearly average being 257 and 230 respectively. On the other hand, during the first six months of 1875, 36,266 persons born in Ireland received relief in England and Wales, and 58,474 in Scotland; while, during the same period, only 358 English and 196 Scotch received public relief in Ireland.

SECTION IV.

POOR LAW DISTRICTS.

Since 1865 the district upon which the poor rate is ordinarily charged is a union of parishes. Besides the unions, there is a small number of parishes with a separate poor law administration. As regards some of them, this is based upon local Acts

¹ 14 & 15 Vict. c. 105, s. 12. According to the 8th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. lxvi., the Board decided twelve contested questions of this kind in the year 1878.

² 28 & 29 Vict. c. 79, s. 6. Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 241, where the instructional letter of the Poor Law Board of Feb. 28th, 1866, is included.

³ Parliamentary Paper, 1882, vol. lviii., p. 587.

⁴ With regard to the different legislation in the two kingdoms, see above, p. 85.

passed before 1834, which the Act of 1834 left untouched, but the repeal of which has been facilitated by subsequent legislation.¹ Moreover, certain parishes (especially in the metropolis) which, in extent, population, and rateable value, are sufficiently large for an independent administration of the poor law, have been detached from other parishes by the Central Board. Out of the 647 districts for the relief of the poor in England and Wales, twenty-five consist of single parishes, while the rest are formed by a union of several parishes.²

Notwithstanding the formation of unions, particular significance still attaches to the parish. The respective parishes have their own representatives as guardians, and the poor rate is levied within them by overseers appointed for each. In describing the existing poor law system, the parish is the starting-point.

The parish had originally an exclusively ecclesiastical significance. It was part of the Church organization. It consisted of the village or district for which a particular priest was appointed for the cure of souls, with the right to tithes and other ecclesiastical dues.³ At the time when relief was in the hands of the Church, it was the parish by which paupers were maintained, and the effect of the gradual transition of relief from an ecclesiastical function into a legal duty was that the Act of Elizabeth, dealing with the state of things then existing, made the parish still bear the burden of public relief. The churchwardens were at the same time charged with the duty of looking after the poor. In addition, overseers were appointed for the parish, who, with the churchwardens as *ex-officio* overseers, carried out the relief system, and raised the necessary funds by a rate levied within the parish. Thus by the Act of Elizabeth, the parish became part of the general machinery of local government. Subsequent legislation in giving new duties and functions to local communities has proceeded in the same direction. The poor rate

¹ In the year 1870 there were still eighteen places in England where the poor law administration was carried on, under local Acts of this kind (22nd Annual Report of the Poor Law Board, p. lxx.). The repeal of local Acts has since then been made more easy (42 & 43 Vict. c. 54); and the number of poor law administrations under local Acts has sensibly diminished (13th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. liv.). The existing number is not stated. We may disregard these districts, since the Central Board has in most cases exercised its legal power of bringing the election of guardians into accordance with the provisions of the Act of 1834, and applying to such guardians the general principles of poor law administration. The significance of local Acts as regards the poor law is thus reduced to a minimum, and it is unnecessary to have regard to them in this statement of the present relief system. The districts in which poor law relief by guardians is administered under the regulations here set forth include a population of 25,972,119, while the entire population of England and Wales, according to the census of the 4th of April, 1881, amounts to 25,974,439 (see Shaw's 'Local Government Manual,' p. 83).

² See Chalmers's 'Local Government,' p. 60, and Shaw's 'Local Government Manual,' p. 79. In the following pages we shall in speaking of "unions" apply the term to parishes under special poor law administration without particularly distinguishing them from the others.

³ Stubbs's 'Constitutional History,' vol. I, pp. 85 and 227.

has become the basis for the general district rate, and the machinery primarily established for the administration of the poor law has been utilized on behalf of the district in almost all new branches of local government.¹

The parish thus constantly invested with new civil functions has gradually lost its original connection with the ecclesiastical organization. Out of the ecclesiastical parish a civil parish² has arisen, which in its extent and in its organization is so different that the same name scarcely appears applicable to both. There are at present in England and Wales about 15,000 civil parishes, while the number of ecclesiastical parishes is estimated at not more than 13,000. Of the 15,000 civil parishes scarcely 10,000 are coterminous with the ecclesiastical parishes of the same name.³

This variation has been produced by two causes: in the first place new ecclesiastical parishes have been formed on the erection of new churches in populous districts, under numerous church building Acts, without any alteration in the areas of the existing civil parishes;⁴ on the other hand, the civil parishes have undergone alterations by which the ecclesiastical parishes have not been affected.

Here we must mention an enactment of the year 1662,⁵ which having regard to the "largeness" of particular parishes, especially in the Northern counties, authorized their division into separate townships or villages for the purpose of poor law administration. Much use was made of this provision, and such small parishes were formed that it was thought desirable in the year 1844 to prohibit further action under it.⁶ There also formerly existed a tolerably large number of so-called extra-parochial places, which for various reasons did not form part of any parish.⁷ By two Acts of 1857 and 1868 it was provided that these places (which had previously been exempt from poor rate) should be united with neighbouring parishes, or be constituted separate parishes.⁸ Finally, provision has lately been made for obviating the inconvenience arising from a parish being

¹ This holds good not only of the parish and the overseers, but in a still greater degree of the union and the guardians. The guardians are the rural sanitary authority, sometimes also the highway authority; and in country districts they appoint the school attendance committee. The execution of the Vaccination, the Bakehouse Regulation Acts, and other statutes, is also entrusted to them.

² In 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113, s. 18, is the following definition or rather description of a civil parish. "The word 'parish' shall signify a place for which a separate poor rate is or can be made, or for which a separate overseer is or can be appointed."

³ See Chalmers, pp. 35 & 39. The number of civil parishes which in 1883 sent returns to the Local Government Board was 14,928. The number of ecclesiastical parishes was not exactly stated. In the discussion as to the new Education Act their number was given as 12,628.

⁴ The number of ecclesiastical parishes is stated to have been 8,632 in the year 1371; 9,407 in 1520; 10,477 in 1851; and to be 12,628 at the present time.

⁵ 14 Car. II. c. 12, s. 21.

⁶ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 22.

⁷ For example, the Colleges of the Universities, the Inns of Court, the Royal Forests, &c.

⁸ 20 Vict. c. 19, and 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 27.

composed of several detached portions at a distance from each other. The number of these divided parishes amounted in the year 1873 to more than 1,300, and the House of Commons in that year considered it desirable to appoint a select committee to consider the question of the simplification of the boundaries of parishes. In accordance with the recommendations of this committee, the Local Government Board was empowered, by three Acts of 1876, 1879 and 1882,¹ to detach isolated parts of a parish from it, and either to add them to neighbouring parishes, or to form them into independent parishes. The latter course is made specially applicable to the case where the separate part contains a population of more than 300 inhabitants; while, if the separate part is entirely surrounded by another parish, it is amalgamated with such parish. The orders of the Local Government Board on the subject, if opposed by one-tenth of the ratepayers interested, are provisional, and require the confirmation of Parliament.

In accordance with these provisions, the areas of parishes have in many instances been altered of late years, and as such alterations have often involved much disturbance of local interests,² a good deal of work has been thrown on the Central Board.

Civil parishes differ much in the extent, both of their area and of their population.³ Parishes of less than 50 acres are side by side with those of 10,000 acres. In 6,000 parishes the population is under 300; in 788 it is actually less than 50; while, on the other hand, in many it is over 10,000. The average population of a parish is about 1,700, but in most parishes it ranges from 200 to 1,000. The Central Board has no power to unite small parishes, but may divide large parishes on the application of one-tenth of the owners and ratepayers.⁴ The Central Board may also divide large parishes into wards for the election of guardians.⁵

In the existing poor law system, the union is of much more importance than the parish. The substitution of the larger district of the union for that of the parish as the area upon which contributions for poor relief are to be levied was the result of a long process of development.

The combination of several parishes for the better administration of the poor law dates from a remote period. In the year 1723, in the enactment⁶ for the establishment of workhouses, it was provided that parishes too small to have a workhouse of their own, might unite for this purpose with neighbouring parishes. By

¹ 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61; 42 & 43 Vict. c. 54; 45 & 46 Vict. c. 58.

² See 13th Annual Report of Local Government Board, p. liii., as to the action taken in this matter. The board has considered it necessary, in order to cope with the pressure of this work, to appoint temporarily a special inspector for the purpose.

³ For details, see the report of the Select Committee on Poor Law Guardians, 1878.

⁴ 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 3. The order for the purpose must be provisional, and subject to confirmation by Parliament.

⁵ 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 12.

⁶ 9 Geo. I. c. 7, s. 4.

Gilbert's Act of the year 1782, a common administration of the poor law was so far introduced, that the establishment of a workhouse and the execution of the poor law, including the appointment of paid officers, was shared by the united parishes.

The present unions owe their existence to the Act of 1834, which embodied the principle that the formation of larger districts was the basis of the necessary reform of the relief system. It was considered that this was the only way by which the men and the means could be obtained. The relief system was thenceforth to be carried out by the Board of Guardians, or by the paid officers appointed by such board. The guardians were to be elected by their respective parishes. The Central Board fixed the number of guardians to be elected by each parish, the only limitation being that every parish must be represented by at least one guardian. Each union was to have a common workhouse; the costs of its erection and maintenance, including the payment of the necessary officers (the so-called establishment charges), being borne by the union. On the other hand, each parish had to maintain its own poor both in and out of the workhouse.

The tendency of subsequent legislation has invariably been to transfer charges from the parish to the union. The bond of community was strengthened by the introduction of uniform principles of rating in the union, and finally the Act of 1865 made the entire poor rate the common concern of the union, so that it is now the union which alone bears the burden of poor law relief.¹

With regard to the formation of unions, the Central Board has a perfectly free hand. It has already been pointed out (p. 66), in stating the general principles on which the board acted in the formation of unions, that it took account of the population, the rateable value, the area, the probable amount of the cost of relief, and finally, of the situation of existing workhouses, or of the most convenient position for the erection of new workhouses.

The circumstance that so many factors had to be taken into account necessarily produced great differences among the newly-formed unions. We have already given examples of such differences. We have set a union with 2,300 inhabitants against another of 258,226; a union of 158,792 acres against another of 6,457 acres; a union consisting of four parishes against another consisting of ninety-nine; a union with a board of five guardians against one with seventy-nine guardians. It is impossible to give averages with any degree of exactness, but we may say that the population of the majority of unions ranges from 15,000 to 60,000, and even beyond these wide limits we must remember that ten unions have more than 200,000 inhabitants, and on the other hand that four unions have less than 3,000. There are similar variations in the rateable value of the respective unions. The city of London, with £3,750,000, contrasts with Catherington (£14,400). The only point in which all unions

¹ Union Chargeability Act, 1865, 28 & 29 Vict. c. 79.

agree is that each has its own workhouse.¹ Further, the Central Board has comprehensive powers for uniting and dissolving existing unions, and forming new ones.²

After the unions we come to the consideration of still larger districts for the administration of the poor law. The principle embodied in the Act of 1834, of improving the poor law administration by forming larger districts, has been further applied. In 1844 the Legislature endeavoured to secure improvement in the treatment of pauper children by the combination of several unions into school districts, for the erection of school buildings in common for the reception of children who became chargeable to the poor rate.³ Similarly the combination of unions was authorized for the establishment of asylums for the homeless.⁴ For securing a better class of auditors, the Board was empowered to form audit districts, in which the supervision of accounts for all the unions is entrusted to the district auditor.⁵

Notable progress in this direction is visible in the special Acts for the metropolis. For many poor law purposes the whole metropolis is treated as one district. For others, several unions are combined into one district. Further, there is a partial equalization of poor law charges among the respective metropolitan unions.⁶

The good results which ensued in the metropolis from the assignment of certain branches of the poor law to larger districts led to the Central Board being entrusted by the Legislature in 1879 with the general power of combining two or more unions for any purpose connected with the poor law, if such combination appears to be for the advantage of the public or the locality.⁷ Up to the present time, however, little use seems to have been made of this power, which was designed specially for the formation of districts for the education of pauper children, and for the erection of poor law infirmaries.

These new enactments, however, correspond with the general tendency to entrust poor law administration, or at any rate the indoor relief which is carried on in institutions, to larger and

¹ There are at present 650 workhouses, and it may be generally said that they differ like the unions. In the year 1883 a return appeared as to the average number of inmates of each workhouse (Parliamentary Paper 1883, vol. lviii., p. 937), from which it appears that the workhouses in Wales have the fewest inmates, those in Lampeter and Aberayron being occupied on the average by only twelve persons. Most of the workhouses in the metropolis have a large number of inmates (St. Pancras having 2,071).

² See above, page 84, and the Acts 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61; 42 & 43 Vict. c. 54; 45 & 46 Vict. c. 58.

³ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 40.

⁴ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 41.

⁵ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 32.

⁶ 30 Vict. c. 6; 32 & 33 Vict. c. 63; 33 & 34 Vict. c. 18. See above, pp. 71 and 77. Details as to the metropolis will be given in Chap. IV., sect. 7. Here it need only be stated that in 1880 the costs borne by the Metropolitan Common Fund amounted to 42·3 per cent. of the whole poor law expenditure in the metropolis.

⁷ 42 & 43 Vict. c. 54.

more convenient areas.¹ As the parish is gradually superseded by the union, so more and more branches of indoor relief are transferred from the union to larger districts. It would seem desirable to introduce generally the principle adopted in the metropolis, by which only the establishment charges are directly borne by the larger districts, while the costs for the maintenance of the inmates are defrayed by the respective unions, and something like equalization of these costs is secured by the fact that a very moderate contribution towards the expenses of maintenance is derived from the common fund of the metropolis. In this way a fair adjustment of the burden of poor law relief would be obtained without involving any danger of a less careful and economical administration.²

As regards one branch of the poor law, the burden is partly imposed on the county. It is by the county that lunatic asylums are erected, and the necessary funds are provided from the county rate. Moreover, in the case of pauper lunatics, the State has assumed an important part of the expenditure by paying for lunatics received in county or borough asylums or in registered or licensed houses a contribution of 4s. per head per week.

SECTION V.

PRINCIPLES REGULATING RELIEF.

Hitherto we have discussed the questions, Who is to be relieved, and Who is bound to afford relief? We now come to the further question, In what way is the relief to be given?

Under the English poor law, in accordance with the avowedly imperial character of the system, this question has been the subject of stricter regulation than under the poor laws of continental countries. The latter only prescribe the minimum of relief which may be given, while in England the limit is fixed up to which public relief may go.

Here we find an expression of the principle that in regulating relief the State has not only to regard the interests of the pauper, but also those of the community, which are affected in several respects by poor law relief.

In the first place the State, when it imposes on its subjects the pecuniary sacrifice involved in a public relief system, is responsible for restricting the burden within reasonable limits. The exercise of benevolence is not in itself a function of the State. Charity ordered by law loses the voluntary character which is an essential of benevolence. It is the duty of the State, therefore, to restrict poor law authorities in the grant of relief, so that money may not be

¹ See the speech by Mr. C. J. Ribton Turner at the Social Science Congress at Liverpool, 1876 (*Transactions*, 1876, pp. 740-782). He says, "The Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867, seemed to be most beneficial and the widest in its scope, and to leave little to be desired, except that it should be put into full force, and that similar powers should be conferred throughout the country."

² See above, p. 78.

extracted from the pockets of the ratepayers for objects on behalf of which the State has no right to levy compulsory contributions. There must be regulations to keep authorities in mind of the fact that they are administering public funds, of which they are not to dispose at discretion and upon impulse, but which are entrusted to them to be used for the public interest. In regulating the relief of the poor the State has no business to encroach on the province of philanthropy, and its duty is to see that its agents are not benevolent at the expense of the public. By the very fact of drawing a rigid line beyond which public assistance is not to go, and taking no account of the merits of the recipient, the State invokes the aid of private charity, and directs it into proper channels.

Public relief is designed to meet destitution, irrespective of the particular person, or of his good or bad character. Voluntary charity has regard to the personal relations existing between donor and recipient, or to the establishment of such relations as are called for by the qualities and circumstances of the latter. The promotion of these personal relations is in the interests of all. They form a bridge between the Haves and the Have-nots. A hand is stretched out to support the needy, and to aid him to gain strength for a further struggle. The man who gives will learn, by personal contact with the poor, not merely to value his own advantages of position, but also to recognize his duties towards those who have been less fortunate than himself, in consequence of their birth, their training, or their qualities of mind or body. Charity blesses him that gives, and him that takes; no effort should be wanting to promote it; but to require it by Act of Parliament would be morally wrong and logically absurd.

The best thing that the State can do for the promotion of charity is to convince people by its regulations that every destitute person, no matter what his deserts, will receive such relief as is necessary; that actual need will be removed by the supply of what is indispensable. If there is a general conviction that this duty of a civilized State will be duly fulfilled, individuals have no occasion to give relief on the ground of destitution alone. The exercise of charity may properly be limited to cases in which the ground of relief is not merely the need, but the personal character of the individual. The man who gives may pick and choose the object of his benevolence, may give freely to the deserving person with the object not only of rescuing him from pressing want, but also of placing him in a position to acquire independence by his labour. But he may leave the undeserving, or those with whose deserts he has no personal acquaintance, to the operation of the poor law.

The more poor law relief is restricted to cases of pressing need, and the more it is bound down in this respect by strict rules, the less will be the danger, inevitably associated with all public relief, that the energy and activity, the providence and the thrift of the population will be weakened by dependence upon it.

In the interest of the public safety and of civilization, the State

must take care that all its subjects are preserved from starvation, and that those who are unable to maintain themselves by honest labour shall be supplied with the necessities of life from public funds. It provides for the destitute in the interests of the community, from which it levies contributions for their support ; consideration for the particular individual is not in question. Where such consideration is required, it is the pleasing duty of private charity to interpose. It is only by this division of the two provinces of public and of private charity that a satisfactory relief system is possible.

Another very significant point must also be noticed. In the administration of the poor law the State must not pay exclusive regard to the interests of that portion of the population which has already been pauperized, but must also consider the effect which the grant of relief, and particularly the description of the relief, may have on the rest. A great part of the population is on the verge of pauperism, and can only supply itself with the bare necessities of life. If the system places the pauper in a better condition than that of the poor labourer who supports himself, the latter is disheartened in his struggle to maintain his independence, and thus some of the working classes become demoralized.

But it is not enough to take precautions that the condition of the pauper shall not be raised above the level of the poor but independent labourer. The State must also, in its regulations, aim at exerting an educational influence. It must, by the mode in which relief is granted, stimulate its subjects, so far as lies in their power, to make provision for hard times, so that they may not be obliged to apply for poor law relief. The grant of relief must be accompanied by restrictions felt by the applicant and calculated to induce him to provide for the future, according to his means. But here we are met with the fact that the circumstances of the poor labourer limit him to the bare necessities of life, so that it seems impossible that this minimum should be reduced. It therefore becomes necessary to associate with poor law relief certain disabilities which are not indeed of a very substantial character, but which are calculated to act as a deterrent.

The poor law system is accordingly based on the following principles :—

1. The right to receive relief must be assured. The public must know that every one, whatever the cause of his destitution, is secure against starvation.

2. Poor law relief must be restricted to the minimum required for the support of life. It is necessary to exclude the possibility that the condition of the pauper shall in any respect be better than that of the independent poor.

3. It is essential to associate with the receipt of relief such drawbacks as will induce the poor, so far as lies in their power, to make provision for the future.

The first is the duty of a civilized State. The second is required in the interest of justice to the ratepayers, and specially to the poorer

class of them. The third is a necessity for the State which is conscious of its duty as regards social reforms.

It is these principles which regulate the English poor laws. In proof of this we may quote the following words of the Poor Law Board :

“The fundamental principle with respect to the legal relief of the poor is that the condition of the pauper ought to be on the whole less eligible than that of the independent labourer. The equity and expediency of this principle are equally obvious. Unless the condition of the pauper is on the whole less eligible than that of the independent labourer, the law destroys the strongest motives to good conduct, steady industry, providence and frugality among the labouring classes, and induces persons, by idleness or imposture, to throw themselves upon the poor rates for support; but if the independent labourer sees that a recurrence to the poor rates will, while it protects him against destitution, place him in a less eligible position than that which he can attain to by his own industry, he is left to the undisturbed influence of all those motives which prompt mankind to exertion, forethought, and self-denial. On the other hand, the pauper has no just ground for complaint if at the same time that his physical wants are amply provided for his condition should be less eligible than that of the poorest class of those who contribute to his support.”¹ Moreover, “the function of the guardians is to relieve destitution actually existing, and not to expend the money of the ratepayers in preventing a person from becoming destitute, that is to say, they can only expend the poor rates in supplying the destitute persons with actual necessities.”²

It is certainly a very remarkable fact that these principles, which are so important in public relief, are expressed so forcibly and practically in England, a country which is far less inclined than continental States to expound general principles and to give directions to local authorities through a central department. The reason for exception in the case of the poor law administration is to be found in the sad experiences, gained before the Act of 1834, of the result of a relief system based merely on humanitarian motives. It is significant that in England poor law relief is extended to one class of persons to whom it would not be afforded in continental States, and in whose case serious danger is caused by an ill-considered system of relief. This class is that of the able-bodied poor. In England the obligation exists to relieve the destitute man who prefers to have recourse to the poor law rather than maintain himself. As regards the class of persons unable to work, the sick, the infirm, and the aged, as well as pauper children, who come on the poor rate for no fault of their own, a more indulgent treatment is permissible than in the case of the able-bodied class, who could not be indulgently treated without the exercise of a demoralizing influence on the general working population.

¹ Report of the Poor Law Commissioners on the Amendment of the Poor Laws, 1840, p. 45.

² Glen, ‘Poor Law Orders,’ p. 67.

If public relief is required to be given to the able-bodied,¹ the general principle that a civilized State must not allow its subjects to perish for want of the bare necessities of life, must be taken in connection with certain considerations relating to public order and economic well-being. The safety of the commonwealth and the danger to the rest of the population of extreme poverty if left to itself² must be regarded as well as the economic questions of the maintenance of able-bodied citizens, and the utmost use of their powers of labour. It is necessary for the State in the case of able-bodied paupers to take precautions that the poor law shall be administered in the interests of the community, and shall be governed by considerations other than those of mere benevolence.³

Especial care must be taken, in regard to the treatment of the able-bodied, that relief is restricted to bare necessities, and that everything is avoided which tends to make the population less energetic in

¹ The Prussian law also requires the relief of the able-bodied ; ii. 19, s. 2, of the general law provides that those who only lack means and opportunity to maintain themselves shall be supplied with work according to their strength and ability. But this provision, which, like the entire 19th section of the Prussian statute, is quite in accordance with the spirit of our great king Frederic II., has, with the altered views of the period after the *roi des Gueux*, never been carried into practical effect, and it has fallen into oblivion so completely that Prince Bismarck was obliged lately to remind Parliament of its existence.

² See as to this question of public order, which is frequently given as the main reason for the relief of the able-bodied, Babbage on the 'Principle of Taxation,' London, 1851. "Whenever for the purposes of Government we arrive in any state of society at a class so miserable as to be in want of common necessities of life, a new principle comes into action ; the usual restraints which are sufficient for the well-fed are often useless in checking the demands of hungry stomachs. Other and more powerful means must then be employed ; a larger array of military or police force must be maintained. Under such circumstances it may be considerably cheaper to fill empty stomachs to the point of ready obedience, than to compel starving wretches to respect the roast beef of their more industrious neighbours ; and it may be expedient in a more economical point of view to supply gratuitously the wants of even able-bodied persons, if it can be done without creating crowds of additional applicants." See also Sir Matthew Hale, 'A Discourse touching the Provision for the Poor,' London, 1683. Hale declares "the relief of the poor to be an act of great civil prudence and political wisdom, for that poverty is in itself apt to emasculate the minds of many, or at least to make man tumultuous and unquiet. Where there are many poor the rich cannot long or safely continue ; such necessity renders many of phlegmatic and dull natures stupid and indisciplinable, and many of more fiery or active constitutions rapacious and desperate."

³ We may here cite some utterances of distinguished Englishmen upon the English principle of the relief of the able-bodied. In the House of Commons on July 24, 1862, Mr. Bouverie said, "It was the glory of England that she was the only country in the world where the able-bodied had a right to relief. That right was so hostile to the maintenance of the property that unless it were guarded in difficult times with the greatest care and vigour, it was not impossible that the poverty of the country might eat up the property." Fawcett says, 'Labour and Wages,' p. 73, "Amongst the advantages associated with the Poor Law, much importance is to be attributed to the influence which the existence of a definite protection against starvation exerts in preventing the feeling of desperation and despair amongst the poorest classes, and these feelings being to a considerable extent checked, socialistic schemes and theories have never obtained any very great hold in this country upon the masses of the people."

providing for itself. It is of special importance that the position of the able-bodied pauper shall not be raised above the level of the poorest independent labourer, and that relief shall be granted only on conditions calculated to deter applicants, and to stimulate them to maintain themselves.

SECTION VI.

THE CHIEF METHODS OF RELIEF.

In England the workhouse is now recognised as the best and most practical means of carrying out the policy of the poor law. In the workhouse, to which all destitute persons can claim admission at all times, it is possible to provide that the relief shall only consist of bare necessities, and at the same time that the able-bodied shall be compelled to labour; while, on the other hand, the restrictions on freedom and the enforcement of strict discipline tend to repel applicants except in case of real need.

The workhouse also affords a test of the existence of that destitution, which is the only condition of poor law relief. By this "workhouse test," it is possible not only to establish the destitution of the applicant, but also to give an inducement to relations possessed of means to come to the help of the impoverished member of their family. The workhouse, in this way, tends to strengthen their obligation to contribute to his support, for they are induced to do all in their power to prevent the separation from the outer world which would be involved in his admission.

Experiments in workhouse relief were made towards the end of the 17th and in the course of the 18th century in particular districts, and were attended with conspicuous success wherever the workhouse-test was judiciously applied.¹ The Poor Law Commissioners in 1834 were therefore in a position to appeal to satisfactory experience in support of their proposal to concentrate all poor law relief in the workhouse; but the public were nevertheless afraid to accept a strict application of this principle, which appeared to involve too abrupt a change from the indulgence which had previously been the leading characteristic of poor law administration. There was a hesitation in requiring that every district should be provided with a workhouse, and it was left to the Central Board gradually to introduce in particular districts the regulation that relief in general, or that of particular classes of paupers, should be only given in the workhouse.

The Central Board has made use of this power by establishing under two general orders two different systems of relief. Of these one under the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order, of the 21st of December, 1844, is stringent; while the other, designed specially for the larger towns under the Outdoor Relief Regulation Order, of the 14th of December, 1852,² is comparatively lax. Under these two

¹ See above p. 16, note 1, and p. 27, note 3.

² These two orders, as well as the Labour Test Order, which is connected with the former of them, are printed by Glen, pp. 265-307.

orders, relief outside the workhouse for particular cases is either entirely prohibited, or is only permitted under special limitations. As regards these cases, the discretion of the guardians is limited as to the kind of relief to be granted; and if what they give is not of the prescribed character, they run the risk of having the cost disallowed by the auditor and surcharged upon themselves personally.

The Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order, which is in force in most districts throughout England, forbids the grant of outdoor relief to the able-bodied of either sex, except in the following cases:—

- (a) On account of sudden and urgent necessity.¹
- (b) On account of sickness, accident, or bodily or mental infirmity affecting the applicant, or any of his or her family.
- (c) For burial expenses.
- (d) In the case of a widow in the first six months of her widowhood.
- (e) In the case of a widow, having legitimate children, being incapable of earning her own livelihood, and having had no illegitimate children during her widowhood.
- (f) If the head of the family is in prison.
- (g) In the case of the wife or children of a soldier, sailor, or marine in Her Majesty's Service.
- (h) In other cases when the husband or father lives separate from his wife or family in another union, and they become destitute.

In the cases (f) to (h) the wife is to be treated as a widow; relief therefore is governed by the limitations in (d) and (e).²

The Outdoor Relief Regulation Order, which is in force in London and other large towns, especially in the manufacturing districts, is less prohibitive of relief to the able-bodied outside the workhouse. It was believed that difficulties would arise in strictly carrying out the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order in these places. The grant of outdoor relief to able-bodied women is here unrestricted; but as regards men there are the following limitations:—

- (a) If relief is given outside the workhouse, at least half must be given in articles of food or fuel, or in other articles of absolute necessity.
- (b) No relief is to be given in aid of wages.³
- (c) Relief is only to be granted on condition of the performance of a task prescribed by the guardians, who must report to the Central Board within thirty days the sort of work prescribed, the time and place of its performance, and the provision made for superintending it. For the latter purpose a superintendent of outdoor labour may be appointed. (Labour test instead of workhouse test.)

Exceptions to (b) and (c) are allowed in a number of cases corresponding with those under the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order,

¹ This expression is not specially defined. It is applicable to a case where instant relief is required, and does not authorize permanent outdoor relief. Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 268, note (a).

² Relief outside the workhouse to a deserted woman who has had an illegitimate child during the absence of her husband is thus prohibited.

³ This provision was intended to put a stop to the abuses caused before the passing of the Act of 1834, by the grant of relief in aid of wages, which had produced a very bad effect on the labouring classes (see above, p. 30).

namely, in sudden and urgent necessity, sickness, bodily or mental infirmity, burial expenses, and where wives and children, separated from the head of the family, become destitute.

Besides these special provisions as to able-bodied paupers, there are a number of general regulations as to the relief to be granted. In this respect the two Orders do not differ materially. Chief of them is the prohibition of non-resident relief, *i.e.*, of relief to persons living outside the union to which they are chargeable. Non-resident relief is permitted only in the following cases:—

- (a) If the person is casually within the union, and destitute.
- (b) In case of sickness, accident, bodily or mental infirmity affecting the applicant or one of his or her family.
- (c) In the case of a widow with legitimate children, and having no illegitimate child, who, at the time of her husband's death, was resident with him in some place other than the parish of her legal settlement.
- (d) In the case of a child under sixteen maintained in a workhouse or school outside the union or parish.
- (e) In the case of the deserted wife or child of some person residing elsewhere.

Further, relief in money for certain specified objects is prohibited; under the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order for payment of rent or any portion thereof; under the Outdoor Relief Regulation Order also, for establishing an applicant in any trade or business, for purchasing or redeeming tools and other articles (except articles of clothing or bedding where urgently needed), or for defraying travelling expenses.

If the guardians, in special cases, deem it expedient to depart from these regulations, they must report such departure within fifteen or twenty-one days,¹ with the grounds thereof, to the Central Board, who may approve or disapprove such departure. In the latter case, the guardians must forthwith alter the mode of relief.

Subject to the above exceptions, it is left to the guardians to decide in what form relief is to be given. The duty, therefore, of restricting relief to maintenance in the workhouse only exists to a limited extent. But the guardians may in all cases select admission to the workhouse as the mode of relief,² and the utmost extension of this plan is in accordance with the principles of the English poor law. This is constantly pointed out to the guardians by the Central Board; and recently, in the course of the last fifteen years, the proportion of outdoor relief has largely diminished. The guardians have been constantly learning by experience the correctness of the views taken by the Central Board on the subject. The poor law conferences, too, have specially laboured to obtain the wider application and the better enforcement of this principle.³

¹ Fifteen days under the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order; twenty-one days under the Outdoor Relief Regulation Order.

² The only exception is in the case of an adult entirely incapable of work owing to age or infirmity. See p. 138, note 1.

³ See above, p. 95.

The workhouse system is the groundwork of the English poor law, inasmuch as the workhouse serves as the normal standard of relief. Applications for relief can always be satisfied by the offer of the workhouse ; if this is refused the guardians are under no obligation to afford any other kind of assistance.¹ The guardians thus possess an efficient weapon for disposing of all complaints and objections as to the amount of relief provided. If it is offered in any other form than that of admission into the workhouse, and if the applicant is discontented with its amount or with any conditions imposed, the guardians can offer him the workhouse. There, care is taken that the pauper is provided with the necessities of life, and beyond this he can claim nothing. In this way, disputes as to the amount and character of the relief offered are prevented. Accordingly relief in the workhouse may be regarded as the general basis of the English poor law.

It was in the workhouse, as to the establishment of which we shall give details further on, that indoor relief was centred under the Act of 1834. The workhouse was for all three classes of paupers : for the children, for the able-bodied, and for the infirm, who were all to be admitted. The later development, however, has been to provide special institutions for particular classes of paupers.

This was first done in the case of pauper children. As early as 1844 the legislature endeavoured to effect the separation of the children from the workhouse by the erection of district schools. After these came other institutions for the education of pauper children outside the workhouse : by means of separate and certified schools, training ships, and, above all, the boarding-out system. The question of the best method of dealing with pauper children has resolved itself more and more into a purely educational one. How best to make them useful members of society, and enable them to shake off the chains of pauperism, has been the main point. No violation of the general principles of the English poor law is involved. These principles are twofold : adequate relief for the destitute, and the provision of this relief so as to avoid the evil results of reliance upon it, and to stimulate the poor to make provision for themselves. In the treatment of pauper children, this last object may be left out of the question, since they are not in a position to make provision for themselves, and if they have become paupers the fault is their parents'. But for the sake of the parents it is necessary to take precautions that the relief given to children in case of need should not lead to recklessness in bringing children into the world without making any provision for their maintenance.

It was therefore required that relief given to children should be regarded as given to their parents, and on that account should be attended with the same drawbacks as regards the parents as if it were granted to themselves. Where the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order is in force, it follows that if the father or mother is able-bodied, relief can only be granted to children if their parents are ad-

¹ 9 Geo. I. c. 7, s. 4.

mitted into the workhouse.¹ The relief of pauper children outside the workhouse is thus not contrary to the principles of the poor law. The question whether they can be best brought up in the workhouse or elsewhere will be discussed later.

Since 1860 endeavours have been made to remove another class of paupers from the workhouse—viz., the sick. In this case, it is especially desirable that the population should not be allowed to lose sight of the necessity of themselves making provision for illness. But besides this consideration, there are others which are forced to the front. Regard must be had in the first place to the danger of treating diseases, particularly those which are infectious, in workhouses which have not been specially erected for the reception of patients, and cannot be properly adapted to the purpose. Nor must the question of humanity be disregarded in the case of persons who are in suffering. Then comes the economic consideration that it is advisable that those who have hitherto maintained themselves, and have only ceased to be useful members of society in consequence of their illness, should be supplied with the best means of recovering their powers of work as soon as possible. Of all these grounds the sanitary one is the most important. In connexion with the principles of the poor law, regard must be had to the questions how best to treat the sick, so as to avoid infection and to promote recovery, and how best to make their lives endurable if there is no possibility of their cure.

With these objects, endeavours have been made to remove sick paupers as much as possible from the workhouse to institutions specially designed for their reception. In the metropolis, this exclusion of the sick from the workhouse is already thoroughly carried out. There are infirmaries, sick asylums, lunatic asylums, fever hospitals, small-pox hospitals, hospital ships, &c. And in the rest of the country, as far as special circumstances admit, efforts are made to provide such establishments. Moreover, the guardians make ample use of their power of subscribing to private or charitable hospitals, and by this means secure that, at any rate, those sick paupers who require competent and careful medical attendance should be admitted to suitable institutions.

Separation from the rest of the workhouse inmates has also taken place in the case of the casual paupers, for whom are provided either special institutions or separate accommodation, called "casual wards," in the workhouses. As regards this class of paupers, who only claim temporary relief, usually in order to obtain a night's shelter, it has been thought necessary to have regard specially to police considerations, and by making the discipline more rigid, and otherwise imposing special restrictions, to introduce a method of treatment which is something between relief and punishment.

It was considered that in this way enactments against beggars and

¹ The exceptions to this rule have been already mentioned. There are exceptions, (a) in the case of blind, deaf and dumb, and idiot children; (b) in other cases where the relief is a consequence of illness of the children; (c) with regard to the payment of school fees.

vagrants, of whom the class of casual paupers is largely composed, might be supplemented in a way which would rectify the recognized deficiencies of the existing penalties. As to whether the right course has been adopted, we shall have something to say in another place, where we shall discuss the regulations as to casual paupers in connection with the penal enactments as to rogues and vagabonds. From these general principles as to the mode of granting relief, we shall proceed, in Chapter IV., to discuss in detail the respective branches of the English system, viz. :—

- (a) Outdoor relief ;
- (b) The workhouse ;
- (c) The education of pauper children ;
- (d) The care of sick paupers ;
- (e) The treatment of casual paupers, as well as of beggars and vagrants.

We shall also describe in detail the poor law system of the metropolis, which has various special characteristics.

SECTION VII.

SECURITIES FOR DUE RELIEF.

In order to judge properly of the poor law system, it is necessary to know what security exists for carrying out the duty of relief, and for adequately applying general principles. These two questions therefore arise :

1. In what way is the raising of the necessary funds assured ?
2. In what way is the system organized, and what security does the organization afford for carrying out the principles of the poor law ?

With these two points, which are treated in detail in Chapters II. and III., it is necessary here only to deal generally.

Let us see what are the main features of the proceedings in granting relief.¹

The destitute person has in the ordinary course to apply to the relieving officer of the district, who enters each application in a report book, and must then satisfy himself as to the destitution and the particular circumstances of the case, specially visiting the applicant at home. At the next ordinary meeting of the Board of Guardians, he must report upon the case in the prescribed form. This meeting is to be attended by the relieving officer in person, and usually the applicant is also requested to be present. The report of the relieving officer must set forth particulars as to the capacity for work, and the health of the applicant, and also as to the existence of any persons who are under an obligation to contribute to his support. On this report, after examining him, the guardians decide whether relief is to be granted, and if so, in what form. They are unfettered

¹ See the Consolidated Order of 26th July, 1847 (Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 57). Here we need only give the main features ; details will be found in subsequent chapters.

in their discretion as to these points, subject only to the limitations already referred to as to the kind of relief.¹

The decision as to the grant of relief is to be entered by the chairman or clerk of the board of guardians in a special Relief Order Book, and its execution is entrusted to the relieving officer.

Apart from this ordinary procedure, special provision is made for cases of sudden or urgent necessity, in which the relieving officers may afford relief, not in money, but in kind, either by supplying necessaries of food or clothing, or by giving an order for admission into the workhouse. But in cases of urgency the destitute person need not apply in the first instance to the relieving officer. He may apply to the master of the workhouse for admission, which must be granted in any genuine case of sudden and urgent necessity. Further, in case of pressing need, he may apply to an overseer, who may, like the relieving officer, either grant relief in kind, or give an order of admission to the workhouse, but must forthwith report his action in the matter to the relieving officer. If the overseer refuses relief on improper grounds, he may be required by any justice to grant relief to the extent of bare necessaries. He must give effect to the order of the justice under a penalty of £5. The justice may also, at his discretion, order medical relief in cases of sudden and dangerous illness.² The district medical officer must then visit the sick person, and supply the necessary medicine. But all these orders applicable to cases of urgency are merely provisional.³ The decision as to subsequent relief rests with the board of guardians, to whom the relieving officer has to report upon all such cases at their next meeting.

The provision of the necessary funds for relief rests with the overseers, who levy the poor rate. The rate is raised in advance at special periods of the year, generally half-yearly. A supplementary rate is, however, made at any time when the sum raised is insufficient for the required expenditure. The overseers are personally responsible to the extent of their entire property for the provision of the funds necessary for the administration of the poor law. The guardians, therefore, in issuing their orders, are not concerned with the question of funds, which are regulated by their requirements, not the requirements by the funds.

If we examine the question, What, in effect, is the security for the observance of the principles of the poor law? two points have to be distinguished.

(1) What is the security that no really destitute person shall remain without relief?

¹ There is an exception in the case of an adult pauper who is incapable of work on account of age or infirmity, in which case two justices are empowered to issue an order for the grant of relief outside the workhouse, provided that at least one of these justices attests such incapacity of his own knowledge. 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 27.

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 54.

³ Here it should be again pointed out that these provisional orders are to be carried out irrespectively of the question whether the pauper has a settlement in the particular union or whether he is removable.

(2) What precautions are taken that the relief shall be in accordance with the regulations, and especially that the poor rate shall not be squandered in a fashion opposed to the principles of the English poor law, governing the grant of relief from public funds?

The relief of the really destitute is, in the first place, practically secured by the poor law organization.

In case of urgent necessity, the destitute person may apply at his choice to three different officials: to the relieving officer, to the workhouse master, or to one of the overseers. He is protected against an improper refusal on the part of the latter by the power of appealing to a justice. With regard to the relieving officers and the workhouse master, it must be remembered that they are not only under the control of the guardians, but are paid officers¹ liable to dismissal by the Local Government Board in case of any neglect of duty.

The practical exercise of the controlling powers given to the Central Board depends in a great degree upon the inspectors. By these "eyes and ears" the Board is made acquainted with any matter of complaint, and orders the requisite remedy. And in the absence of special complaint a real control is exercised through the inspectors, as they periodically attend the meetings of the respective boards of guardians of their districts, and are able to ascertain how the different officers of the local administration perform their duties. Under the elaborate system of book-keeping which is prescribed, and which makes it necessary that each application for relief, however ill-founded, should be entered, with particulars as to the whole case, any neglect of duty can be easily discovered, especially by the practised eye of an inspector.

The Central Board remorselessly visits neglect on the part of the paid officers with immediate dismissal, and, on the other hand, it is scarcely to be apprehended that the elected board of guardians will be guilty of neglect with regard to genuine cases of destitution brought to its knowledge, since the matter would become public through the press and would create a scandal. It follows that the refusal of relief to genuine cases of destitution is almost out of the question.

But relief is still further assured by law. In the first place, an indictment would lie against those through whose neglect a really destitute person is left without assistance, and has been injured by such neglect. If a poor person who has been refused the relief for which he has applied were to die of starvation, the officer in fault would be liable to be proceeded against for manslaughter.²

¹ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 48. The power of the Central Board is absolutely discretionary. In a special case, *Teather v. the Poor Law Commissioners* (19 L. J. M. C. 70; 15 J. P. 36) it was decided that the Central Board need neither give the officer notice of dismissal nor give him an opportunity of explanation. A dismissed officer cannot again serve in any branch of poor law administration without the Board's express approval.

² As I was assured by Mr. Sendall, Assistant-Secretary to the Local Government Board, and Mr. Hedley, General Inspector, this is not merely so in

But there is also a further remedy at law in the *mandamus* of the English procedure. If a destitute person is refused relief, the case may be brought for decision before the Queen's Bench by means of an order of *mandamus*, which requires the guardians concerned either to grant the relief or to show grounds for its refusal.¹

In practice, as already stated, there is scarcely ever any occasion to make use of this legal remedy; there is in England a well-founded conviction that relief in the case of all really destitute persons is substantially secured, and is in practice never refused.

As to the other point, what is to prevent improper expenditure, adequate means have been adopted in the English poor law system, especially by the establishment of a system of audit. As the relieving officer is the person who is primarily responsible that every destitute person shall receive the requisite relief, so the district auditor is the official who has to watch over the expenditure of the poor rates.²

It is the duty of the auditor to submit to a searching examination the numerous books, lists, and accounts of the poor law administration,³ and he must not merely ascertain formally whether these books

theory, but the relieving officer is perfectly conscious of his serious responsibility in this matter. I am informed that in all cases in which there is suspicion that a death has been caused by starvation, the Local Government Board inquires whether any application was made for poor law relief, and if so, how it was dealt with. In some cases it has happened that an application was made for relief, and that the guardians granted an order for admission into the workhouse, but that nevertheless the applicant, who asked for outdoor relief, would not go into the workhouse, and actually died of hunger. Such cases are instanced by the opponents of the English poor law system as striking proofs of its defects. In my opinion they only show that the system lacks completeness, inasmuch as it should not be left to the option of the really destitute whether he will go into the workhouse or not. It would be possible to go a step further, and to make the relief of the really destitute independent of any application from himself by giving the relieving officers the power to bring into the workhouse any such persons who have actually no means of existence, and who are unable to show in what way they can maintain themselves. It should be stated that the number of cases in which a coroner's jury gave a verdict of "death from starvation" amounted in the year 1881 to 54, and in the year 1882 to 58. See Parliamentary Papers 1882, vol. lix., p. 276, and 1883, vol. lix., p. 441.

¹ Only a single case is known in which this particular procedure has been actually employed. This happened in the year 1864, in the case of the Newton and Llanidloes Union. In this case the then Lord Chief Justice Cockburn remarked: "No doubt there ought to be some remedy if a poor person is refused relief, and an indictment, although a means of punishment, is hardly a remedy. An indictment will not give relief to the destitute person. The remedy by *mandamus* may be a long way off, but if there is no better it must be resorted to. We cannot say that the guardians are arbitrarily to refuse relief to a destitute person without just cause, and we must see what that reason may be."

² The legal provisions as to audit are contained in 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, ss. 32-39, and 11 & 12 Vict. c. 91; also in the General Order for accounts of January 14th, 1867, also the General Order of April 25th, 1879 (Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' pp. 353 and 790).

³ The Application and Report Book, the Outdoor Relief List, and the Receipt and Expenditure Book, which are to be kept by the relieving officer, the Indoor Relief List by the workhouse master, the Relief Order Book, the Pauper Classification Book, and General Ledger by the clerk to the guardians, and finally the

and accounts are in accordance with the regulations, whether the necessary vouchers are produced, and whether the balances are right, but also substantially whether all items of expenditure have been in accordance with the law. If the auditor considers any payment to be illegal or excessive, it is his duty to disallow it.¹

Every poor law officer is personally responsible for the due expenditure of moneys entrusted to him, and is personally liable for the amount of any payments declared unlawful and disallowed. He is not released from this responsibility by the order of his superior. Every officer is expressly prohibited from carrying into effect any order which is illegal.²

The audit, which is facilitated by the particularly elaborate system of accounts and the precise regulations as to book-keeping, supplies a complete means of control over all poor law expenditure, and is a security that only legitimate items will be passed. The audit takes place regularly twice a year. Extraordinary audits may, however, be ordered at any time by the Central Board. The ratepayers are enabled to exercise control at the audit, as each ratepayer may inspect the books and accounts laid before the auditor. The audit itself is public; any ratepayer may object to the whole of the accounts or to particular items; and the auditor must decide upon the points in dispute.

Against the decision of the auditor there is an appeal to the Queen's Bench Division (by *certiorari*) or to the Local Government Board. The latter is ordinarily chosen, as the Board has power to exercise an equitable jurisdiction,³ by sanctioning pay-

Rate Book and Book of Receipts and Payments, by the overseers, are the principal of these, but there are a great number of others. The Master of the workhouse has to fill up no less than 19 different books and accounts. It would really seem that the clerical work is somewhat excessive.

¹ Even the Act 50 Geo. III. c. 49, s. 1, authorized the justices in revising the accounts of the overseers "to strike out all such surcharges and payments as they shall deem to be unfounded, and to reduce such as they shall deem to be exorbitant." And the Act 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 89, provided that every justice shall "disallow as illegal and unfounded all payments, charges, or allowances contrary to the provisions of this Act or to any such rule, order, or regulation of the said commissioners." An order issued on March 1st, 1836, specifies "what may be included in accounts:" it does not positively state to what object the poor rate may be legally applied, but negatively what payments are unlawful. Among these may be mentioned as not without significance in regard to abuses in the poor law which have hitherto existed, not only expenses for the marriage of paupers, but also payments for feasts. A list of the objects for which the poor rate may at the present time be expended is given by Burn, p. 1108. The district auditor controls and supervises, as to each item of expenditure, the execution of the enactments of the poor law and the instructions of the Central Board. In the year 1883, the number of disallowances amounted to 3893, and of these only 124 were reversed on appeal to the Board; see 13th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. lvi. and p. 424.

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 96, and the instruction in the order of March 1, 1836. As the accounts of every officer may be disallowed, so every officer, whilst he is bound to obey all orders which are legal, is equally bound to disobey all orders which are illegal, and shall be personally answerable in either case.

³ With regard to the principles upon which the Local Government Board act in this matter, it is stated in the 13th Annual Report, p. 28, that a disallowance is

ments disallowed by the auditor, while the Court has no such power.¹

By the introduction of the appeal procedure, the Central Board, by whom the auditors are appointed and paid, is enabled to exercise an important control over the local bodies. The centralization of the poor law system is largely increased by the provisions as to audit. The Board thus obtains an important means of exercising a substantial influence upon the course of local administration.²

always remitted when the guardians or the poor law officer concerned were *bond fide* of opinion that the payment was legal. Full credit on this head is given to the assurances of the persons concerned, but remission is refused where the illegality or excess of the charge in question has been already decided, and this decision must have been known to them. In this connexion it is to be noted that the Board expressly and in detail set forth the cases in which important points have been decided. See *e.g.*, 13th Report of the Local Government Board, p. lvii.

¹ As regards the choice of the mode of appeal there is also the consideration of the serious cost of an appeal to the Queen's Bench, while an appeal to the Local Government Board costs little or nothing. The number of cases submitted for the decision of the Board is very large, and they are dealt with by a special department. In 1883 the Board had to decide upon 2253 disallowances and surcharges. Of these, however, only 1059 were under the poor law, while the rest concerned the accounts of Rural and Urban Sanitary Authorities, School Boards, Highway Boards, &c. In the accounts of these various authorities coming under audit, there were altogether 6021 disallowances in 1883, so that the proportion of appeals is about 37 per cent. Out of these 2253 appeals, in 1923 cases the disallowance was confirmed but remitted, in 118 cases it was confirmed, in 197 cases it was reversed, and in 15 cases it was otherwise dealt with. See 13th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. 424, and pp. lvi. and lvii.

² The great importance of the audit will be perceived from the following weighty words of Nicholls, vol. ii., p. 444: "The audit is indeed the bridle by which the various local administrators can with the greatest readiness and certainty be guided to what is right and restrained from what is wrong, and its importance therefore can hardly be overestimated." In the Annual Report of the Poor Law Commissioners of 1837, it is stated that "the negative duty not to apply a tax for an unauthorized purpose is more peculiarly fit to be enforced by an audit and account; when re-enforced by an efficient remedy for the recovery of balances, and when the responsible party is in solvent circumstances, it is the most simple, ready and self-acting of all expedients for the security of public property, and no other administrative inquisition and no judicial proceeding either of a remedial or penal character can be compared with it."

CHAPTER II.

THE POOR RATE.

SECTION I.

SOURCES OF RECEIPTS.

THE Act of Elizabeth provided that the necessary funds for relief should be obtained by means of a rate levied within each parish by overseers appointed by the justices. This is the case now. The cost of relief is defrayed from the poor rate which is raised in the individual parish by the overseers. The principles of the Act of Elizabeth with regard to the levying of the rate are still in force, but their interpretation has been made more precise, and their application has been restricted, by decisions of the Courts of Law.

This consistency in enactments ranging over a period of 280 years is very remarkable. While the parish, as regards its own administration of relief, has been superseded by the union, and while the union has taken the place of the parish as the area of chargeability, it is the parish and its officers that actually raise the required contributions. And although particular branches of relief have been transferred from the union to still greater districts—embracing the whole metropolis or the county—it is only the local expenditure that is in question, not the levying of the rates. All these large areas obtain the funds from the contributions of the individual parishes ; and so, too, the county rate is merely an additional tax levied on the basis of the poor rate. Now, as formerly, it is the rate raised in the individual parish that furnishes the means for the administration of relief.

There are, however, besides the poor-rate, two other sources which furnish certain comparatively small sums for relief purposes, viz., loans and state contributions. As to these we may say—

1. In the attempt to improve the poor law system, especially by the extension of indoor relief, it was found necessary to lighten the financial burden caused by the erection or alteration of workhouses. If improvements of this kind were to be made at once, without inflicting undue hardship on the ratepayers, it seemed requisite that at any rate such expenditure as would supply some want for a considerable period should not fall exclusively on the ratepayers for the time being, but should be spread over a term of years.

As a complement to the provisions of the statute¹ of 1819, the

¹ 59 Geo. III. c. 12, s. 14. Similar power had previously been given to Gilbert's Incorporations by 22 Geo. III. c. 83, s. 20 ; and by 52 Geo. III. c. 54. The Exchequer Bill Loan Commissioners were empowered, on the application of a parish, to issue loans to a certain amount from the Consolidated Fund on the security of the rates, and to secure their repayment in the prescribed periods.

Act of 1834,¹ authorized the raising of loans for the building or enlargement of workhouses, for the purchase or hire of buildings to be used as workhouses, or of sites for their erection. Loans might also be raised for the further object of emigrating paupers to British colonies. This, too, was on the principle that permanent advantage would be secured from an outlay made once for all.²

In the course of time, other objects for loans have been added, such as the improvement or alteration of existing workhouses, the erection of district schools, and of metropolitan asylums.³

The strictest precautions have been taken with a view to prevent abuse from the power of transferring the burden of expenditure to future generations. With this object very extensive authority has been given to the Central Department. The sanction of that department must be obtained in the case of each loan, and not only the amount, but the conditions of repayment, must be approved. The Local Government Board has a staff specially dealing with local loans, and is annually furnished with returns of those outstanding in the respective unions. These so-called loan accounts⁴ are to be passed by the auditor before being sent in; they afford the Central Board the means of ascertaining the indebtedness of the respective local bodies, as well as of exercising a constant control with regard to any non-fulfilment of the conditions of repayment.

With regard to repayment, a number of general enactments have been passed. The repayment of money raised for purposes of emigration must take place within five years; for workhouses, originally within twenty years, but subsequently within thirty years,—by “annuities.” For the Metropolitan Asylum District, the raising of loans up to a prescribed amount, with repayment within sixty years, has been authorized. The Central Board is now empowered to shorten the ordinary term of thirty years in all cases in which the object of the loan does not appear to justify so long a term.

The security for the loans raised consisted originally of the poor rates of the respective parishes, and subsequently of the poor rates of the union, or, for school districts and the metropolis, those of still larger areas.

The total amount of loan is not to exceed a certain percentage of the poor rate of the district. This limit, in the case of loans for emigration, is half the annual average of the poor rate raised in the

¹ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, ss. 23–26.

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 62. The provisions on the subject are extended by 12 & 13 Vict. c. 103, s. 20, and 13 & 14 Vict. c. 101, s. 4.

³ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 30; 14 & 15 Vict. c. 105, s. 16; 32 & 33 Vict. c. 45; 35 Vict. c. 2; 42 & 43 Vict. c. 54. Besides the purposes above specified, loans may be obtained for valuation expenses, for the execution of the Burial Acts, and for other objects less directly connected with the poor law.

⁴ The form of these loan accounts is given by Glen, ‘Poor Law Orders,’ p. 796. It contains the following headings, (a) amount originally advanced; (b) when advanced; (c) whether by Public Works Loan Commissioners, a company, or otherwise; (d) for what object; (e) for what period; (f) rate of interest; (g) mode of repayment; (h) amounts paid this year; (i) amount of principal still owing.

previous three years; loans for other purposes are not to exceed two-thirds of the aggregate amount of poor rates raised during the previous three years. For the metropolis there are a number of special provisions on this subject, notably that authorizing the Metropolitan Asylums Board to borrow from the Metropolitan Board of Works, up to a certain amount, at a low rate of interest.

The whole matter is dealt with very comprehensively in the interests both of the existing and of future generations. The carrying out of the enactments on the subject is assured by the strict control exercised by the Central Department.¹

The aggregate amount of loans raised by poor law authorities outstanding at the end of the financial year 1882-3 was £5,842,012, of which boards of guardians owed £4,529,936, and managers of district schools, the metropolitan asylums board, and managers of sick asylum districts together owed £1,312,076. The sum total of the poor rate in 1882-3, was £8,429,015; and thus the charges distributed over future years amount to less than 70 per cent. of the poor rate for a single year. In 1882-3 fresh loans were raised by guardians to the extent of £464,886, and by managers of district schools, district asylums, and the metropolitan asylums board, to that of £74,600, making together the sum of £539,486.

Of late years the amount of loans for poor law purposes has considerably increased. In 1876-7 the amount outstanding was £3,893,771, and this has in six years increased by one-half. About one-half of the outstanding debt falls on the metropolis. Moreover, in the metropolis the proportion of outstanding loans to the total poor rate is larger than in the rest of the country.²

In order to estimate rightly the charge thrown on future ratepayers, it is necessary to add to these figures the sum which the counties receive by way of loan for the lunatic asylums erected and maintained by them. It is not clear from the official returns what amount of the county debt was incurred specially for this purpose. It would, however, be necessary, if this amount were ascertained, to take into consideration the fact that the county lunatic asylums admit not only paupers, but persons whose maintenance is paid for by their relations.³

¹ The legal provisions are contained in 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, ss. 23-26, and s. 62; 6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 107; 1 & 2 Vict. c. 25; 30 Vict. c. 6, s. 17; 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 14; 32 & 33 Vict. c. 45, and c. 102, s. 37; 34 & 35 Vict. c. 11, s. 3; 35 & 36 Vict. c. 2, s. 3; 38 & 39 Vict. c. 83, and c. 89; 42 & 43 Vict. c. 54, 45 & 46 Vict. c. 58, ss. 12-16. In the Eighth Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. lii., and Appendix, p. 95, the chief enactments are particularized.

² In the year 1877-8, of the total outstanding loans of poor law authorities, amounting to £4,260,707, £2,145,362 fell on the metropolis. In the metropolis the outstanding loans amounted to 56.6 per cent. of the poor rate, in the rest of the county to only 25.9 per cent. The exact figures are published in the Annual Local Taxation Returns; see especially the Return for 1882-3 (published in 1884), p. viii., x., and 50.

³ The following particulars as to county lunatic asylums may be of interest. In the year 1882-3, out of the loans raised by counties, £315,918 were for lunatic asylums; the contribution for pauper lunatics from the Consolidated Fund was £16,012; the amount of other receipts was £17,369. The disbursements for maintenance of lunatics were £45,172, and for establishment charges £156,758.

II. Next to loans, in the matter of poor law expenditure, come Parliamentary grants. They are not relatively very important, amounting in the financial year 1882-3 to £647,508,¹ of which £440,670 alone is in respect of the maintenance of pauper lunatics. For each such lunatic is paid, out of the Consolidated Fund, a contribution of 4s. a week to the district which, in accordance with the above-mentioned legal provisions, is responsible for his maintenance. The remainder of the Parliamentary grant consists in contributions towards the payment of schoolmasters and schoolmistresses, and of poor law medical officers.²

It is worth while to examine the nature of the charges which are thus partly paid by the State.

The contributions towards the payment of the schoolmasters and mistresses do not specially concern the relief system. They are in accordance with the general principle of the English educational system, that part of the costs of education should be paid for by the State in the form of contribution to the pay of the teachers. With regard to the partial repayment of the salaries of the medical officers, it is enough to say that in many countries, particularly in Ireland, the appointment and payment of poor law medical officers is not treated as within the province of relief administration, but as a matter of State concern. The question by whom such officers should be appointed and paid has in fact very little to do with the principles of poor law relief, and it is only an incidental circumstance that in England their remuneration is at present derived partly from local rates and partly from imperial taxation.

It is somewhat different as regards the heavy contributions towards the maintenance of pauper lunatics. In this case part of the actual cost of relief is really borne by the State. But no great stress must be laid on this fact, for the persons dealt with are an exceptional class, and the fact that they are paupers is of much less importance

¹ This is the highest figure reached up to 1883; for the five previous years the amounts were as follows:—

	£
1877-8	547,351
1878-9	574,807
1879-80	555,569
1880-1	617,631
1881-2	537,169

The increase or diminution is mainly attributable to the sum paid in respect of pauper lunatics. These figures are taken from the Thirteenth Annual Report of the Local Government Board, pp. cxi., 258, and 346.

[The amount for 1883-4 was £670,054; for 1884-5, £624,471; for 1885-6, £652,849.]

² The contributions towards the payment of school teachers in the financial year 1882-3 amounted to £38,629. In order accurately to ascertain the extent to which the State shares the poor law expenditure of this kind, it is necessary to take into account the costs for the Central Board, the inspectors, and the auditors. But here the difficulty arises that the Board and its officers are concerned with a mass of business unconnected with the poor law. An accurate estimate of the poor law expenditure in respect of the Board is therefore impossible.

than the fact that they are lunatics. The economical considerations applicable to the treatment of ordinary paupers yield to the necessity of placing these unfortunate persons in suitable institutions where they may be cured, or, at any rate, may be prevented from being dangerous to themselves and to the community. For these reasons the contributions by the State towards the cost of maintenance of pauper lunatics cannot be regarded as a step towards the transfer of the cost of relief to imperial funds.

To such a transfer there has always been much disinclination in England. This is a noteworthy fact, since the general tendency of the English poor law is strongly in favour of centralization. The State, or more precisely the Central Board, has been invested with more extensive powers of interference as regards poor law administration than it possesses in any foreign country. It would therefore seem likely that the character of relief, as an obligation of the State, would be recognized through the provision of the necessary funds by a general tax. But though English legislation has progressively given more and more of a State character to relief, this suggestion has been always met with the answer, "*principiis obsta.*" People are convinced that the effect of a transfer of the poor law expenditure to the State would be the administration of the poor law system by Government officials. And the drawbacks thus involved are considered to outweigh the gain that would result from the fair and equal apportionment of the burthen if a general tax were levied by the State. This simple and obvious solution of the question—how best to remove the inequalities and hardships produced by the localization of the cost of relief—has not met with general approval, and all that has been done is to reduce these inequalities to a minimum by spreading poor law charges over larger local combinations of districts.

SECTION II.

THE POOR RATE.

The Act of Elizabeth¹ provides, with regard to the poor rate, that it shall be raised "by taxation of every inhabitant, parson, vicar, and other, and of every occupier of lands, houses, tithes propriate or impropriations of tithes, coal mines, or saleable underwoods"; and further, that it shall be "according to the ability of the parish."

Thus the ratepayers are, according to the Act, to be of two classes: (1) the inhabitants of the parish, and (2) the occupiers of certain specified hereditaments. As to the apportionment of the rate, the Act contains no detailed provisions. The only expression employed which could give a basis for such apportionment is that it is to be according to "ability."

From this incompleteness of its provisions there arose in practice consequences which led to an interpretation scarcely to be expected

¹ See p. 6.

from its language. Judicial decisions construed the expression "according to the ability," as meaning that the rate should be equally levied according to the amount of income. But as regards the assessment of this income, detailed rules were only laid down in reference to real property; the rate was to consist of a percentage of that sum for which the premises, &c., could be let, after deduction of the rates and taxes which according to law are payable by the tenant.

As to the assessment of personal property, no principle was enunciated. The result was that personal property was in general not rated, because the principles of equality of rating, as laid down by the Courts, could not be applied to it without special enactment, and without its being settled in what proportion the rating of personal property should stand to that of the proceeds of real property.

This exemption of personal property was indeed not very important so long as the amount of personal property was small in comparison with that derived from land. It may have been due to this fact that the Courts did not attempt to decide the then specially difficult questions of the mode of ascertaining and valuing personal property. Yet there was the fact that the amount of personal property steadily increased, and its exemption became of greater consequence. Here, then, was an illustration of the tendency of English Courts to interpret the legal liability to taxation in the narrowest possible sense.

The result of this tendency in the case of real property was that only the particular kinds specified in the Act of Elizabeth were rated. From the special mention of underwoods as liable to rating, it was concluded that timber was exempt, and, from the mention of coal mines, that all other mines were exempt. The same tendency was shown as regards the rating of personal property. From the mention of the parson and vicar among those to be rated, and from the context, it was inferred that personal property, to be liable to the rate, must be visible, must be locally situated within the parish, and must be profitable. In consequence of these principles, the only personal property subject to be rated, besides the parson's benefice, was the stock in trade. But its assessment presented great difficulties, and much doubt existed as to what amount of this stock, in proportion to the freehold, should be assessed.¹

The solution of all these questions was effected in a fashion simple enough, but appearing very marvellous to a foreigner. In connection with a then recent judicial decision, it was provided by an Act of 1840² that for the next year the inhabitants, as such, should not be rated, except in the case of any parson, vicar, or occupier of lands,

¹ These questions were discussed in detail in a number of judicial decisions; see especially *R. v. Ambleside*, 16 East, 380; *Reg. v. Lumisdaine*, 10 A. and E. 157. Ample material in reference to all points concerning the poor rate is also afforded by two Parliamentary Reports of 1843 and 1850, 'Report of the Poor Law Commissioners on Local Taxation,' and 'Report on the Laws Relating to Parochial Assessment.' The last-named, in particular, contains much interesting evidence.

² 3 & 4 Vict. c. 89.

houses, tithes, &c. The preamble simply states that whereas, under the provisions of the Act of Elizabeth, it has been held that stocks in trade are liable to be taxed for the relief of the poor, it is expedient that this liability should be repealed. This Act was continued from year to year.¹ And thus, if we except the rating of the parson or vicar, which was unreasonably continued, personal property in England is exempt from the assessment to the poor rate.

Thus real property appears to be alone subject to assessment. We have, however, already mentioned that special exceptions have been made by the judicature, viz., with regard to timber and to mines other than coal mines. As regards sporting rights, the Court was divided in opinion as to whether they were rateable.² These exceptions and doubts as to rateability are, however, done away with by the Rating Act of 1874,³ which provides that woods, sporting rights, and mines other than coal mines, shall, like other real property, be liable to the poor rate.

Churches, chapels, and other buildings devoted to divine service,⁴ are exempted, and so is Crown and Government property, e.g., courts of law, police courts, prisons, &c.⁵ As regards the property of charitable institutions, the House of Lords decided in 1864 that it is liable to rates in case and in so far as it yields a profit.⁶ The House of Lords came to this important decision, which put an end to an old dispute, on the ground that, as regards the liability to the rate, it was immaterial for what object the property was employed, and that therefore, apart from express statutory exemptions, every property was rateable, provided that it yielded a profit, no matter whether this profit went to a particular person or to a particular object. In consequence of this decision, many charitable institutions, especially hospitals and schools, which had before been held exempt,

¹ There may be some legal doubt whether the yearly renewal of this Act of Parliament is required in order to exempt the inhabitants, as such, from being rated. The provisions of 25 & 26 Vict. c. 103, s. 36, may be interpreted to mean that all exemptions existing at the date of that Act are to be regarded as permanent, and that a special Act would be required for their repeal, but not for their continuance. But Stephen (*ubi supra*, p. 66) seems to be of a different opinion.

² Against their being rateable, it was argued that, according to the Act of Elizabeth, only the occupier was liable, and that it was impossible to regard as an occupier a person who enjoys only a right in land distinct from the occupation.

³ 37 & 38 Vict. c. 54. See Lumley's edition (London, 1875). Lumley also gives an account of the new provisions which had been passed into law only after many fruitless attempts. The rating of mines in particular had been before Parliament since 1854, and could only be carried with difficulty.

⁴ 3 & 4 Will. IV. c. 30.

⁵ This exemption does not extend to buildings used by urban and other authorities for public purposes (4 & 5 Vict. c. 48). For instance, workhouses are rateable. Repeated attempts have been made in Parliament to secure the repeal of the exemption of Government property, but have always been opposed by the Government. Upon the occasion, however, of a proposal of this kind in 1873, it was agreed that the Government should annually pay to those parishes in which such property is situate a proportional contribution to the rates, and thus an alteration of the law would be rendered unnecessary.

⁶ *Jones v. The Mersey Dock and Harbour Co.*, 11 H. L. Cases, 443; 35 L. J. (N.S.) M. C. 10.

were rated if their income exceeded the costs of repairs, insurance, and other necessary expenses. A new Act,¹ however, authorizes the exemption of Sunday and ragged schools in which the instruction is gratuitous; but it is left to the Rating Authority to decide whether they shall be rated or not. The exemption is here permissive, not compulsory.

As regards the person to be rated, the Act of Elizabeth provides that this shall be the occupier, viz., the beneficial possessor of the rateable property (whether lessee, tenant, or owner); and it is thus immaterial whether he resides within the parish or not.

An exception to this rule, by the rating of the owner in place of the occupier, has, however, been made in the case of small tenements and those which are only rented or leased for a short time. This so-called system of compounding the rates was intended to facilitate the overseers' work of collection, which was often impossible when the rate had to be levied on persons who were tenants only for a brief period, and had perhaps left the rates of their previous dwelling unpaid. Under old statutes² and local Acts, this system of compounding the rate had been introduced in many districts in different fashions, which gave rise to much litigation; and eventually uniformity was secured by an Act of 1869, which has since been amended in some small points.³

The effect is that when the annual rateable value of any hereditament does not exceed £20 if situate in the metropolis, £13 if in Liverpool, £10 if in Manchester or Birmingham, or £8 elsewhere, the overseers may, subject to the control of the vestry, agree with the owner that he shall pay the poor rate, whether the hereditament is occupied or not, and may thereupon allow him a deduction not exceeding 25 per cent. The vestry may also order generally, in respect of all such hereditaments, that the owner shall be rated instead of the occupier, but in such case a deduction of 15 per cent. is allowed, which may be raised to 30 per cent. if the owner undertakes to be rated whether the dwelling is occupied or not. Payment of the rate by the owner is to be reckoned, so far as the right of voting is concerned, as payment in full by the occupier. The owner is required, under penalty, to give a list of the occupiers to the overseers, who are to insert the names of the occupiers in the rate-book; and if this is omitted the occupier is entitled to every qualification depending upon rating, on proving his right to have his name entered. If the owner liable to the rate is in arrear, notice is to be given to the occupier, who may be able to preserve his qualification by paying.⁴ The occupier is liable for

¹ 32 & 33 Vict. c. 40.

² 59 Geo. III. c. 12, s. 19; 13 & 14 Vict. c. 99. See above, p. 79.

³ 32 & 33 Vict. c. 41, amended by 41 & 42 Vict. c. 26, s. 14; 42 & 43 Vict. c. 10; 45 & 46 Vict. c. 20. See 'The Poor Rate Assessment and Collection Act, 1869,' by Hugh Owen, 7th ed., London, 1882.

⁴ Before the Act of 1869, the system of compounding the rates had been productive of much doubt and dispute as regards the Acts in which the franchise depends upon rating or upon the payment of rates, and the chief object of the new measure was to obviate this difficulty.

arrears in proportion to his rent. If the occupier in this case pays the rate, he may deduct the amount from his rent. He may do this at any time when the tenancy is for a shorter period than three months. In this case the rate is not to be levied on the tenant in respect of a period longer than three months.

It will be seen that the system of compounding the rates is entirely a question of collection.¹ It does not materially affect the general principle that the occupier is the person rateable.

Before describing the mode of collection, it will be convenient that we should discuss the principle of the poor rate.

SECTION III.

INCIDENCE OF THE POOR RATE.

It is impossible to class the poor rate in any ordinary category of imposts, since it differs according to locality, and is not of a uniform character. In towns, where it is in effect an addition to the house-rent, it may be classed as a tax on expenditure; in rural districts, where the dwelling only represents a small part of the rent paid by the occupier, and where such rent is generally determined by the produce of the land farmed, it must be looked upon as a tax on revenue.²

The poor rate must be regarded in these two aspects.

As a tax on revenue, it appears unfair, since it only applies to the returns from real property. There can be no justification for imposing on the rich farmer, who holds a little land at a low rental and invests the rest of his property in Consols or in commerce, a less rate than on the farmer whose whole capital is invested in his farm, and who has to live on the income which it produces after payment of rent and other expenses.

¹ Another point may be mentioned—that if the occupier is changed during the year, or if an occupier takes up his residence in a house not previously inhabited, the new occupier is to be entered in the rate-book, and (in the former case) the liability for the rate is to be divided proportionately between the old and the new occupier. This question was definitely settled by 45 & 46 Vict. c. 20.

² We may explain, for the benefit of those who are not acquainted with English matters, that in England the soil belongs to a comparatively small number of owners, and that the large proprietors let their land, or the houses erected upon it, for long terms. (The ordinary term of a ground lease in London is ninety-nine years.) The only exception is when the owner is himself the occupier. Our observations apply to the ordinary case, in which the owner and the occupier are different persons. It does not follow that the charges on the occupier fall upon the owner, and are to be regarded merely as a burthen on the property. Doubtless the rent obtainable by the owner would be higher if the rates were not payable by the occupier. But owing to the length of the term of lease, it is impossible to calculate the amount of rates that the occupier will have to pay in the course of years. The poor rate cannot therefore be regarded as affecting the owner in the way of a deduction from the rent. See 'Report on Parochial Assessment,' 1850, p. 15: "Any sudden or unexpected increase of the parochial expenditure which leads to the enhancement of the rate, which was not foreseen, would, until the contract between the landlord and the tenant was readjusted, fall entirely upon the tenant."

As a tax on expenditure, the poor rate may be looked upon more favourably. Stuart Mill characterizes a house tax (and as such the poor rate may be regarded) as one of the imposts least open to objection, mainly because the rent of a man's dwelling is the fairest index of his means.¹ To this rule Stuart Mill suggests two exceptions (which, however, he does not regard as material) ; (1) When the ratepayer has a large family, and is therefore obliged to expend a disproportionate amount of his income on house accommodation : and on the other hand, (2) When he is a miser. As to these two exceptional cases, he remarks that the former has no ground of complaint, as it has been his choice to have a large family, and as on general principles this inclination ought rather to be discouraged than strengthened. With regard to the miser, it is to be observed that by reducing his own expenditure he makes a larger capital available for remunerative production, and consequently increases the national resources, and therefore the funds from which taxes are paid.

It may be doubted whether these arguments, in answer to objections which may be raised against any tax on expenditure, are in themselves conclusive, and whether there are not other objections which ought to be held in view. Here we are only concerned with the question to what extent it is reasonable that the burthen of pauper relief should be thrown upon a house tax. We must admit that it appears fair that the cost of relieving the destitute should be borne by their fellow citizens according to the proportion in which the latter are in a position to incur expenditure for themselves.² But there is another consideration. Where the duty of relieving the destitute is regarded as a national obligation—and this is the case in England, where it is only devolved on local unions on the ground of convenience—the provision of the necessary means must be so contrived that the whole country shall contribute as far as possible on an equal footing. Is this secured by a house tax ?

House rent, on which the poor rate is levied, consists, as pointed out by Adam Smith, of two parts, viz., building-rent and ground-rent. If it were possible to separate these two, little could be said against a tax upon building-rent. The cost of house-building varies only to a small extent, and there would be a fairly uniform basis for the rate throughout the country. But the existence of the ground-rent alters the case. Not only does this vary in different parts of England, but also in different parts of the same district ; and the proportion which it bears to the house-rent varies also. In small places the building-

¹ Stuart Mill, 'Principles of Economy' (ed. 1883, Longmans), p. 501 : "It is one of the fairest and most unobjectionable of all taxes . . . no part of a person's expenditure is a better criterion for his means, or bears on the whole more nearly the same proportion to them."

² If a sufficient amount could be obtained from taxing luxuries, much might be said in favour of raising the funds for relief in this way. It is impossible to deny that those who allow themselves luxuries should to a corresponding extent contribute towards keeping their necessitous neighbours from starvation. The French plan of levying taxes for the relief of the poor on theatres, public performances, and other entertainments, is thoroughly justifiable from this point of view.

rent, in large places the ground-rent, constitutes the chief part of the house-rent. In this way the house-rent paid in district A for a mansion in the best position may not be higher than that for a modest residence in an inferior situation in district B. With regard to this difference in the basis of the rate, it cannot be urged that it rests with the particular individual to choose whether to live in A or in B, for a man's residence usually depends on his occupation, this being especially the case with officials. Even the choice of residence within the same district is often similarly restricted, particularly in London, where not only those engaged in business, but the majority of medical men, lawyers, and members of other professions, have houses in special quarters.¹

It is impossible to approve the plan of raising funds for what is recognized as a duty of the State, by means of a house tax, which, for the above reasons, is not uniform in different places, and by which the ratepayers are unequally affected. There is much to be said against the fairness of the poor rate, whether regarded as a tax on expenditure or as one on income. It must not be forgotten that this consideration has lately become of importance, although at the time of the introduction of the poor rate by the Act of Elizabeth there was no objection to a tax of the kind. The amount of personal property, as compared with realty, was then so small that its immunity from rating was of no great consequence; and moreover, the proportion of house rent which was really paid in respect of the site was unimportant, and varied little in different parts of the country. In both respects the development of trade and the rise of great towns have altered matters considerably. And while repeated attempts have been made, since 1834, to abolish inequalities in the poor law expenditure of different districts, and thus to take account of the national character of the obligation of relief, sufficient regard has not been paid to the question of making the incidence of the tax fair and uniform. On the contrary, the growing differences in the basis on which it is levied have been unheeded.

The unfairness of the impost has been further accentuated by the fact that a number of new charges have been placed on the poor rate,² and that it has been made the basis of contribution for other rates.³

Even those who think that the right principle is to rate real property through the occupier must admit that the constant increase of personal property throws some doubt on this system of raising means for the various national and general functions which the State delegates to local authorities. It may be doubted, however, whether an alteration in rating can be carried out without an alteration of the whole fiscal system of the country. This is, in fact, the reason why the objections frequently made against a system

¹ The fact that residence often depends on occupation exhibits the rate imposed on houses in a new light, viz., as a tax on profits.

² For instance, the expenses of registration, vaccination, police, &c.

³ Especially the county, highway, and sanitary rates.

of rating which allows personal property to escape¹ have not found expression in legislation.²

SECTION IV.

ASSESSMENT AND RATING.

We proceed to examine the poor rate in detail.³

The assessment is carried out by the overseers, under the direction of the Union Assessment Committee. The levying of the rate takes

¹ See especially the speech of Mr. W. E. Sackville West at the North Wales District Conference, 1881 (Rep., p. 243); also Chalmers's 'Local Government,' p. 10. Chalmers suggests, as the one reason in favour of the present system, that "it is always convenient to use existing machinery."

² After this paragraph was written, the questions with which it deals were discussed at length in Parliament. In the Registration Bill, introduced in connexion with the last Franchise Bill, the Government proposed that the expenses of registration of voters should, as previously, be borne on the local rates. No objection was raised as regards England, but as regards Ireland, an Irish member, Colonel Nolan, proposed to substitute a provision that the costs of registration should be charged upon the Consolidated Fund. After a debate, in which the motion was hotly opposed by Mr. Gladstone, it was carried on the 24th Ap. 1885. Subsequently, at a further stage of the English Bill, a motion was proposed by Sir Massey Lopes, and supported by the Conservatives and the Irish party, to the effect "that this House, while desirous of facilitating in every way the registration of voters, is of opinion that inasmuch as the preparation of the Register for Parliamentary elections is a matter of national rather than of local concern, the expenses connected therewith should not be imposed on ratepayers in counties and boroughs, and levied in respect of the occupation of a single description of property." The Government saw that there was no chance of carrying their original proposal, and proposed a compromise, by which a contribution of £20,000 was to be paid from the Consolidated Fund to local authorities, on account of the expenses of registration. In the sitting of 5th May, 1885, when both parties had issued urgent whips, the amendment of Sir Massey Lopes was rejected by 240 votes to 237, so that in a full House there was only a majority of three for the Government proposal. In the debate, Sir M. Lopes, Mr. Pell, and other members carried the discussion from the particular point at issue to a criticism of the system of local taxation. It was specially urged that by the imposition of national charges on local rates, personal property under the existing system escaped those charges. Even a subordinate member of the Government like Mr. H. Fowler admitted that the incidence of local taxation, as between real and personal property, was at the present moment most unjust and unfair, and that no part of our social and administrative system is more radically unsound than local taxation. Notwithstanding this admission, Mr. Fowler voted for the Government proposal, with the explanation that the whole question must be treated in a comprehensive measure, and not by dealing with the one comparatively unimportant point of the expenses for registration. It is to be hoped that after a decided majority has thus pronounced itself against the present system, such a "comprehensive measure" will be introduced without delay. On the occasion of the third reading on May 12th, the Government, in order to secure a larger majority, went further in their concessions, and raised the contribution from the Consolidated Fund to £40,000 for England, £15,000 for Ireland, and a corresponding sum for Scotland. Thereupon, the motion of Sir M. Lopes was rejected on the third reading by 280 votes to 258.

³ We restrict ourselves, as in the case of the Laws of Settlement and Removal, to an enumeration of the chief points. Detailed information will be found in Burn's 'Justice of the Peace,' p. 844, Archbold's 'Justice of the Peace,' p. 749; in Hugh Owen's 'Poor Rate Assessment and Collection Act, 1869,' 7th ed., London, 1882; Lumley's 'Union Assessment Committee Act, 1862 to 1880,' 10th ed., London, 1881; and Lumley's 'Rating Act, 1874,' London, 1875.

place when it has been allowed by the justices, after due notice by the overseers. Finally, it is the overseers who have to keep the accounts and books relating to receipts and payments in respect of the rate, when raised. Thus the whole poor rate mainly depends on the action of the overseers. The occupiers of this honorary post, however, are assisted in the main part of their duties by the paid assistant-overseers and collectors of poor rates, whose appointment is authorized by statute.

The amount of the rate is regulated by the probable expenditure ("competent sums of money"). The rate is thus levied in advance, and each year has to bear its charges separately. According to the Act of Elizabeth, the rate was to be raised "weekly or otherwise." In practice, it is usually raised either quarterly or half yearly. It is, however, expressly provided that the rate may be estimated for a longer period, up to one year, and thereupon it may be made payable by instalments.¹ If, however, the sum required is in excess of that raised by the original rate, an "additional rate" may be levied.

The allocation of the required contributions among the ratepayers is secured by assessment of the rateable value and an estimate of the sum (in shillings and pence), which is "a fair and equal pound rate."²

As regards this fixing of the basis of the rate and the persons to be rated, the overseers are under the control of the Union Assessment Committee.³ This committee is appointed by the board of guardians, and must consist of between six and twelve members, of whom at least one-third must be *ex-officio* guardians, *i.e.* justices. The quorum is one-third of the number of members, and not less than three. The duty of the committee is to settle a uniform and correct basis of assessment throughout the union.

The committee is not empowered to give directions to the overseers with regard to the assessment, but may order the preparation of new or supplemental valuation lists. For this purpose it may appoint or employ skilled surveyors or valuers, and must hear and determine objections. After deposit of the valuation lists, such objections may be made by any overseer who considers that his parish is aggrieved by the valuation list of any other parish within the union. An individual ratepayer may also, apart from his right of appeal, object to the valuation list on the ground of unfairness or incorrectness, or of the omission of any rateable hereditament; and the objection must be heard and determined by the committee. The valuation list, as settled after the objections have been determined, must be signed by three members, and be deposited in each parish. Thenceforward it is binding on the overseers, unless altered by the Union Assessment Committee or by judicial authority.

The assessment is based on the above-mentioned principle, that

¹ 32 & 33 Vict. c. 41, s. 15.

² 59 Geo. III. c. 12, s. 19.

³ 25 & 26 Vict. c. 103; 27 & 28 Vict. c. 39; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, ss. 38-40; 43 & 44 Vict. c. 7.

the poor rate shall be raised on the net annual value of visible profitable property situated in the parish. The "net annual value" is defined as "the rent at which the same might reasonably be expected to let from year to year free of all usual tenant's rates and taxes and tithe commutation rent-charge, if any, and deducting therefrom the probable average annual cost of the repairs, insurance, and other expenses, if any, necessary to maintain them in a state to command such rent."¹ With regard to the amount of deduction, there are great differences. A number of assessment committees have adopted fixed scales for the different classes of property (agricultural, manufacturing, and residential), but these, though reasonable on the whole, may be unfair in individual cases, and have given rise to many appeals. For the metropolis a scale of the maximum deductions allowed has been prescribed by statute as regards the chief descriptions of property.²

For London, there are a number of special enactments, of which the general tendency is to secure the uniform assessment of all rateable property within the metropolitan area.³ With this object, apart from proceedings before the petty sessions of the several divisions, any parish may appeal against the rating of any other parish to the general assessment sessions, which consists of justices appointed by the Courts of general or quarter sessions of Middlesex, Surrey, and Kent, and by the Court of the mayor and aldermen of the City of London.

The overseers have to make the rate in accordance with the valuation list, in the prescribed form. This must be submitted to two justices in order that they may "allow" the rate. The rate is

¹ 6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 96, s. 1. Besides this "rateable value" should be mentioned the "gross estimated rental" (gross value), which is equivalent to the above rent *without* deduction of the probable annual cost of repairs, &c. (the so-called "rack rent," 25 & 26 Vict. c. 103, s. 15). In the Metropolitan Valuation Act (32 & 33 Vict. c. 67, s. 4) the "gross value" is defined as "the annual rent which a tenant might reasonably be expected, taking one year with another, to pay for a hereditament, if the tenant undertook to pay all usual tenant's rates and taxes, and tithe commutation rent-charge, if any, and if the landlord undertook to bear the cost of the repairs and insurance and the other expenses, if any, necessary to maintain the hereditament in a state to command that rent." All these definitions have given rise to a large number of disputes. See 3rd Report of the Poor Law Commissioners, p. 92, and 2nd Report of the Poor Law Board, p. 41, and the Commentaries, already quoted, by Owen and Lumley.

² See Abstract of the Scale of Deduction for different counties (Parl. Paper, 1864, No. 116, vol. lxvi); and for the respective boroughs in the report upon electoral statistics, Parl. Paper, 1866, No. 524, vol. lix. As regards the metropolis, see 32 & 33 Vict. c. 67, s. 52, and schedule III. We need not enter into further details as to this question of rating. We may point out however that difficulties have arisen as to the above provisions for the assessment of canals, railways, and other undertakings which are not usually leased. The judicial decisions on the points raised are very numerous. As regards railways, where the assessment is full of difficulties, a settlement is often arrived at, apart from judicial decisions, by private agreement, as to the amount between the railway company and the parish concerned. For details, see Burn (*ubi supra*), p. 971 (Railways), p. 1008 (Waterworks), and p. 943 (Canals).

³ Valuation (Metropolis) Act, 1869, 32 & 33 Vict. c. 67.

"deemed to be made on the day when it is allowed by the justices."¹ It is not valid unless notice of it is posted by one of the overseers on the following Sunday on the church doors, or on some other "public and conspicuous place or situation in the parish."² Alterations in the rate can only be made by the Union Assessment Committee or by judicial decision given on appeal. To this rule there is only one exception. If any person assessed is shown to be unable on account of poverty to pay the rate, the justices in petty session are empowered, with the consent of the overseers, to excuse such person from payment, and to strike out his name from the rate.³

An appeal against the assessment to the poor rate may be made to the special or the quarter sessions. The appeal to special sessions was introduced in 1836.⁴

In every petty sessional division the justices are to hold at least four special sessions in every year for hearing appeals against the rates, and notice thereof is to be posted on the church doors. Any ratepayer may, after giving notice in writing of his intention, object to the rate "on the ground of inequality, unfairness, or incorrectness in the valuation of any hereditaments included therein."⁵ The justices, if they consider the objections valid, may either amend or quash the rate. Their decision is final unless within fourteen days notice is given of appeal to the quarter sessions.

Objections to the rate may also be brought before the quarter sessions without previous recourse to the special sessions. The quarter sessions have the wider power, since they may entertain objections to the effect that any person should be put on or left out of the rate, or that any assessment to the rate is erroneous or illegal (*e.g.* that the rate has not been made in the proper form, or by the proper persons, or is not for legal objects). The quarter sessions may confirm, amend, or quash the rate.⁶ They may, if an important question of law or of principle arises, state a case for the decision of the High Court, which has also the power, in urgent cases, of requiring questions in dispute to be brought before it on *certiorari*.

Not only may the quarter sessions entertain objections from individual ratepayers, but they are also empowered, under the Act of 1862, to decide appeals from overseers who have reason to think that their parish is aggrieved by its own excessive valuation, or by the unfairly low valuation of other parishes within the union.⁷

¹ The action of the justices is here purely formal. If the rates are made in the prescribed form, the justices cannot refuse their signatures.

² 45 & 46 Vict. c. 20. Every ratepayer may inspect the rate and take copies or extracts without charge. 17 Geo. II. c. 3, s. 2, and 6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 96, s. 5.

³ 54 Geo. III. c. 170, s. 11.

⁴ 6 & 7 Will. IV. c. 96, ss. 6 and 7.

⁵ As already stated, ratepayers may in the first instance submit objections on these grounds for determination by the Assessment Committee. 25 & 26 Vict. c. 103, ss. 18-19.

⁶ Any excess may be applied for purposes of a future rate (41 Geo. III. c. 23), but in any case of entire exemption the rates paid have to be refunded.

⁷ 25 & 26 Vict. c. 103, s. 32. Special provisions as to the metropolis are contained in 32 & 33 Vict. c. 67.

In order thus to appeal, the overseers must obtain the consent of a vestry specially summoned for the purpose. The quarter sessions may require the preparation of a new valuation list for the particular parish or for the entire union.

The levy of the rate is the duty of the overseers ; but this branch of their functions is now ordinarily undertaken by the paid collectors of rates. If the rate is not paid, a distress is levied. The person in default must be summoned before two justices, who, if they think fit, may issue a warrant of distress for the seizure and sale of goods to the amount of the rate in arrear, and of the costs incurred. In default of sufficient goods and chattels to satisfy the distraint, the person against whom it is levied may be committed to gaol by two justices, for a period not exceeding three months.¹ If the seizure is made illegally, an action of replevin lies ; but not as regards merely formal errors in the rate or the warrant.

The overseers have to hold the amounts collected, and to pay the sums required for the purposes of the common fund of the union on receiving a "contribution order" from the guardians.² The overseers have to insert particulars of all receipts, payments, and arrears in the prescribed books (rate book, and book of receipts and payments). They must be balanced half-yearly, on 25th of March and 29th of September, and be open to the inspection of the ratepayers at least seven days before the audit.³

¹ 43 Eliz. c. 2, s. 3 ; 12 Vict. c. 14, s. 3.

² As to the form of Contribution Order, see the Order of the Poor Law Board of 26th Feb. 1866 (Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 347). As regards the procedure in the event of non-compliance with such order on the part of the overseers, see 2 & 3 Vict. c. 84, s. 1 ; 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 63 ; 12 & 13 Vict. c. 103, s. 7.

³ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 33 ; 42 Vict. c. 6, s. 3. See Duties of Overseers Order of 22nd April, 1842, and General Order for Accounts of 14th Jan. 1867, Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' pp. 901 and 353. The forms of Rate Book, Book of Receipts and Payments, and half-yearly balance sheet, are printed by Glen, p. 404.

CHAPTER III.

POOR LAW ADMINISTRATION.

SECTION I.

LOCAL ORGANIZATION.

IN the preceding chapter we have had to express some doubts as to the wisdom of part of the English Poor Law, especially as regards the incidence of rating; but we come now to a matter in which the English system is a model one. The local administration is the subject in which the legislature has experimented most, and in which, in the course of time, the greatest changes have been made. After persistent attempts, the legislature has succeeded in creating an organization which affords full security that those principles of relief which are admittedly reasonable shall be carried into practical effect. This result is obtained by the co-operation of paid and honorary officials in the local administration, and by the establishment of a Central Board, which not only takes care that uniform principles shall be rigidly adhered to, but also helps and stimulates the entire machinery of relief. It has been successful, to quote Kries, in blending with the centralization necessary in the interests of administrative uniformity the independence of local administration necessary for the healthy life of the community.

The Central Board lays down the general principles which are to be carried out. It possesses, in its inspectors and auditors, suitable agents for superintending their application; and through audit, and through its power to approve or disallow expenditure, it has the means of compelling their observance.

The guardians have an absolute discretion in applying enactments and principles to the particular case, and are free to determine, in each instance, whether relief shall be given, as well as how it shall be given. They have therefore, ample scope for independent action, and are not fettered in the exercise of their powers. In the local administration, it is the honorary members with whom the decision rests, and who have to supervise the paid officers whom they have chosen. It is the paid officers who, by laborious efforts, prepare the materials for the decision, who have to carry it out, and who may be dismissed by the Central Board for any delay or neglect in the performance of their duties.

Paid officers thus subject to the control of the Central Board con-

stituted in 1883 an army of nearly 19,000 persons, over whom were 28,099 guardians as the unpaid functionaries immediately responsible for the poor law administration.¹ While the guardians are a changing body, and thus specially represent local interests, the paid officers are the permanent agents responsible for carrying out the administration with due regard to the law and the regulations. They are, to a certain extent, bound up with local interests as they are chosen by the guardians; but, on the other hand, they are independent of the

¹ See 13th Report of the L. G. B., p. 328, and L. G. Manual of 1885, p. 83. Of the guardians enumerated, 20,687 were elected, and 7,412 *ex-officio*. Among the number of paid officers are not included the subordinate officials whose appointments do not come under the Central Board. The following table relates to the year 1883.

OFFICE.	Number of Paid Officers.*	
	In the Metropolis.	In the Provinces.
Clerk.	40	623
Assistant Clerk	90	104
Treasurer	40	617
WORKHOUSE, INFIRMARY, ASYLUM, OR SCHOOL :—		
Chaplain	84	494
Medical Officer (including Assistant Medical Officer)	118	694
Dispenser	38	13
Master, Steward, or Superintendent	86	665
Matron	88	676
Schoolmaster	61	242
Schoolmistress	63	460
Porter	74	514
Nurse or Attendant on Lunatics	1,016	1,276
Industrial Trainer	174	290
Superintendent of Labour	57	102
Superintendent of Vagrants	47	40
DISTRICT :—		
Medical Officer	154	3,368
Dispenser	48	25
Relieving Officer	140	1,400
Assistant Relieving Officer	29	58
Collector of the Guardians	34	829
Assistant Overseer appointed under the Board's Orders . . . . .	...	280
Collector of Poor Rates	45	1,815
Other Officers and Assistants . . . . .	...	1,622

* Owing to several officers holding more than one appointment, and to a continual change taking place, this number rather represents so many *offices* than individual officers.

In 1883 the sum of £1,117,705 was spent on salaries and pensions. This item is permanent, and of late years has much increased. In 1874 it was £909,231, in 1879 it was £1,023,197, and has since increased by nearly £100,000. See the 13th Annual Report, p. 181. [The remuneration of Collectors of Poor Rates is not included in this amount.—Tr.]

guardians, because when once they are appointed, their continuance in office and their remuneration do not depend on the guardians, but on the Central Board. It is the Central Board which confirms the appointments made by the guardians, has the power of fixing or adjusting the officers' salaries, and alone can dismiss them without appeal. The guardians have only the power of suspending officers in default, and it is left to the Central Board finally to dismiss them or to reinstate them.¹ Every additional grant to a paid officer also requires the approval of the Board. But the Board ordinarily deals with these officials only at the instance of the guardians, or at any rate only after previously hearing them. Thus the paid officer is supervised in the performance of his duties by the guardians, but is nevertheless subject to the Central Board. He is thus likely to exert himself to fulfil the requirements of the latter, and to do nothing to deserve its censure. This division of authority as regards the appointment and dismissal of officers between the Central Board and the guardians has been a very valuable means of obtaining efficient officers who co-operate with the local representatives, but are free from that subservience to local interests which is disadvantageous to the community.²

The duties of paid officers are prescribed in detail by orders of the Central Board.³ Almost every one has to keep a special register or other book, so that both the guardians, who are his immediate

¹ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 46, and the General Consolidated Order of July 24th, 1847, Articles 153-197.

² I was personally informed by Mr. Sendall, Assistant Secretary of the Local Government Board, that these provisions as to the appointment, payment, and dismissal of officers are generally recognized as reasonable, and seldom give rise to serious differences of opinion between the Board and the guardians. As a rule, the Board approves the choice of the guardians unless there is some special reason to the contrary. So, too, with regard to the power of dismissal, which is never exercised without a searching enquiry on the part of the inspector who is acquainted with the local circumstances. There seems to be no danger of any abuse of the power. Differences of opinion most frequently arise with regard to the salaries, as to which the guardians are often inclined to be more liberal than the Board considers proper. The number of enforced resignations in 1883 amounted to 258, against 200 in 1882. Of these 110 were nurses and workhouse porters, the remainder relating to other classes of officials, including twenty-nine collectors of poor rates.

³ The General Consolidated Order (Articles 201-217) prescribes the duties of the following thirteen classes of paid officers; Clerk to the Guardians, Treasurer of the Union, Medical Officer of the Workhouse, District Medical Officer, Master of the Workhouse, Matron of the Workhouse, Chaplain, Schoolmaster, Schoolmistress, Nurse, Porter, Relieving Officer, Superintendent of Outdoor Labour. Under subsequent orders there are many additions, *e.g.*, as to Collectors of the Guardians, the General Order of October 7, 1865. As a general rule the principle is laid down that all officers are to perform their duties in person, and not by deputy; but in the case of the medical officer some delegation of duties is provided for, as he is allowed to nominate a deputy to the guardians on his appointment (Articles 198-200, Gen. Cons. Order). If an officer is kept from duty by sickness, accident, or other sufficient reason, the guardians may appoint a paid substitute, but must report the fact to the Central Board. Another general provision is that the guardians may require all paid officers to give security. The Treasurer, the Master and Matron of the Workhouse, the Collector, the Relieving Officer, and the clerk must give a bond with two sureties (Articles 184-186). With regard to the securities of collectors and assistant overseers, a special order was issued on Feb. 2nd, 1872 (Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 595).

employers, and the Local Government Board, can satisfy themselves as to the way in which his work is done.

Measures are thus taken to secure due performance of duty on the part of the paid officers, and to subject them to adequate control ; and, on the other hand, their position is an assured one, and is so much sought after, that suitable candidates are never lacking. The great attraction is that the appointments are ordinarily for life. The office is only vacated by death, lunacy, resignation or dismissal.¹ Moreover, under recent legislation, the guardians are empowered, with the approval of the Central Board, to give pensions to officers who have served not less than twenty years, and who are over sixty years of age.² The pension is not to amount to more than two-thirds of the remuneration of the officer at the time of his superannuation. It is payable as long as he lives, unless he loses a right to it by being convicted of crime.

The position and functions of the more important paid officers will be described presently. Here it need only be said that as a rule the candidate must be at least twenty-one years old, and able to read and write, and that each person appointed is bound under penalty to give at least a month's notice before resigning his office.³

It will be seen from the above that the Boards who administer poor law relief consist of two separate classes.

1. The Central Board with its staff. Special mention must be made of the inspectors and auditors.

2. The local authorities, as regards whom a distinction must be drawn between

- (a) The unpaid functionaries, viz., the guardians and overseers.

- (b) The paid officers, chief of whom are the clerk, the relieving officer, and the workhouse officials, especially the master.

Next comes into consideration another class of persons who belong to neither of these categories, and whose functions we therefore proceed to state in the first instance, namely, the magistrates.

In the first part of this work we have explained how, until the year 1834, the entire business of relief was in the hands of the justices, or at any rate was directed by them. According to the Act of Elizabeth, the current administration had to be carried on with the approval of two or more justices. The accounts had to be

¹ The power of dismissal by the guardians without the assent of the Central Board is limited to persons performing duties of a menial character (porters, nurses, assistants, servants, &c.), and in their cases the ground of dismissal has to be reported to the Central Board. A dismissed officer cannot be re-appointed in any other district without the express consent of the Local Government Board. 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 48, and G. C. O., Art. 188.

² 27 & 28 Vict. c. 42 ; 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113, ss. 1-3 ; 30 Vict. c. 6, s. 76 ; 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, ss. 18 and 20 ; 33 & 34 Vict. c. 23, s. 2, and c. 94. See the circular of the Local Government Board of Dec. 14th, 1880, as to the principles which are to regulate superannuation (Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 165). The scale of pensions to be granted corresponds generally with that in force in the Civil Service. See also 29 Vict. c. 31.

³ Articles 162-167 of Gen. Cons. Order.

audited by the justices, who thus had control over the proceedings of the overseers.

Up to the year 1834, the legislature had steadily increased the powers of the magistrates, and the whole relief system was directed by them. We have stated above (p. 33) the grounds upon which the Act of 1834 materially diminished these powers, and altered the whole position of the justices in relation to the poor law. We need here only enumerate the existing powers of the justices, which are as follows:—¹

1. As regards actual relief, the justices still possess

(a) The power of ordering, in cases of urgency, relief in kind (so far only as regards absolute necessities), or in medicine and medical attendance. It is the primary duty of the overseers to give relief in cases of urgency. If this is refused by the overseers, it may be ordered by any justice, and the overseers are required to comply with this order under a penalty of £5.²

(b) The power of *two* justices usually acting for the particular district to order relief outside the workhouse in the case of entire inability to work, owing to age or infirmity. But in the order it is necessary that such inability should be certified by one of the justices of his own knowledge.³

2. As regards supervision of the local administration, the justices have still the right at any time to inspect the workhouses in order to satisfy themselves whether the lawful orders and regulations of the Central Board are duly observed. If any infringement is discovered, the person offending is to be summoned before two justices, who may inflict penalties after due enquiry.⁴

3. With regard to the poor rate, the justices are concerned to the extent that

(a) Overseers must be appointed by two justices of the county.⁵

(b) Each poor rate has to be allowed by two justices before becoming valid.⁶ But, as already mentioned (p. 157), this has become a mere formality.

4. In their judicial capacity the justices are concerned with the poor law as follows:—

(a) As regards objections to the poor rate and claims for exemption (pp. 156 and 157).

(b) As regards orders of removal (p. 118).

(c) As regards the recovery of contributions from relations, and proceedings for the repayment of relief granted (p. 110).

¹ We may here repeat that in this account of the poor law system as it now exists, we entirely omit reference to the few local bodies who still administer relief under local Acts. See above, p. 122, note 1. We are speaking in the text only of poor law administration as carried out under the Act of 1834.

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 54.

³ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 27.

⁴ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 43; 30 Geo. III. c. 49; 12 Vict. c. 13, s. 8.

⁵ 43 Eliz. c. 2, s. 1; 59 Geo. III. c. 12, s. 7.

⁶ 43 Eliz. c. 2, s. 1; 12 & 13 Vict. c. 64.

Though the former powers of the justices have thus been considerably curtailed, it must not be forgotten that their share in poor law administration is still preserved by the fact that they are *ex-officio* guardians.¹ If the justices attend the meetings of the Board of Guardians (though this is rather the exception than the rule), their social position enables them still to exercise much influence on the administration.

We now proceed to discuss the different bodies by which the poor law system is administered, first taking the Central Board, which, through its position and its powers, gives a special character to the whole organization.

SECTION II.

THE CENTRAL AUTHORITY.

The most important and most difficult step in the reform of the poor law in 1834 was the establishment of a Central Board, invested with extensive powers. The new Board, consisting of three Poor Law Commissioners, appointed by the king, for England and Wales, had, in the first place, to create a new poor law organization. When single parishes were too small for proper administration, it was necessary to unite them into unions, for which a Board of Guardians had to be elected under the Commissioners' regulations, and a workhouse in common had to be established. The Commissioners were further empowered to require the appointment of paid officers for these unions, and to prescribe their duties and remuneration. When the agency for carrying out the reform was thus created, another function of the Commissioners came into play. The Act had given them the duty of issuing orders and regulations, suited to each district, for the care and maintenance of the poor, and in this way they controlled the local administration of relief. A quasi-legislative power was given them. They were to issue such orders in accordance with the existing Acts as they considered required by circumstances of time or place. In order further to secure the observance of the prescribed principles in the respective unions, the Commissioners were invested with extensive rights of control over the local administration, with far-reaching powers as regards the paid officers, and with ample authority to deal with any disregard of the regulations on the part of the guardians.

The whole poor law system was thus placed under the direction and control of the Poor Law Commissioners,² who regarded it as an essential part of their duties to induce the guardians by information and advice to effect improvements in the system, or to second their efforts in this direction.

There are five main heads under which the numerous functions of the Central Board may be classified at the present time, though in the course of years the relative importance of particular branches has altered.

¹ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 38.

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 15.

They are as follows :—

1. The organization of poor law authorities.
2. The issue of orders and regulations as a supplement to legislation.
3. The supervision of current administration.
4. An appellate jurisdiction.
5. The preparation for improvements in the poor law by the collection of information and experience, and by the publication and circulation throughout the country of the materials thus accumulated.

The two first-named functions of course mainly occupied the Central Board in the early days of the poor law, while now, when reform has been accomplished, the Board is more occupied with the latter. Legislation has been constantly extending these functions, and has especially enlarged the powers of the Board as a kind of Court of Appeal.

In the course of time, the constitution of the Central Board and its position in the general machinery of the poor law have also altered, as has been explained in the first part of this book.

The Poor Law Commissioners were appointed for a limited time, and were only indirectly represented in Parliament by the Home Secretary. In 1847,¹ the so-called Poor Law Board was introduced as the Central Department in the general organization of the English Poor Law administration. It was made an independent Board under a President sitting in Parliament, and receiving a ministerial salary of the second class. In 1867,² the new Board was in this shape constituted a permanent department, of which the continued existence was no longer dependent on the renewal of its functions by Parliament. In 1871,³ the Poor Law Board was united with the Medical Department of the Privy Council Office and the Local Government branch of the Home Office under the name of the Local Government Board.

As a part of the general organization therefore we have to describe the Local Government Board. Within that board, so far as a separation of particular departments is possible, we have only to regard its poor law division.

The Local Government Board consists of a president appointed by the Queen and the following *ex-officio* members: the Lord President of the Council, the principal Secretaries of State, the Lord Privy Seal, and the Chancellor of the Exchequer. In practice, however, it is no more a board than is the Board of Trade. The functions of the *ex-officio* members are purely formal. The board has never met. The president, with his secretaries, has the sole responsibility for the whole of the current administration. This is indeed recognized by law. It is provided that all orders and regulations of the Local Government Board shall be valid if signed by the president *or* by one of the *ex-officio* members, and countersigned by a secretary or assistant-secretary of the board. Every

¹ 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109.

² 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106.

³ 34 & 35 Vict. c. 70.

other act or instrument of the Board requires for its formal authentication only the signature of the president or of one of the secretaries or assistant secretaries, so far as the latter are authorized by general order.¹ As a matter of fact it is the president alone who is entrusted with the extensive powers of the Central Board.²

The Parliamentary responsibility for the exercise of these powers is secured by the fact that the President or Parliamentary Secretary has to represent the Board when the Estimates are brought before Parliament, and an opportunity is afforded for the discussion of the annual reports.³ Apart from this general control, the Local Government Board, as regards the orders issued by it, is governed by special enactments, to which we shall refer in treating of its special functions.

The President of the Local Government Board receives the small salary of £2,000. There is no legal requirement that the President should have a seat in the Cabinet; this depends on personal considerations.⁴ Besides the President there are two secretaries, of whom one is the Parliamentary and the other the Permanent Secretary. Each receives a salary of £1,500.⁵ The Parliamentary Secretary, like the President, vacates his appointment on a change of ministry, while the Permanent Secretary is the constant element in the Board, and neither has, nor can have, any relation with politics. The Central Board has also a legal adviser and four assistant secretaries, with salaries from £950 to £1,100. There are seventeen general inspectors, three or four assistant general inspectors, four inspectors of workhouse schools, one inspector of audits, and one inspector for local loans, with salaries varying from £500 to £1,000. There are also thirty-seven district auditors, with varying salaries, averaging about £650 a-piece. The auditor in the metropolis receives £1,100.⁶

¹ 34 & 35 Vict. c. 70, s. 5.

² The Presidents of the Local Government Board have hitherto always been members of the Lower House, but there is no reason why a peer should not hold this office. The representation of the Board in the Lower House would then fall to the Parliamentary Secretary.

³ The Poor Law Commissioners had to report at least yearly to the Home Secretary. Since 1847 the Annual Reports have been addressed to the Queen, and since 1872 they have not been confined to the poor law. The Annual Report is now divided into three separate parts:

- i. The administration of the law relating to the relief of the poor.
- ii. The administration of the laws affecting local government, and the public health.
- iii. Local taxation and valuation.

The total number of Annual Reports of the Poor Law Commissioners was fourteen. The Poor Law Board issued twenty-five, and the Local Government Board has issued one annually since its constitution, in 1871.

⁴ As a matter of fact most of the Presidents have had seats in the Cabinet, though Mr. Sclater Booth, in the last ministry of Lord Beaconsfield, was not a Cabinet Minister. [Nor was Mr. Balfour a Cabinet Minister when he held this office, nor Mr. Ritchie on his first appointment. Tr.]

⁵ [Now £1,200 in the case of the Parliamentary Secretary. Tr.]

⁶ Since 1879 the payment of auditors has been entirely borne by the State.

We now proceed to the functions of the Central Board as regards the different matters above enumerated.

I. The Board's powers with regard to organization have, as already stated,¹ been much extended by recent legislation, and it has now practically a free hand as regards the boundaries of unions as well as their constitution and dissolution. It can alter the areas of existing unions or dissolve them and create new ones, and may form outlying parts of parishes into independent unions, or add them to other neighbouring unions. As regards measures of this kind, the Central Board is only restricted by the fact that, in cases under the Divided Parishes Acts, if a tenth of the ratepayers object its order must be provisional, and requires the approval of Parliament. Since 1879 the Board has also been empowered to combine several unions for any object connected with the Poor Law if it considers this course to be for general or local advantage. Though the Board is very guarded in making use of these powers, and proceeds with great tenderness towards the numerous local interests involved, it has absolute power in settling the limits of Poor Law areas.²

The powers of the Board as regards poor law organization also extend to the appointment of paid officers. Under the Act of 1834 the Board may require the guardians to appoint such paid officers as it shall think necessary for carrying out the requirements of the law. It may fix the qualifications of candidates, their duties, their salaries, and the security to be given by them. In pursuance of this enactment the Board has issued in the General Consolidated Order of July 24th, 1847,³ the general regulations already mentioned as to thirteen classes of paid officers. The Board may dispense with these general provisions in individual cases. By its power of fixing or approving salaries, and of rejecting or dismissing persons chosen by the guardians, it has a paramount influence as regards all the more important appointments under the poor law. But in this respect, too, it uses its powers very cautiously,⁴ though their existence gives the Board much influence on the guardians with regard to the appointment of officers.⁵

¹ See above, p. 84, also the following Acts, 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61; 42 & 43 Vict. c. 54; 45 & 46 Vict. c. 58.

² See the speech of the ex-president to the Local Government Board, Mr. Sclater Booth, at the Social Science Congress at Southampton, 1882. *Journal of the London Statistical Society*, vol. xlv., p. 549.

³ Arts. 152-217.

⁴ See 22nd Annual Report of Poor Law Board, p. lxiii., from which it may be inferred that in effect the Central Board, as a general rule, approves the proposals of guardians as to the appointment and payment of officers unless there are very special reasons to the contrary, because the guardians are the best judges of the personal fitness of candidates as well as of the amount of remuneration which persons in similar positions obtain in the locality.

⁵ In addition to the powers of the Board already mentioned, it possesses that of controlling the erection, enlargement, or alteration of workhouses. The Board has to obtain the consent of a majority of the guardians, or of the owners and ratepayers. It is only when the cost of enlargement or alteration is not more than one-tenth of the average amount of the yearly poor rate that this approval can be

II. A second branch of the functions of the Central Board consists in supplementing existing statutes by its orders and regulations. The legislature, instead of laying down stringent and precise requirements by statute, has, in many instances, preferred to entrust the Central Board with the power of issuing, at its discretion, such special regulations as may be suitable to the circumstances of the time or place. In this way it was thought that the differing local conditions which make a uniform administration of the poor law difficult, if not impossible, might be satisfactorily dealt with. At the same time the slow and cautious introduction of novelties was made possible, and the danger involved in sudden and radical alterations was avoided.¹ This consideration has found expression in the provisions of the Act of 1834 with regard to outdoor relief. It is there stated that—

“Whereas difficulty may arise in case any immediate and universal remedy is attempted to be applied in the matters aforesaid, . . . it shall be lawful for the said commissioners by such rules, orders, or regulations as they may think fit, to declare to what extent and for what period, the relief to be given to able-bodied persons in any particular parish or union may be administered out of the work-house.”²

The ground here assigned as justification for a special provision with regard to outdoor relief has been the key-note of the Board's action in exercising the power of making rules, orders, and regulations in its discretion, in order to carry out the statutes, and also in repealing or altering the regulations issued.³ The only limit imposed on the Central Board in the matter is, that it shall not interfere in any individual case of relief by the issue or alteration of such regulations.⁴

The regulations issued by the Central Board may be divided into

dispensed with : 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 23 ; 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113, s. 8 ; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 8. With regard to the metropolis, the powers are more extensive, 33 & 34 Vict. c. 18, s. 1.

¹ Nicholls, *ut supra*, vol. ii., p. 457, recognises the value of this power in the following true words : “Without it the administration of relief under the continually varying circumstances of the times could not be well and efficiently conducted, but would be apt to occasion undue hardship and suffering to the poor, or to become lax, indiscriminating and burthensome to the ratepayer.”

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 52.

³ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 15, specifies a number of branches of relief as to which the commissioners are empowered to prescribe regulations, “from time to time as they shall see occasion to make and issue all such rules, orders, and regulations for the management of the poor, for the government of workhouses and the education of the children therein,” &c., and concludes with the *clausula generalis*, “and for carrying this Act into execution in all other respects as they shall think proper.”

⁴ Besides these general limits there are two special ones, viz. :

- a. No regulation may require the inmate of a workhouse to attend a religious service contrary to his principles, nor may pauper children be educated in any religious creed other than their own : 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 19.
- b. If old married couples above the age of sixty years are received into a workhouse, they must not be compelled to live apart : 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, s. 23. See the modification in 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 10.

two classes: general rules and orders, and particular orders. A general order is one applicable to more than a single union, with the exception of orders which relate to the constitution or dissolution of unions, and which thus concern questions of organization rather than of administration.¹

With regard to these general orders there are a number of special provisions.² Such orders are to be published in the *London Gazette*, and to be forthwith laid before both Houses of Parliament. Her Majesty, by and with the advice of her Privy Council, may at any time disallow a general order in whole or in part. Such disallowance, however, does not affect the validity of any action previously taken under the order.³

A further guarantee for the legality of the orders of the Board⁴ consists in the fact that any person interested may, on entering into a recognizance for £50, after previous notice to the Board, obtain a decision of the Queen's Bench Division as to the validity of such rules, orders, and regulations by writ of *certiorari*. If the High Court quashes the order as being *ultra vires* on the part of the Board, the judgment is to be notified in all unions or parishes affected by the order, which thereupon becomes null and void.⁵ But it is worthy of notice that the High Court has only to do with the question of legality, not with that of expediency;⁶ and that, owing to the extent of the powers entrusted to the Central Board, this provision is of little effect in practice. The power of issuing orders extends, as already stated, over the whole province of the poor law. Provided that the orders are restricted within these limits, and do not contain provisions contrary to the common law, they are unassailable.

In addition to the general authority to issue orders under the Act of 1834, such power is given by statute in respect of a number of specified subjects.

This is especially the case as regards the adjustment of the boundaries of unions, as to which a number of orders have been issued. Formerly the Central Board had to obtain the assent of the persons interested, while now, as already stated, those interested can only oppose the orders in Parliament.

¹ 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, s. 15; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 1. There is a further exception that all or any certain orders relating to several or all the unions of the metropolis are not to be regarded as general orders. The metropolis is here treated as one district: 30 Vict. c. 6, s. 4.

² 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 1; 35 & 36 Vict. c. 79, s. 48; 38 & 39 Vict. c. 55.

³ 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, s. 17.

⁴ The orders come into force on a copy being sent to the overseers, guardians, and clerks to the magistrates. The seal of the Board must be affixed. Copies of the order are legal evidence fourteen days after its appearance, if printed by the Queen's printers: 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 20; 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 71; 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, s. 14.

⁵ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, ss. 105-108.

⁶ See Frewin and Lewis (4 M. and C. 249) where it was laid down that "the Court will not interfere to see whether any alteration or regulation which they (the Commissioners) may direct is good or bad, but if they are departing from that power which the law has vested in them."

So, too, the Central Board may, by a Provisional Order, alter or repeal local Acts under which the poor law administration is carried out in particular places in a manner differing from the ordinary system. Formerly it was necessary to obtain the consent of those interested before issuing such orders.¹

The chief province for the exercise of the powers of the Central Board as regards the issue of orders is that of the administration of relief. The General Consolidated Order of 24th July, 1847, is almost more important in practice than the Act of 1834 itself. Next to it in importance are the two Orders with regard to outdoor relief (Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order of December 21st, 1844, and Outdoor Relief Regulation Order of December 14th, 1852), also the General Order for Accounts of January 14th, 1867, and the Order as to the Election of Guardians of February 14th, 1877.

III. As regards the powers of supervision of the Central Board, we may say that it exercises an administrative as well as a financial control over the guardians. In both respects this control is made operative by the special institutions of inspection and audit, by which a permanent relation between the local and the central authority is established and maintained.

The inspector periodically attends the meetings of the guardians of his district in order to satisfy himself that the acts and orders are duly carried out. He also periodically inspects the workhouses. All complaints against the guardians pass through his hands, and he advises the Central Board as to them. He also deals with all applications of the guardians whether with regard to measures which they can only adopt with the consent of the Central Board (*e.g.* for the emigration of paupers), or for approval of deviations from the existing regulations (*e.g.* as regards the prohibition of outdoor relief to the able-bodied). While the inspector is thus the medium for administrative control,² the auditor deals with the finance. All the expenditure of the guardians has to come under his audit. He determines not only whether the charges are lawful, but also whether they are reasonable, and thus controls the entire finance of the guardians.

Besides this control of current expenditure, it is with the Central Board that the decision rests whether charges shall be thrown on future generations by raising loans, and if so, to what extent, in what way, and under what conditions. The Central Board possesses ample powers to secure the execution of its orders. The auditor disallows illegal expenses, and makes the persons concerned personally

¹ 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 2; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, ss. 3-4; 42 & 43 Vict. c. 54.

² The Central Board may, apart from the reports of Inspectors take cognizance of the circumstances of particular unions. For this purpose it has the power of summoning all persons who take part in poor law administration, and of requiring from them evidence on oath as to the administration of the poor law, either on general or particular points. So too it can require information as to the property of charitable foundations and other institutions for the poor, 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 85; 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, ss. 11, 12, and 26.

responsible for them. Every local officer who is guilty of disobeying a rule, order, or regulation of the Central Board, or of any other "contempt," is subject to a penalty not exceeding £5 for the first offence, from £5 to £20 for the second offence, and to a fine of not less than £20 or imprisonment for the third offence.¹ The Central Board is, moreover, empowered, in order to make its control of officials more complete, to dismiss any paid officer without the assent of the guardians and without previous notice, if the Board considers such officer unfit for the fulfilment of his duties, or if he refuses or wilfully neglects to carry out any of the rules, orders, and regulations.² It will be seen that the superior Board's control is well organized, and that adequate means are provided for its exercise.³

IV. Next to this power and others supplementary to it, we have to mention another sort of jurisdiction exercised by the Central Board. It has to determine complaints against the guardians, and these are ordinarily investigated through a special inquiry made by the inspector of the district.

Here we come to the quasi-judicial powers which the Central Board exercises at its discretion.

In the first place, as regards matters of account, it is left to those interested to choose whether they will appeal from the decision of the auditor to the Queen's Bench or to the Central Board. As a matter of fact, the latter course is almost always taken, because the Board has the power, which the Court has not, to exercise an equitable jurisdiction and to pass charges not warranted by statute,⁴ and because also the appeal to the Board is attended with much less expense and trouble.

So, too, those interested may refer to the Board for decision questions in dispute as to settlement and as to the repayment of the costs of relief, instead of bringing these questions before a court of law.⁵ It is provided that two or more unions may enter into a binding agreement in writing that any disputes arising between them as to settlement, removal or chargeability, shall be referred to the Board for determination.⁶ The decision of the Central Board under seal is final, and cannot even be brought by *certiorari* before the High Court.

V. While the above-mentioned functions of the Board are strictly defined by law, and their scope does not depend on how the Board happens to be composed at a particular time, the case is different as

¹ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 98.

² *Ib.*, s. 8.

³ As regards the metropolis the Central Board has still greater powers of requiring the execution of its orders; as in this case it may suspend or entirely withhold repayment of the contribution from the common fund in the case of a district which neglects to comply with any important order: 33 & 34 Vict. c. 18, s. 1, subs. 4.

⁴ 11 & 12 Vict. c. 91, s. 4. See above, p. 141.

⁵ 11 & 12 Vict. c. 110, s. 4.

⁶ 14 & 15 Vict. c. 105, s. 12.

regards the duty of the Board as to the collection of information and the communication of advice and instruction to the guardians for the improvement of the poor law administration. It is obvious that the extent to which this branch of its functions is carried out depends in a large degree upon the President personally. In our account of the development of the poor law system we have mentioned a number of presidents who have done good service in this direction. We have referred particularly to what has been done in this way in the last ten years¹ and have recognized the important work of Mr. Goschen and his successors, especially as regards the introduction of co-operation between public relief and private charity, the judicious regulation of outdoor relief and the improvement of medical relief, &c. It has been mentioned that the Central Board has endeavoured, with regard to other questions, especially the treatment and education of pauper children, to collect ample and unbiassed information upon which the guardians could base their action.

From the description there given, to which we may here refer, it will be also seen how the Central Board seeks to discharge the task of instructing the guardians.² The Central Board has reports from its inspectors as to the proceedings in specially interesting matters in the various unions, and on occasion it sends out suitable persons to foreign countries in order to obtain information as to what is done there. The Board discusses these matters in its Annual Report, or, if the question is ripe for action, issues a circular letter, in which it advises how some new principle may be carried out. The inspectors, too, disseminate the information throughout the country and supervise the action taken.

The proceedings of the Central Board of late years illustrate the truth of Stuart Mill's words:³

"Power may be localized, but knowledge, to be most useful, must be centralized; there must be somewhere a focus at which all its scattered rays are collected, that the broken and coloured lights which exist elsewhere may find there what is necessary to complete and purify them The central authority ought to keep open a perpetual communication with the localities; informing itself by their experience, and then by its own, giving advice freely when asked, volunteering it when seen to be required."

This duty has been admirably performed by the Poor Law and

¹ See above, p. 88.

² It may be observed that the Central Board in its Annual Reports gives a description of the legislation of the year, and frequently also explains to the guardians, by instructional letters, the new statutory provisions which are often obscured by the language of English Acts of Parliament. Now and then, on the occasion of a new Act, a general statement on the subject is given, including the provisions contained in several statutes. This, for instance, was done in the Report for 1879, as regards the enactments as to the raising of loans, and in the 13th Report as regards the Labourers' Dwellings Acts.

³ J. S. Mill, 'Representative Government,' chap. xv. Mr. Longley, in the report already quoted, also describes the chief work of the Central Board as being "to supply individual boards of guardians with the results of the wide and varied experience which a central authority must inevitably acquire."

Local Government Boards, and by their action the English poor law system has been brought to its present pitch of excellence.

We proceed to treat of the agency through whom this function is mainly carried out, namely the inspectors.

SECTION III.

THE POOR LAW INSPECTORS.

It was in 1847 that the inspectors took the place of the assistant commissioners.¹ Their function, like that of the assistant commissioners, is, in the main, to represent the Central Board in their districts, and thus to be the medium between it and the local authorities. The number of assistant commissioners, like that of inspectors, has fluctuated. It is not fixed by statute, and requires the assent of the Treasury. At first there were nine assistant commissioners, but this number was found insufficient, and eventually was raised to twenty-one.

The number of inspectors was for a long time twelve. England and Wales were divided into eleven districts, while the twelfth inspector supervised the audits. There are still eleven divisions of the country, of which the metropolis is one, but particular divisions have been subdivided for purposes of inspection; others, in consequence of the increase of business, are no longer under a single inspector; while in others the inspector has an assistant. At present there are fifteen inspectorial districts, and that of the metropolis alone has three inspectors. There are also, besides the inspector of audits, an inspector of local loans and four inspectors of workhouse schools.²

We need not deal here with these special inspectors, and may proceed to enumerate the functions of the general inspectors of the poor. These functions may be divided into two classes, viz., those which are ordinary and periodical, and those which are only exercised on special occasions and in special circumstances.

I. The inspectors have to satisfy themselves that the administration within their district is carried out in accordance with the existing Acts and regulations. With this object they must attend a meeting of each Board of Guardians within their district at least once or twice a year.³ The inspectors have to report upon any irregularity which they observe. They may take part in the discussion, but have no right of voting. They must also visit and make a thorough inspection of each workhouse⁴ and other poor law establishments in their district at least twice in the course of the year. At the end of the year they

¹ 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, ss. 19-22.

² There is now (1888) also a lady inspector of boarded-out children. This appointment, however, is only temporary. (Tr.)

³ The number of unions included in an inspector's district varies much, and depends on the population and other circumstances. On an average an inspector has between forty and fifty unions. The metropolis contains thirty.

⁴ The result of inspection is reported in the form of answers to certain prescribed questions.

have to make a general report to the Central Board on the condition of their district. It is also their practice frequently to visit London in order to make oral reports.

II. The inspectors have to supply material for the decision of the Central Board as regards all representations made to the Board from their districts, and also as to any regulations to be issued by the Board for a particular union. They do this by reports, and if necessary after special local enquiry. Every communication to the Central Board is referred in the first place to the inspector, with any papers that relate to it. Owing to his tours of inspection and his consequent acquaintance with all local and personal circumstances of the district, the inspector is in the best position to form a judgment as to these communications. If he thinks fit, he may, in the first instance, place himself in communication with the persons concerned, and thus obtain information on the subject, or, when the Board directs the holding of a formal enquiry, he may summon and examine witnesses on oath. In this case he reports the evidence to the Local Government Board with an expression of his own opinion. The communications which are thus dealt with by the inspectors are of very varied kinds. In the first place, there are questions as to the appointment of officers, complaints against local officials, applications from the guardians for approval of particular measures, for which the approval of the Board is necessary (*e.g.* structural alterations in the workhouse buildings, loans, expenses for emigration, exceptional grant of outdoor relief contrary to the provisions of the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory or Regulation Order, &c.) Enquiries with regard to paid officers against whom complaints are made, or who are suspended by the guardians, often take up much of the inspector's time. Here his knowledge of local and personal matters stands him in good stead; he knows the various paid officers, upon whose appointment he has had to report, or can easily inform himself on the subject. In all these cases the intervention of inspectors between the Board in London and the guardians, of whom that Board has no personal knowledge, is of the greatest value.

In addition to these main duties of the inspectors, there are other occasional ones, which have been mentioned in the previous chapter. The inspector furnishes the agency by which the Central Board collects the information it requires, and by which again it disseminates the information thus collected among the boards of guardians. It is he who helps the guardians in the first place with his advice, explains to them the principles which the Central Board lays down, and aids them in every way in carrying out those principles.

The relation of the guardians to the inspector is thoroughly satisfactory; they regard him less as a person set over them than as one who represents local interests before the Central Board.

The social position of the inspector¹ is such that there can be no

¹ When I asked what was the main point as regards the selection of inspectors, I was told at the Local Government Board, "they must, above all, be gentlemen who, on account of their previous occupation and their position in life, enjoy con-

suspicion of personal interest in the advice which he gives as to local administration. The guardians are all the more inclined to pay heed to his advice because the inspector can bestow praise or blame as to the administration of particular districts in the annual reports which are published and laid before Parliament.¹

It is the inspectors, above all, who preserve the connection between the guardians and the Central Board, and realize what Stuart Mill, in the words already quoted, regarded as the Board's task of "informing itself by their experience and them by its own, giving advice freely when asked, volunteering it when seen to be required."

SECTION IV.

THE AUDITORS.

The second agency by which the Central Board exercises control over the guardians is that of the auditors. The system of audit has existed since 1834, and the legislature has since constantly endeavoured to improve the position of these officers, and to enlarge their functions.

Up to 1834 the audit of accounts and expenditure for poor law purposes rested with the justices, whose audit was regarded as little more than a formality. The Royal Commission, therefore, regarded a change in the whole system of poor law accounts as an essential condition of the necessary reform. In the Poor Law Act of 1834 the appointment of paid auditors was not provided for, but the Poor Law Commissioners, under their general power of requiring the appointment of paid² officers, were enabled to secure the nomination of auditors for particular unions.

In 1844 the legislature went a step further.³ It was found that the auditors appointed by the unions, who only devoted a part of their time to the work, were not possessed of the independence required for an effective audit. The Central Board was therefore empowered to combine several unions for the appointment of an auditor in common. The powers of the district auditors were at

sideration and are accustomed to exercise authority. Stress is laid on a certain talent for organization, and they must already have shown some interest in the welfare of the poor." No special qualification is prescribed. The result is that the inspectors are taken out of all professions. Some have been officers in the army (like Mr. Hedley, metropolitan inspector), barristers or doctors. The post of assistant inspector is a step towards that of general inspector. In consequence of the social position of the inspectors, the salary is of course a high one, amounting in some instances to £1000 a year.

¹ We have stated above (p. 94, note 1) that the effort to introduce improvements in the system of outdoor relief was much aided by the way in which the inspectors in their published reports singled out particular boards of guardians for praise, and named others as having shown themselves remiss.

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 46.

³ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, ss. 32, 37, 49.

the same time extended, and the concurrent jurisdiction of the justices as regards audit was abolished.

As regards the constitution of districts, the Central Board eventually pursued the policy of giving the districts so extensive an area that the audit required the entire services of one officer, devoting his whole time to the work.¹ The number of districts, which in 1864 amounted to 53, has now been reduced to 37, while the metropolis constitutes a special district by itself. The influence exercised by the Central Board on the auditors has grown steadily larger. Since 1868 the appointment of auditors has been made by the Board without the guardians having anything to do with it.² Since 1879 they have been paid by the State;³ and have thus become civil servants.

The functions of the auditors are of the greatest importance as regards the entire poor law system. We have already stated that almost all poor law officers have to keep detailed books, registers or accounts, in accordance with the prescribed forms, and it is the duty of the auditor, to whom all these books and accounts are submitted twice annually, to satisfy himself that they are duly kept, that they agree with each other, that they are arithmetically correct, and that they are supported by the necessary vouchers.⁴ The auditor has to decide with regard to each item, whether it is warranted by law and is reasonable in amount.⁵ He disallows all excessive payments, and surcharges the person by whom the improper expenditure has been made or authorized.⁶ The order of a superior does not relieve from responsibility the person who makes an unlawful payment.

The auditor has thus perfect control over the current poor law administration. So far as expenditure is concerned, the accounts of every union in his district must be audited twice a year, usually soon after March 25th, or September 29th, on which days all books and lists are to be made up. He must give notice of audit at least fourteen days previously to the clerk to the guardians, who is to notify the same throughout the union. At least three days before the audit,

¹ This point was made especially prominent in the report of the Select Committee of 1864.

² 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 24.

³ 42 Vict. c. 6. The contributions of the guardians towards the expenses of audit are raised in the form of stamp duty. See General Order of April 25, 1879, and Instructional Letter, April 28, 1879. Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' pp. 790, 951.

⁴ By the General Order for Accounts of Jan. 14, 1867, Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 353, the whole system of accounts is systematically regulated. The functions of the auditors are laid down in Articles 38-67 under the heading "Auditing of Accounts." See also the enactments in 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, ss. 32-39, and 11 & 12 Vict. c. 91.

⁵ An order of March 1, 1836, specially laid down the particular charges which, in accordance with the law then in force, might be paid from the poor rate. See above, p. 141, note 1.

⁶ With regard to legal steps for recovering amounts thus due from officials, see 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 32. In 1883 the total number of disallowances and surcharges with reference to the poor law was 3,873. See 13th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. lvi.

the books and accounts must be open to the inspection of the rate-payers and owners of the district. At the audit the officials concerned have to appear and to bring their vouchers. Any ratepayer, or other person who considers himself aggrieved by the accounts, may make objection at the audit, and the auditor must give his decision thereupon. He may summon persons and examine them, and require the production of documents. He must also, before making a poor law officer personally responsible for a charge, give him an opportunity of explanation. At the close of the audit its result is to be certified, and an abstract is to be sent to the Central Board.

Appeals against the decision of the auditor, as already stated, may be made, not only to the Courts of Law, but also to the Central Board, which may reverse or confirm the decision, and has also the power to confirm and remit the charge in the exercise of its equitable jurisdiction.¹

Besides the usual half-yearly audits, extraordinary audits may at any time be ordered by the Central Board.

By this constant supervision of all expenditure, a control is established, which effectually supplements that exercised by the inspectors.

To make the audit efficient and thorough, it is necessary to appoint an expert. He must not only possess knowledge and impartiality, but must also be master of the statutes and authorities,² and this, owing to the mass of material, is no easy task. On this account, the auditor is sometimes chosen either from solicitors or from clerks to the guardians. Since 1879 he has been authorized, in case he is not able to discharge his duties alone, to appoint an assistant, with the approval of the Central Board.³ For instance, in the metropolis, besides the auditor, there are an assistant auditor and two clerks. It is to be remembered that the auditor has not only to examine the poor law accounts, but the system of audit has worked so well that it has been extended to a number of other branches of local administration, for which rates are raised, *e.g.* to the accounts of School and Highway Boards.⁴

¹ See above, p. 141, note 1, and p. 142, note 1.

² See the Instructional Letter of the Poor Law Commissioners (Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 390, note): "It is necessary that he should have a complete knowledge of the statutes and authorities by which the expenditure of the poor rates is regulated, and the Poor Law Commissioners' rules, orders, and regulations, and be able to make sound and legal inferences from these authorities, so as to determine their effect in special cases. Some acquaintance with the law of contracts is necessary, and above all, a large experience of the nature of the pecuniary transactions of the guardians, overseers, and other accountable officers, without which it is impossible for him to exercise his important function of ascertaining—as he is bound to do in every case—the reasonableness of every item."

³ By 11 & 12 Vict. c. 91, s. 10, the auditor had been already authorized to appoint a temporary deputy, with the approval of the Central Board.

⁴ See the General Order, "Overseers' non-poor-rate Accounts," of March 20, 1879, Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 772, and note *a*, in which are specified the different accounts to which the audit extends. See also 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 37.

SECTION V.

THE OVERSEERS.

We now proceed to describe the local authorities, referring first to the overseers, who were practically entrusted with the whole poor law administration up to the year 1834.

Under the Act of Elizabeth, from two to four overseers had to be annually appointed in each parish by the justices, whose duty in conjunction with the churchwardens¹ it was :

(1) To raise the necessary means for poor relief by taxation of the inhabitants.

(2) To undertake the entire work of relief ; and

(3) To carry out all other measures necessary for executing the poor law.

Under the last head may be reckoned, especially since the Act of Charles II., the very troublesome duty, with which the overseers were largely occupied, of removing non-settled paupers.²

Of these three functions of overseers, practically only the first remains, the two others having since 1834 been for the most part entrusted by the legislature to other authorities. The present duties of the overseers in the unions created under the Act of 1834 are specified in a general order (Duties of Overseers) of April 22nd, 1842.³

Since 1834 the work of relief has been undertaken by the Boards of Guardians. The only remnant of the overseers' former duties in this respect is the power which they still have in cases of sudden and urgent need of providing relief in articles of absolute necessity, but not in money. The overseer may be required to do this by an order of the justices. He has, however, to report every case to the relieving officer concerned, and the decision as to the treatment of the applicant rests with the Board of Guardians.⁴

So, too, the other duties of overseers under the poor laws now mainly rest with the guardians. This is particularly the case as regards orders of removal, which now are obtained by the guardians of the district from which the pauper is removed upon those of the district liable for his relief.⁵

The duties of the overseers under the poor law are at the present time practically limited to raising the necessary funds by the poor rate. But even in this respect their powers have been reduced since they have been placed under the control of the Union Assessment Committee ;⁶ and with regard to the administration and

¹ The churchwardens are *ex-officio* overseers.

² See above, Dr. Burn's effective picture of the former duties of overseers.

³ Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 901.

⁴ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 54. If the overseers do not comply with the order of the justices, they are subject to a penalty not exceeding £5.

⁵ 28 & 29 Vict. c. 79, ss. 2, 3 ; 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 24.

⁶ See above, p. 155.

disposal of the funds raised, they are subject to the check of the auditors. The overseers must keep the rate-books in the form prescribed by the Central Board, and must submit them to the district auditors, with all vouchers and authorities.¹

During their continuance in office the overseers are regarded as representatives of the property of the parish. On entering office they have to settle the balances with their predecessors; they must take over the sums raised and receive the books and other documents. Any outstanding arrears are to be collected as soon as possible. The overseers have to levy rates of sufficient amount to meet the poor law charges,² to collect arrears, and to represent the interests of the rate in any legal proceedings. The required sums have to be paid out of the rate so collected on the contribution orders³ of the guardians, who have to give due vouchers. The overseers are personally responsible for the necessary sums; any deficiency may be made good out of their own property.⁴

Moreover, if the overseers are guilty of any neglect, in procuring the necessary amounts, and if any relief ordered by the guardians has in consequence to be delayed or withheld during a period of seven days, they are liable to a penalty not exceeding £20.⁵ If the overseers disobey any lawful order of the guardians or the magistrates, or contravene a regulation of the Central Board, they may be fined £5.⁶

It will be seen that the office of overseer is very responsible, though its duties are not of themselves of engrossing interest.⁷ It is therefore open to doubt whether, as the main functions of the office have been transferred to other persons, it is worth retaining as an honorary appointment which every parishioner is bound to accept.

The Act of Elizabeth provides that two or more justices shall annually appoint for each parish,⁸ according to its size, two to four

¹ Besides the rate-book there are also a book of receipts and payments, and balance sheets of the receipts and payments. All these have to be made up half-yearly to the 25th of March and 29th of September, and must be open to the inspection of the ratepayers at least seven days before the audit. General Order for Accounts, January 14, 1867, Art. 26.

² The means of estimating the amount probably required is furnished by the parochial list of the indoor and outdoor poor, which is prepared by the clerk of the union, with a statement of the account of every parish within the union, and is made over to the overseers by the relieving officer. These lists are laid by the overseers before the next vestry: General Order for Accounts, Art. 46.

³ The contribution orders must be in the prescribed form. See General Order of February 26th, 1866. Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 337.

⁴ 2 & 3 Vict. c. 84, s. 1; 12 & 13 Vict. c. 103, s. 7.

⁵ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 63.

⁶ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 95.

⁷ Besides the duties mentioned, the overseers have others, such as keeping the register of owners for the election of the guardians (see General Order of April 22nd, 1842, Art. 5, subs. 4, and General Order of February 14, 1877, Art. 3), also for Parliamentary elections (see note on p. 154 with regard to the new registration bill of 1885).

⁸ 13 & 14 Car. II. c. 12, s. 71, allowed the division of parishes and the appointment of overseers for single townships, &c.; by 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 22, this power was abolished as from the year 1844.

substantial householders as overseers.¹ The assumption of the office, which lasts for a year, is compulsory by law. A refusal would subject the recalcitrant person to indictment and to penalty. In the course of time, however, a number of exemptions have arisen on the ground of special privileges, or of legal decisions. These include members of the Upper or Lower House, barristers and solicitors, doctors, clergymen, officers of the army and navy, various State officials and others. Recently, the appointment of a single overseer for a small parish, and the union of the office with that of churchwarden, have been authorized, so that in this case the appointment of a special overseer may be entirely dispensed with.²

Moreover, paid assistant overseers may be appointed, and this is done in almost all large parishes, where the duties are in fact almost entirely performed by them.³ Paid collectors of poor-rates may also be appointed.⁴ The assistant overseers and the collectors are, like all paid officers, under the control of the Central Board, who may require the appointment of the latter, and with whom it rests to approve the nomination made by the guardians. Moreover, the Board alone has the power of dismissing the officers.⁵

As a matter of fact, the honorary office of overseer, which was so important before 1834, has now little left but the name.

SECTION VI.

THE GUARDIANS.

Since 1834 the Board of Guardians have been the most important local authority for the administration of relief, and have exercised the functions previously discharged by the overseers.

I. A Board of Guardians must be elected for each union. If the Central Board makes use of its power to create a separate poor law administration for a single parish, a Board of Guardians is elected for that parish.⁶

Guardians are elected by the respective parishes comprised in the

¹ The justices have an entirely free hand as to appointment. The parish has no right of election or nomination. The appointment is to be made within fourteen days of the 25th of March: 54 Geo. III. c. 91.

² 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113, ss. 11, 12.

³ 59 Geo. III. c. 12, s. 7; 2 & 3 Vict. c. 84, s. 2; 42 & 43 Vict. c. 54, s. 17. The assistant overseers occupy the position of a superior book-keeper. At the present time the duties of an overseer consist of little more than calculations and book-keeping, though his responsibility is of course considerable.

⁴ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 62. See Collector of Poor Rate Order, Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 517. In the 13th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. 328, the number of collectors of poor rates is given as 1860, and that of assistant overseers at 280, not including, however, persons appointed under 59 Geo. III. c. 12, s. 7. An assistant overseer is frequently appointed for several districts. See Guarantee Securities and Collectors and Assistant Overseers' Order, Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 595, especially with regard to the security to be given by these officers.

⁵ The Vestry, however, may revoke the appointment of assistant overseers appointed under 59 Geo. III. c. 12. [Tr.] ⁶ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 39.

union. The Central Board, however, is empowered in the case of a parish with more than 20,000 inhabitants to divide it into wards for the separate election of guardians, and this is almost always done in the case of a parish having a separate poor law administration.¹ The Central Board has also to fix the number of guardians to be elected for each parish or ward, having regard to the population and other circumstances, with the proviso that at least one guardian shall be elected for each parish.²

Besides the elected guardians, there are the *ex-officio* guardians, consisting of the justices for the particular county, riding, or division, who reside in the respective unions. In case the election of guardians is delayed, or the Board is for other reasons not constituted, the *ex-officio* guardians carry on the administration *ad interim*.³

The total amount of elected guardians in England and Wales is 20,687, and there are also 7,412 *ex-officio* guardians.⁴

The Central Board is able to exert a greater influence on the constitution of the metropolitan boards of guardians through its power to nominate as guardians resident justices or other persons rated at not less than £40, with the limitation, however, that the total number of nominated and of *ex-officio* guardians shall not be more than one-third of the elected guardians.⁵

II. As regards the election of guardians, which in most unions takes place annually, we need here only mention the chief points. The enactments on the subject go much into detail, and are explained and supplemented by a large number of judicial decisions.⁶

The voters are the owners and occupiers of the parish.

The owners are not only those who are in full legal possession of property, but also those who are entitled to receive the rent at which the property is let or leased, *e.g.* the mortgagees. To vote as owner, a claim must be made in writing to the overseers, setting forth his interest in the property (owner's statement), whereupon the name is to be entered in the register of owners kept by the overseers.⁷ If a property belongs to a company or corporation they may have one of their officers entered in the register to vote on their behalf. Any owner living in the parish may vote by a proxy authorized in writing, but except a tenant, bailiff, steward, land-agent, or collector of rents, no one can vote on behalf of more than four owners.⁸

¹ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, ss. 19, 20; 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 6.

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 38; 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 18. By a later Act (31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 6) the Central Board is empowered to unite small parishes having less than 300 inhabitants with neighbouring parishes for the purposes of the election of guardians in common.

³ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 38; 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 24.

⁴ Local Government Manual for 1885, p. 83.

⁵ 30 Vict. c. 79; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 9.

⁶ Further particulars will be found in Brown's 'Justice of the Peace,' p. 35, and Archbold's 'Justice of the Peace,' p. 47.

⁷ See Duties of Overseers Order of April 22, 1842, and the memorandum of the Poor Law Commissioners of December 31, 1844. Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' pp. 7 and 903.

⁸ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 15.

All persons are empowered to vote as ratepayers who have been assessed to the poor rate of the parish and have paid rates for at least one year before the election. If the owner is also occupier, and therefore a ratepayer, he may vote in both capacities.¹

For both classes of voters there is a classified franchise. For rateable value up to £50 the owner or ratepayer has one vote, for each additional £50 another vote, up to the maximum of six votes for £250 or more.²

All persons are eligible for the office of guardian who are assessed to the poor rate of the parish upon an annual rateable value of at least £40.³ The Central Board, however, is empowered to reduce this minimum in particular places. A house or residence in the parish is not a necessary qualification.

Persons of the female sex are eligible, but there are differences of opinion as to whether married women can be elected.⁴

Service as guardian is not compulsory. The office is voluntary and honorary, and may also be resigned on sufficient grounds, during its term, with the approval of the Central Board.⁵

Vacancies can only be filled by a new election, ordered by the Central Board; but in case the number of guardians remaining in office amounts to not less than three, they may carry on the business till the next election.

The elections are ordinarily for one year, but the retiring guardian is eligible for re-election, and is generally re-elected. On the application of a majority of owners and ratepayers, the Central Board may extend the period for which guardians are elected from one year to three or more. This power has been much exercised of late years.⁶

The elections are conducted in accordance with the regulations of the Central Board. Under a General Consolidated Order of the 14th of February, 1877,⁷ the following rules are enforced. Before the 15th of March in each year, the clerk to the guardians, under whose

¹ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 40; 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, ss. 15 & 16; 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 11. With regard to the franchise of the occupier under the system of compounding the rates, see 32 & 33 Vict. c. 41, s. 4.

² 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, ss. 14-16. Up to 1844 the franchise of the owners was different from that of the ratepayers, the votes of the ratepayers being limited to three.

³ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 38; 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 4; 32 & 33 Vict. c. 67, s. 45.

⁴ This doubt should be (but is not) [Tr.] disposed of by the Married Women's Property Act, 1882 (45 & 46 Vict. c. 75). In the case of any married woman who possesses separate property and is rated, the Central Board, before the passing of the Act, had decided that married women were not eligible. Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 13.

⁵ 5 & 6 Vict. c. 57, ss. 9, 11, 12.

⁶ 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 38. See the order for triennial service of guardians (Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 45) issued to a large number of unions, and the statement of the then President of the Local Government Board, Mr. Dodson, in the House of Commons, on November 17, 1882.

⁷ Printed by Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 1. A uniform regulation was established for the metropolis by a General Order of February 14, 1874, and the provisions of this order were extended to the whole country by the General Consolidated Order of February 14, 1877.

direction (with assistants) the whole proceedings of the election are carried out, has to give public notice of election, with particulars as to the number and qualification of the persons to be elected; and this notice must be affixed to the door of the workhouse and other suitable places. Between the 15th and 26th of March any voter may send to the clerk a nomination of candidates in writing in the prescribed form. If the number nominated does not exceed that of guardians to be elected, and in the opinion of the clerk no objection can be made to the qualification of the persons nominated, they are simply elected, and a certificate to that effect is given by the clerk. But if the number of persons nominated is greater than that of persons to be elected, the clerk must, on the 7th of April, give every qualified voter (owner, ratepayer, or proxy), a voting paper, on which the names of the candidates proposed are entered in alphabetical order. The electors mark their initials against the names of their candidates on the voting-paper. The papers thus filled up and signed are collected on the 8th of April. The clerk to the guardians must forthwith enter the result of the election in the poll-books, and give the candidates elected a certificate of their election. A printed list of the guardians elected must also be sent to the overseers of the respective parishes, and be fixed by them to the church door or other suitable place.

The Central Board are empowered to determine any objections to the validity of the election.¹ The Board may declare the election void and order a new one. There are special penalties against malpractices in the elections.²

III. After the Board of Guardians is constituted, they have, at their first sitting, to elect a chairman and one or two deputy chairmen. Three members are a quorum. All resolutions are decided by the majority, but at least three guardians must vote. In cases of equality the question is decided in the negative. The meetings, which take place on a fixed day, are not public.³

The course of procedure is regulated in detail by the General Consolidated Order of July 24th, 1847.⁴ The clerk must take minutes of the proceedings, which must be submitted for approval at the beginning of the next meeting. Extraordinary meetings may at any

¹ 5 & 6 Vict. c. 57, s. 8; 30 & 31 Vict. c. 106, s. 12. [But the case may be brought before the courts by *quo warranto* information, or on an election petition. Tr.]

² 14 & 15 Vict. c. 105, s. 3.

³ On the other hand, there is no regulation requiring that the proceedings shall be private; indeed the admission of reporters is not forbidden, and often takes place. It has also been expressly decided by the Local Government Board that a guardian himself may send to a newspaper information as to the proceedings. Such reports, however, if libellous, are not privileged. See Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 64, for the letter of the Local Government Board published in the *Times* of June 15th, 1876. In point of fact sufficient provision is made that the ratepayers shall be made acquainted with the current administration, apart from the circumstance that they have access to the accounts, books, and lists, before each audit.

⁴ Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 57, especially 28-36 (Meetings of Guardians), 37 to 43 (Proceedings of Guardians), and 44-51 (Contracts of Guardians).

time be summoned on the requisition of two members. The General Consolidated Order further fixes the order of business at the meetings. A number of formalities are laid down, which have to be observed by the guardians, with regard to the conduct of business, the public notices to be issued by them as to contracts, the payments to be made, &c. In fact, under the order, uniformity is established as regards the conduct of business by all Boards of Guardians in England and Wales; so that the whole procedure is everywhere conducted in similar fashion and with the prescribed formalities.¹

The Board of Guardians appoints committees of its members for certain specified objects, *e.g.* the assessment committee,² for purposes of valuation, and the visiting committee, for supervising the workhouse.³ And if any parish lies more than four miles from the place where the meetings are held, a district committee may, with the approval of the Central Board, be formed for such parish, to receive all applications for relief, to examine them, and to report to the Board thereon.⁴

IV. The functions of the guardians may be divided into three classes.⁵ It is the duty of the guardians—

(1) To decide upon all applications for relief and to take the necessary measures to carry out such decisions;

(2) To exercise a constant supervision with regard to the administration of relief, and the establishments in which paupers are maintained;

(3) To provide, as far as necessary, for the appointment of paid officers.

On these three functions, which we discuss elsewhere in detail, we may here say a few words.

Undoubtedly the most important duty of the guardians is that of deciding upon individual applications for relief. They have in the first place to determine whether the applicant is destitute, and, if so, what kind of relief ought to be granted. In both respects, the report of the relieving officer affords the materials for a judgment. The relieving officer, to whom the application is generally made, and who has also information as to any case in which the overseers have afforded relief either on their own account or under an order of the

¹ It must be owned that here bureaucracy has given us too much of a good thing. The frequent result, as might be expected, is that the clerk, who is of course acquainted with all the formalities, is in a position to exercise an undue influence upon the guardians, who, from their short term of office, are not likely to know the detailed requirements of the regulations.

² 25 & 26 Vict. c. 103. See above, p. 155.

³ 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, s. 24, arts. 148 and 149, of General Consolidated Order of 24th July, 1847. In the metropolis a dispensary committee has also to be elected: 30 Vict. c. 6, s. 39.

⁴ 5 & 6 Vict. c. 57, s. 7, and Relief Committees' Order, Glen, 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 935.

⁵ We are here regarding the guardians exclusively in their poor law capacity. They have, however, a number of other functions. They constitute the rural sanitary authorities, and, sometimes, the highway authorities; they have important duties as regards elementary education; they administer the Vaccination Acts; they appoint the registrars of births and deaths.

justices (see above, p. 178), must inform himself of the position and circumstances of the applicant, and must report to the guardians thereon, both by filling up a prescribed form of queries and by personal attendance at the meeting of the guardians. As a general rule, the applicant must also attend the meeting, in order that the guardians, by verbal enquiries, may satisfy themselves as to the correctness of the relieving officer's report.

In consequence of the strict enactments of the English poor law, under which relief may be granted only to persons who are entirely destitute, there is little difficulty as to the question who is to be relieved. The more important question is that of the form of relief, since in this respect the guardians are free to choose. It is only for certain specified cases, particularly as regards the able-bodied, that they are tied by fixed rules. Their discretionary powers with respect to the description of relief are extensive. They have to determine whether relief should be granted by admission to the workhouse in cases where this is not expressly prescribed. As regards relief outside the workhouse, they have to decide whether it shall be in money or in kind. Finally, they have frequently to settle whether the person relieved is to be sent to this or that establishment—a question which, especially in the case of children, often presents difficulties.¹

When relief has been granted, the guardians have the further function of supervising its administration. In the case of indoor relief, this duty falls on the visiting committees. Such committees are appointed for schools, infirmaries, &c., as well as workhouses. The reports of all such committees are presented and read at the meetings of the Boards of Guardians, and are discussed as regards any points in the management of the workhouse or the treatment of the paupers which may require alteration, or as to which directions are necessary. With regard to outdoor relief, a constant supervision is exercised, owing to the fact that it is only granted temporarily, and, as a rule, for not longer than three months. All such cases are therefore brought before the Board periodically, and the relieving officer has to report afresh as to the destitution and circumstances of the applicant.

Finally, the Board of Guardians has the important duty of appointing the necessary paid officers. We have already pointed out that although the Central Board has the right to reject the nominees of the guardians, and therefore to control the appointments, yet in practice this right is rarely exercised; and the selection of the paid officers, on whose efficiency and capacity the character of the administration mainly depends, is in effect left to the local authorities.

To this account of the duties of Boards of Guardians we may add a few observations as to their composition.²

¹ See below, c. iv., s. 4.

² I am quite aware that general observations are dangerous, because they are often only true to a limited extent; and it is always possible to find particular instances

Of what elements is the Board of Guardians composed?

In our historical account of the development of the poor law, we have pointed out that a large proportion of the abuses discovered by the Royal Commission of 1832 were due to the fact that the upper classes held aloof from poor law administration, which was then exclusively in the hands of the overseers, and that it was consequently controlled by unsuitable persons, such as small shopkeepers. It is therefore important to know whether this is still the case.

It is true that if the composition of a local authority is bad, the result is much less important than it was before 1834. The guardians are bound by stringent orders and regulations to observe the prescribed rules, and compliance is secured by the establishment of auditors and inspectors and by the powers of the Central Board, so that there is little scope for maladministration. On the other hand, these restrictions on the local authorities may involve a danger, which is not to be disregarded, that the best men may hold aloof even more than when the discretionary power was almost unlimited. This danger is intensified by the fact that the honorary office of guardian is entirely voluntary, while scarcely anybody was exempted from serving that of overseer. There is the further fact, that the present system of electing guardians affords no security for the choice of the right men. The chief object of this system is to reduce to a minimum the trouble of voting. It may therefore happen that owing to the institution of voting papers, a small clique are enabled to carry their candidate, if the better class of voters take no interest in the election. On the other hand, owing to the thoroughly irrational arrangement of the franchise, a single opulent owner, or at any rate a very small number of owners, may to some extent control the composition of the Board of Guardians in opposition to the views of other electors. It should be remembered that a rich owner of land within a union, even if not contributing a penny towards the poor rate, may have as many as six votes for each piece of property, and thus, as the ownership of land in England is in few hands, may easily be in a position to give his list of candidates a majority.¹

which controvert them. Moreover, I cannot pretend, in this case, to base my opinion on a knowledge of the whole of the English poor law organization. Of course the 647 Boards of Guardians are variously composed, and there are corresponding differences as to the estimation in which the position of guardian is held. Nevertheless, I believe that my conclusions are of value as giving a correct notion of a foreign institution. They are based on personal information afforded by those who have had long practical experience, such as Mr. Glen, Mr. Hedley (General Inspector of the poor), and Mr. Sendall (Assistant Secretary to the Local Government Board). Moreover, I have endeavoured to form an independent judgment by attending the meetings of the Board of Guardians of a very poor but admirably administered metropolitan union. I avail myself of this opportunity to express my thanks to the guardians of the Whitechapel Union for the permission which they were kind enough to give me to attend their meetings and have access to their books and papers.

¹ [It is necessary however to take into account the limitation which prevents a

From all these considerations, the natural inference would be that the composition of the Board of Guardians, limited in its powers, fettered by its numerous paid officers, and elected under an irrational franchise, would be inferior to the overseers (as they once existed), who were appointed at the discretion of the justices.

But this is not so. It may indeed be said that the Boards of Guardians are usually composed of just the men whom we should wish to see selected. In rural districts they are usually tenant farmers of repute, in towns they are partly respectable tradesmen, who sympathize with their poorer neighbours, partly young and energetic men who desire to take part in public life.

These good results, despite the unfavourable conditions above referred to, are mainly due to two causes; in the first place to the organization of private charity, which has been steadily progressing of late years; in the second place, to the transfer to the Board of Guardians of a number of other important functions. It is owing to this latter circumstance that the post of guardian affords the most suitable and efficient training for high political offices. It often leads the way to a seat in parliament.¹ And while men are thus attracted who take an intelligent interest in general politics, the Charity Organization Society and its disciples supply guardians whose special interest lies in the application of proper principles to poor law administration. That society, in order to bring about a co-operation of private charity with public relief, has taken pains to secure the election, as guardians, of men who, by their strict adherence to the principles recognized as properly governing public relief, define the field for private charity, and thus indirectly act in its interests.

It was through the efforts of the Charity Organization Society that one special class of persons, whose aid in poor law administration is of the greatest value, obtained admission to Boards of Guardians. It was in 1875, in the metropolitan district of Kensington, that a woman was first elected as guardian. In 1877 there were three female guardians in the metropolis, and two in the provinces. In 1881 a society was formed in London "for promoting the return of qualified women as poor law guardians," and similar societies were soon established in Bristol, Birmingham, and Brighton. Owing to this movement the number of female guardians rose to 44 in the year 1884, of whom 14 were in London, 5 in Birmingham, and 4 in Bristol.

The co-operation of women in poor law administration was everywhere found to be most useful. Sometimes particular branches were

single owner, as such, from having more than the statutory maximum of six votes in respect of property in any one parish, no matter how many houses may belong to him. Tr.]

¹ See the speech of Sir Charles Dilke, President of the Local Government Board, at the Poor Law Conference at Macclesfield in 1884, in which he describes the post of guardian as supplying "the best possible training of a man for the service of the State in its highest capacities" (*Times*, 10th Oct. 1880).

entirely given over to them, *e.g.* the inspection of the domestic arrangements in the various establishments, the supply of provisions and clothing, the appointment of female attendants and nurses, &c. Elsewhere, they employed themselves, with excellent results, in the inspection of infirmaries and district schools. They have also promoted the connexion between public relief and private charity. Being for the most part members of a Committee of the Charity Organization Society, they are enabled to secure private charity for deserving persons brought before them in their capacity of guardians. Thus they often succeed in restoring to independence persons who have descended to the receipt of poor law relief; they take pains to procure employment for such persons, and exercise a supervision which prevents their being again pauperized.¹

On all sides I have heard nothing but praise of the work of women as guardians. I have often met with demands for the abolition of the legal impediments which hinder so many women from becoming candidates.² The mere fact that a guardian must, as a general rule, be assessed at not less than £40 to the poor rate, in effect shuts out most women from the office. If it were not for this condition, the number of female guardians would be much larger than it is.

Altogether, it is on many accounts regarded as desirable that the legal enactments as to the election of guardians should be amended without delay. In 1878 a Special Committee of the House of Commons was appointed on the subject.³ The majority of witnesses were adverse to the existing system. Besides the point already mentioned, it was urged that the short term of office is a serious disadvantage. This term is usually one year, though on application it may be fixed at three years. The witnesses were generally in favour of the establishment by law of a three-years' term, with a possible extension for a still longer period.

This would be a great improvement. Poor law administration, like any other business, has to be learnt; and an annual change in the constitution of the Board is not favourable to the continuous application of proper principles of relief. In particular districts, voluntary steps are taken in this direction by the re-election of the same guardians, or the prolongation of the term of office. There is no reason why the Legislature should not take the matter in hand. The fact that action has not followed on the Report of the Committee of 1878 is due to causes outside the province of the poor law. It is proposed to alter the whole system of local government by the constitution of new County Boards, and in view of this sweeping measure it has been considered undesirable for the time to make small changes.

¹ An excellent article on "The Work of Women as Poor Law Guardians," appeared in the *Westminster Review* for April 1885, p. 386.

² As to the doubt whether married women can be elected as guardians, see p. 182, note 4.

³ Report of the "Select Committee appointed to enquire into the system under which guardians of the poor are at present elected."

SECTION VII.

PAID OFFICERS.

Of the large class of paid officers, there are two who deserve special mention, on account of the importance of their duties, viz., the clerk and the relieving officer.

I. Every union must have a clerk. In many large districts there is also an assistant clerk. The duties of the clerk may be classified as follows :—¹

1. The clerk makes minutes of the proceedings at the meetings of the Board, all letters go through his hands, and he has to keep a number of prescribed books and accounts. He is the secretary of the Board, and conducts the entire correspondence; his attendance at their meetings is absolutely necessary; and all accounts, returns to the Central Board, &c., must be countersigned by him. The most important books which he keeps are the General Ledger, in which all receipts and disbursements must be entered under the proper headings; the Relief Order Book, in which are recorded the names of all applicants for relief, with the decision of the guardians on each case; and the Order Check Book, which contains all orders given by the guardians for provisions, stores, repairs, and the form of invoice relating thereto. The clerk has also to enter half-yearly, in a Pauper Classification Book, the number of persons relieved during the half year, classified in the prescribed form. The information for this purpose is to be derived from the special books kept by the other paid officers, especially the relieving officer and the master of the workhouse, viz., Outdoor Relief List, Indoor Relief List, Non-resident Poor Account, Medical Relief Book. It is also embodied by the clerk in the half-yearly statistical and financial statements which he has to forward to the Central Board.

2. The books to be kept by the other paid officers, especially by the relieving officer and the master of the workhouse, are to be submitted to the clerk before each meeting of the guardians, who has to check them, and thus exercises some supervision over the accounts and book-keeping of such officers.² This is particularly important as regards the relieving officer's Outdoor Relief List, and Receipt and Expenditure Book, and the workhouse master's Day Book and Receipt and Expenditure Book, which have to be compared with the books kept by the clerk, especially the Relief Order Book, and the Order Check Book. The clerk has to certify the accuracy of the entries, and to report thereupon to the Board. He has also to make

¹ See Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' General Consolidated Order of 24th July, 1847, Art. 202, Amendment Order of 26th Feb. 1866, Art. 3, General Order for Accounts of 14th Jan. 1867, Arts. 15, 16, and Arts. 25-35, General Order of 14th Feb. 1877 (Election of Guardians), and Amendment Order of 14th Jan. 1878 (Duties of Clerks).

² All books, accounts, and papers of the Board are in the custody of the clerk.

the necessary preparations for the half-yearly audit, and to take care that all books subject to audit are balanced in due time, are produced and are open to the inspection of the ratepayers.

3. The clerk is the legal adviser of the Board, and as such has to represent it at the sessions. He has to take the necessary steps to obtain Orders of Removal or Orders of Maintenance; and to prosecute persons who have deserted their families &c.¹ He has to frame contracts and other instruments, and to draft the communications sent by the guardians to the Central Board. For these duties he can only charge his expenses out of pocket, and is not entitled to receive any special remuneration.²

4. The clerk conducts the election of the guardians. He has to prepare the list of voters, to distribute and collect the voting papers, and to declare the result.

It will be seen that the clerk has very important duties, for the performance of which some legal knowledge is specially necessary.³ It is therefore a general practice to appoint a solicitor.⁴

The salary varies considerably in different unions. In the metropolis it averages from £500 to £600, in the provinces it is of course smaller. The office of clerk is not only important as regards his prescribed functions, but is made more so by the circumstance that he represents the permanent element, while the Board of Guardians is a changing body, so that his greater legal knowledge and experience of the business enable him to exercise a powerful influence.

II. The relieving officer occupies an entirely different position, but one which is scarcely of less importance. While the clerk is required to give the guardians authoritative information as to the requirements of Acts and Regulations, it is essential that the relieving officer should be able to form a correct judgment on the actual circumstances of each case, and investigate it with skill and energy. It is the relieving officer who stands in direct and permanent relation with the poor, and it is therefore of importance that he should be able to understand their circumstances, and also that he should occupy a position of authority with regard to them. While the clerk is by preference selected from the rank of solicitors, the relieving officers are often recruited from the class of pensioned soldiers who come from a stratum of the population not very far removed from that which supplies most of the paupers; who have in their military training become accustomed to the exercise of authority, and to the precise performance of duty. It is necessary that they should have acquired a certain amount of education; for every

¹ 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 68. It is a special part of the clerk's duties to ascertain the settlement of paupers, to advise the guardians on the question of removal, and to conduct the correspondence with the unions liable.

² See above, p. 184.

³ The general qualification for the post is that the clerk should be at least twenty-one years of age, and should give two sureties for the performance of his duties.

⁴ Efficient Clerks are occasionally appointed as auditors; and Auditors sometimes rise to the rank of Inspector. The various poor law officials may thus be said to form a kind of hierarchy.

relieving officer must be able to read, write, and keep the rather complicated accounts which are prescribed.¹

The duties of the relieving officer are as follows:²—He has to receive all applications for relief made to him within his district, and to examine into the circumstances of every case by visiting the house of the applicant, and making enquiry as to his means, his ability to work, and his state of health. In cases of sudden and urgent necessity, he is to afford such relief as may be requisite, either by an order of admission to the workhouse or by relief in kind, but not in money. In any case of sickness or accident he must procure medical assistance. He attends all ordinary meetings of the guardians, and reports all applications for relief, and the relief granted. For this purpose he has to submit to them his Application and Report Book, in which must be entered, in the prescribed form, every application for relief, and all particulars with regard to it. The relieving officer must be prepared to make suggestions to the guardians as to the form and amount of relief which may appear suitable. He has to give his opinion on the important question whether the applicant is to be regarded as able-bodied, and must report whether there are relations who can be required to maintain him.

When the guardians have decided on the relief to be granted, the relieving officer has to take the necessary steps to carry out their decision. If outdoor relief is allowed, the case must be entered upon the outdoor relief list. All persons upon this list must be visited by him at their dwellings at proper intervals, and he must ascertain whether their circumstances have changed, and, if necessary, report to the guardians on the subject. He must pay all money allowances in the prescribed manner and at the proper periods,³ and must keep

¹ As I was informed by Mr. Sendall, Assistant Secretary to the Local Government Board, it is the general opinion that ex-soldiers make the best relieving officers, and the practice is to secure their appointment when possible. As the post is very attractive to them, not only on account of the salary, but also because it is permanent, and dismissal is only possible with the assent of the Central Board, there are always plenty of candidates.

² See General Consolidated Order of 24th July, 1847, Arts. 164, 215, 216, and General Order for Accounts of 14th Jan. 1867, Arts. 23, 24. At the General Poor Law Conferences of 1884, the chief subject of discussion was the "Duties and Practice of Relieving Officers."

³ It is the practice for the guardians to appoint "pay-stations," at which applicants may attend at a fixed time (usually once a week) to receive relief (see Circular of Poor Law Board of 9th Dec. 1868, Glen, p. 240). The system has been attended with many drawbacks, especially in the country, where the so-called "pay tables" are often in public-houses. The best plan would be to give the relief in the house of the pauper, since an effective control over the person relieved would thus be established. If this course were not practicable everywhere, it might at any rate be adopted without difficulty in thickly-populated unions, and certainly in towns. There could be no objection in this case to the co-operation of benevolent organizations, especially the Charity Organization Society; for if the payment of relief were entrusted to voluntary helpers, they would often have an opportunity of aiding the pauper by advice and information, and would thus do more than merely pay over to him a certain sum. In my opinion, there is here a province in which the co-operation of public relief and charitable societies might usefully be secured.

an account, in the Receipt and Expenditure Book, of all moneys received and disbursed by him.

The above are the most important duties of the relieving officers.¹ They are not only laborious but of a very responsible character. In this latter respect it must be remembered, on the one hand, that the relieving officer is liable to criminal proceedings if he refuses or delays relief to a person to whom it ought to be given, and on the other hand that he is personally responsible for any expenditure which is contrary to the Acts or Regulations. It is his duty to examine all orders of the guardians, and only to carry out those which are in accordance with the law.

The relieving officer is, in fact, the person on whom rests the largest share of responsibility, and whose work exerts the most influence for good or evil on the poor law administration. For this reason it has of late been considered proper both to increase the remuneration of these officers, and, by augmenting their number, to secure a more thorough performance of their duties. The ordinary salary of a relieving officer in the metropolis is now £150, rising by £10 quinquennially to a maximum of £180.² The total number of relieving officers is 1540; and there are 87 assistant relieving officers. On an average there are two or three relieving officers in each union. The number varies according to the size, population, and other circumstances of the particular unions; Islington has 9, Hackney 9, St. Pancras 8, while in the country some unions have only a single relieving officer.³ It is calculated that each officer has on an average 200 cases upon his outdoor relief list.

With regard to the appointment of a second relieving officer in a union, there were at first some doubts and differences of opinion whether the second officer should be made the assistant of the first, or should have a separate district of his own. It has now been decided that the best plan is to give each officer a separate district, for which he is solely responsible.⁴

III. As regards the other paid officers, it is unnecessary to say anything here.⁵ We have already discussed the duties of some of them, *e.g.*, the assistant overseers and the collectors, and in our account of special branches of the poor law we shall refer to others,

¹ The relieving officers have many other functions besides those enumerated. They have to look after children apprenticed by the guardians; to take the necessary steps as to lunatics not suitably cared for; to help the clerk in the conduct of elections; and generally "to execute all lawful orders and directions of the guardians."

² 12th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. xxxviii.

³ 13th Annual Report of Local Government Board, p. 328.

⁴ See Longley (p. 200) in the Report already quoted.

⁵ The treasurer of the union occupies an intermediate position between a paid and an unpaid officer. All sums due to the guardians by overseers and others are paid to him. He has to bank this money, to honour their cheques, to keep a book of receipts and disbursements, and to submit the accounts to the auditor. He is usually not directly paid, but has the use of the funds placed in his hands, and is remunerated by the interest. See General Order of 24th July, 1847, Arts. 174 and 203.

such as the workhouse officials, the workhouse medical officer, and the district medical officers, who dispense outdoor medical relief.

A list of all paid officers, with the number of each class, has been already given (p. 16). The total number amounts to nearly 94,000; and their remuneration to £1,117,705. At first sight this is alarming, according to German notions. But it is necessary to remember the difference between the two countries as regards money and the general height of salaries. In Germany the same number of officers, with corresponding qualifications, might be obtained for much less. Moreover, in any comparison, it should not be forgotten that voluntary sacrifices of time and labour in the provision of poor relief represent a considerable money value, and must be taken account of. But even if, after making allowances of this kind, we find that the English system costs more for administration than any other, too much importance should not be attributed to this fact. If the poor law system is regarded as a public matter to be dealt with in the interests of the State and the community, the main question in estimating its value is, how far does it accomplish the objects which are recognized as those of efficient relief administration. The consideration how we can most cheaply purchase immunity from the evils attending pauper relief, belongs to a period antecedent to the establishment of the present system. The more the system is based on wise principles, and the more it rests on considerations of the welfare of the community, of the importance of preventing additional pauperization, and of lessening the number of paupers in future generations, the more will the mere question of the cost of the current administration be thrown into the background.

We have already pointed out that, notwithstanding the steady increase of the costs of payment of officers and of administration, there has been on the whole a decrease in the total poor law expenditure. All the modern improvements, the introduction of which we have mentioned in our account of the historical development of the English poor law, had for their immediate result an increase of the costs of administration. This was so as regards the new establishments for the sick and those for children. Indeed, it is in the best administered districts that the costs of administration are the highest.

A statement which is very interesting in this connection was published in 1870.¹ It shows the cost per head of inmates in respect of officers' salaries and rations in certain workhouses. The differences were enormous. The number of paid officers varied very much. Two workhouses (Dudley and Clifton) had almost the same number of inmates, but the number of workhouse officers in the former was 12, in the latter 23. These differences are partly accounted for by the fact that some boards of guardians employed almost

¹ See 22nd Annual Report of Poor Law Board, p. 14.

exclusively, paid nurses, while in others the duties were discharged by pauper inmates.¹ Of course, no one will regard the latter plan as the better one.² Unquestionably, in judging of a poor law system, too much stress ought not to be laid on the amount of the cost of administration.

¹ Thus the West Derby Guardians in the year 1867 employed only two paid nurses, while in the Chorlton workhouse, with a similar number of inmates, there were twenty-three paid nurses.

² In the course of the last twenty years the employment of paid nurses has become general. [Tr.]

CHAPTER IV.

PARTICULAR BRANCHES OF THE POOR LAW.

SECTION I.

OUTDOOR RELIEF.

HAVING previously stated the principles of the English poor law, we may now describe the chief branches of relief, in order to give an idea of the practical working of the system. Relief is of two kinds, indoor and outdoor, in institutions or at home. Indoor relief is granted in workhouses, infirmaries, asylums, hospitals, schools and training-ships ;¹ everything else is outdoor relief.

We proceed to specify the different kinds of outdoor relief.²

¹ Here it is necessary to mention one fact which must be again referred to in discussing statistics of pauperism, viz., that in the general statements as to the English poor law system, the lunatics, if in special asylums, are classed as outdoor paupers, while they appear as indoor paupers if received into the workhouse. It seems clear that this classification is unreasonable. Although Mr. Goschen commented on the fact in the Report made by him in 1870 as President of the Poor Law Board (24th Annual Report, p. xiv.), no alteration has yet been made. The difficulty of employing English statistics of pauperism is thus sensibly aggravated. We shall have to mention other circumstances which also show the need of great caution in deducing any conclusions from English Poor Law statistics. England, which produces a larger quantity of statistics than any other country, has no central statistical department for the collection and verification of figures. Statistics are compiled by particular branches of the administration in accordance with traditional methods, frequently with a view to their employment for parliamentary purposes. There is no guarantee for a really scientific treatment of statistics. We do not for a moment deny, however, that among English parliamentary papers there is a great mass of excellent statistics ; and with regard to the poor law we have already mentioned that Mr. Goschen, as President of the Poor Law Board, gave us much to be thankful for in this particular.

² By way of elucidation of the text, we may here mention certain points in addition to the details given elsewhere on this subject. Outdoor relief can only be granted to an able-bodied person in exceptional cases, or under specified limitations (Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order, and Outdoor Relief Regulation Order, see p. 132). Relief is distributed by the relieving officer either at the houses of the paupers or at appointed pay-stations on specified days, generally once a week (see p. 191, note 3), and the relieving officer has to keep an Outdoor Relief List of paupers relieved outside the workhouse. The persons entered in this list have to be periodically visited by the relieving officer. Outdoor relief is only to be afforded temporarily, ordinarily for not more than three months, so that the respective cases may be periodically brought to the knowledge of the Board of Guardians (see p. 185). Finally, all outdoor relief may be granted by way of loans, for the recovery of which there are special provisions, and this method is frequently employed (see p. 110).

Relief outside the workhouse may be in money or in kind. There is no general legal enactment as to which alternative should be adopted, or as to the relative proportion of these two kinds of relief. The practice varies much in different districts, for the sum spent on relief in kind ranges between 1·3 and 44·0 per cent. of that given in money.¹ The Central Board in its Annual Report has frequently drawn attention to the advantage of giving relief in kind rather than in money. The general improvement in the administration of the English system during the last decade has been accompanied with stricter observance of wise principles in this particular.²

There are only two cases in which there is any legal restriction on the grant of relief in money: (*a*) when in pressing cases temporary relief is given outside the workhouse by the relieving officer or by an overseer, before the definite decision of the Board of Guardians, it must be in kind or by the provision of medical assistance; (*b*) in districts in which the Outdoor Relief Regulation Order is in force, if relief outside the workhouse is given to able-bodied men, at least half must consist of food or firing, or other articles of absolute necessity other than money.

As regards this last case, there is, as already stated, a special condition as to the grant of outdoor relief to able-bodied men. The

¹ The following table showing the proportion of relief in money and in kind in the eleven divisions into which England is divided for relief purposes will not be without interest. In the year 1883 the expenditure for outdoor relief was as follows:

In the following divisions.	In money.	In kind. (Value.)	Proportion of Relief in kind to Relief in money.
	£	£	
Northern	127,113	1,639	1·3
Wales	282,487	10,824	3·8
North Midland	176,208	8,248	4·7
York	234,644	12,967	5·5
North-Western	202,070	14,366	7·1
South-Western	298,371	29,146	9·8
West Midland	254,989	36,378	14·3
South Midland	193,353	34,606	17·9
Metropolis	156,272	38,623	24·7
South-Eastern	198,657	52,029	26·2
Eastern	126,155	55,486	44·0
Total	£2,250,319	£294,312	13·1

See 13th Annual Report of the L. G. B., p. xv.

² According to a statistical abstract which has recently appeared (Parliamentary Papers, 1885, 77, civ.), which embraces the half year ending with Michaelmas, 1884, there are at present not less than 173 unions in which relief in kind is not given.

pauper has to be set to work by the guardians,¹ and to be kept employed as long as he receives relief. The guardians of the union concerned are required within thirty days to report to the Central Board the place where the able-bodied men relieved outside the workhouse are set to work, in what way they are employed and supervised, what are their hours of labour and the amount of their task. For the supervision of the work a special official, the Superintendent of Outdoor Labour, may be appointed, who, unlike other poor law officials, is only appointed for a limited time, and may be discharged if no longer wanted. It is to be remarked that the introduction of the labour test,² in place of the workhouse test, was mainly due to the necessity of providing for exceptional periods of widespread destitution, in which the workhouse would be insufficient for the reception of all the able-bodied (*e.g.*, when there is a labour crisis in the manufacturing districts or in the metropolis).³ In fact, if we except extraordinary circumstances in which the strict application of the workhouse principle is impossible, very little use is made of the labour test. Of late years those districts in which the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order has not been introduced have for the most part voluntarily adopted its principles, and have refused relief to the able-bodied except in the workhouse. Thus the provisions as to the labour test mainly apply to exceptional cases of necessity where special measures are demanded. In such cases some public work is ordinarily taken in hand, generally in connection with roads or rivers.⁴

A special poor-law charge, analogous to outdoor relief, consists in the payment of school fees for poor children. By the Education Acts of 1870, 1876 and 1880, education in England has been made compulsory without the establishment of free schools. In their place it has been provided that parents unable to pay the school fees for their children, may apply to the Board of Guardians, who after examination of their circumstances may contribute, to the extent of 3*d.* a week, for each child of school age, *i.e.* between five and fourteen years.⁵ This relief does not pauperize the parents, nor does it in any way limit them in the choice of the public elementary school which their children are to attend. The guardians may appoint a special inquiry officer for

¹ If the pauper refuses to perform the prescribed task, or wilfully neglects it, or wilfully destroys the material entrusted to him, he is to be treated as an idle and disorderly person, and to be punished in accordance with 5 Geo. IV. c. 83, 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 59, and 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113, s. 15.

² See also the Labour Test Order (Glen, P. L. O., p. 299), under which some unions where the Outdoor Relief Prohibitory Order is in force may grant relief outside the workhouse to able-bodied men.

³ See Instructional Letters of the P. L. B. of 25 August, 1852, printed in Glen, P. L. O., p. 293 note (a).

⁴ See Second Report of the L. G. B., where (App. p. 217) are stated the conclusions of the Manchester Guardians as to this matter. See also in the same report, p. 51, the L. G. B.'s answer to the application of the Poor Law Conference for the issue of more stringent regulations as to the grant of outdoor relief.

⁵ 39 & 40 Vict. c. 79, s. 10. School Boards are also empowered to remit the fees for children of poor parents sent to Board schools.

dealing with applications for the payment of such fees. He must keep a School Fees Order Book and a Receipt and Payment Account, corresponding to the books kept by the relieving officer, and must submit them to the auditor.¹ Contributions to the school fees are sometimes, but rarely, made by way of loan.

The expenditure recently imposed on poor law authorities by the provisions of the Education Acts has increased year by year. In the half year ending at Michaelmas, 1876, it amounted to £7,931; it rose in 1878 to £12,972, and in 1884 to £16,982. It has thus been more than doubled in the course of eight years.²

Akin to this is the charge for the children who are boarded out instead of being sent to pauper schools. This boarding-out system will be described in detail in connection with the other modes of dealing with pauper children. It is only mentioned here because it is included in the statistical accounts as a branch of outdoor relief.³

With regard to the cognate matter of the apprenticeship of pauper children, we may conveniently say something in this place.⁴

The apprenticeship of pauper children was formerly much more common, and was a more important branch of the guardians' duties than is the case now. This change is mainly due to the fact that, owing to the introduction of compulsory education, it is no longer possible to apprentice children so early as formerly. It used to be the most simple and ordinary way of relief to apprentice poor children when very young, and this system was encouraged by a legal

¹ General Order of 22nd March, 1877. Glen's P. L. O., p. 705.

² See the return above quoted for the half year ended Michaelmas, 1884. These figures have not hitherto been specially distinguished in the statements of poor law expenses, so that it is easy to overlook this new branch of expenditure, (now amounting to nearly £34,000 a year), and thus to form erroneous conclusions.

³ In the half year ended Michaelmas, 1884, the charge for children boarded out was £13,823. This charge must be separated from the other expenses of relief, though this is not done in the English Tables, as the boarding-out system is only adopted in a comparatively small number of unions (at present 152), while in other unions the children are maintained in pauper schools. The expenditure for the maintenance of pauper children in the respective unions is given partly under the head of indoor, and partly under the head of outdoor relief, and this may lead to misapprehension.

⁴ Under the General Order for Accounts of June 14, 1867, Article 63, expenditure for the apprenticeship of pauper children is treated as in-maintenance, though the apprentices are outdoor paupers. Consequently, in-maintenance is not entirely included in the costs for the indoor poor, nor outdoor relief in those for the outdoor poor. This again shows with what caution the English poor law statistics must be used. We may also mention another provision of the same article 63, under which the burial of paupers is charged as in-maintenance. The guardians may, under 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 31, pay the cost of burial of any poor person from the poor rate, whether such person has received relief inside or outside the workhouse or not. They are further empowered by 13 & 14 Vict. c. 101, s. 2, to contribute to the cost of obtaining or enlarging burial grounds, and may also, under 18 & 19 Vict. c. 79, secure burial places for paupers by arrangement with neighbouring districts and with Cemetery Companies or Burial Boards. With regard to the cost of burial of pauper lunatics, special provisions are contained in 18 & 19 Vict. c. 105, ss. 11-13, and 25 & 26 Vict. c. 111, s. 9.

obligation upon masters to take such apprentices.¹ At present, when this obligation no longer exists, and when school attendance is compulsory, the whole subject of pauper apprenticeship has fallen into the background.

The existing regulations, contained in Arts. 52-74 of the General Order of 24th July, 1847, are as follows:—²

Poor children between nine and eighteen years of age may be bound as apprentices by the guardians. If the age is under sixteen, the consent of the parent is necessary; if over fourteen, also that of the child. In the case of a child under fourteen a medical certificate is required that the child is physically suited to the trade in question. The child must also be already able to read and at least to write his name. The indenture of apprenticeship is to be in a prescribed form and for a period not longer than eight years. The person with whom it is entered into must be a householder assessed in his own name to the poor rate, not under twenty-one years old, nor a married woman, and must live within 30 miles of the child's place of abode. If a premium is given by the guardians, part must consist of clothes and part of money, one moiety of which is to be paid on execution of the indenture, and the residue after one year. In the case of apprentices over sixteen years of age, the premium is ordinarily to consist only in the supply of clothes. For apprentices over seventeen the guardians are to provide for the payment of wages by the master to the apprentice. The master is bound to instruct the apprentice in his trade and to provide him with food, clothes, lodging and medical attendance when required. A special register of apprentices is to be kept,³ and the carrying out of the contract is to be insured by periodical inspections of the apprentices, for which a special officer may be appointed.⁴ If the master does not observe the conditions of the indenture, it may be determined by the guardians, and if he neglects the apprentice or otherwise treats him badly, the guardians may institute proceedings for the offence.⁵

Certain special rules are enacted with regard to apprenticeship to the sea-service, including a provision that two magistrates must certify that the boy has agreed to the indenture, that he is perfectly healthy and strong, and that the master appears to be a suitable person.⁶

¹ The fact that a settlement was acquired by apprenticeship, and that by putting out the children as apprentices in other districts the guardians had an easy and cheap way of disburdening themselves, also operated in favour of the apprenticeship system. At the present time, when a year's residence constitutes irremovability, this consideration has lost its force. Compulsory apprenticeship was abolished by 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 13.

² See Glen, P. L. O., pp. 77-87, and 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 12. With regard to the previous law see 43 Eliz. c. 2; 2 & 3 Anne, c. 6; 18 George III. c. 47; 42 George III. c. 46; 56 George III. c. 139; 4 George IV. c. 29 & 34.

³ 42 George III. c. 46; 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 12; 14 Vict. c. 11, s. 3.

⁴ 14 Vict. c. 11, s. 4; 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 33.

⁵ 24 & 25 Vict. c. 100, s. 26.

⁶ 17 & 18 Vict. c. 104, ss. 141-145. [But see the modifications made by 46 & 47 Vict. c. 41. TR.] With regard to entrance into the Royal Navy, see

An important branch of outdoor relief is the medical treatment of poor persons outside the workhouses, and the supply of medicine to them (Medical Outdoor Relief). We shall hereafter enter into details on this head in discussing the system for dealing with sick paupers.

We must, however, treat here of the relief which is given by the guardians from the poor rates for the emigration of paupers. The guardians were empowered¹ by the Act of 1834, to spend money or contract loans, with the approval of the Central Board, for the emigration of poor persons who had become a burden on the rates. This power, however, was fettered by various limitations. Relief for emigration might only be given to those having a settlement in the district. The expenditure must be sanctioned by a majority of the owners and ratepayers in a meeting specially called for this purpose; the sum expended must not exceed half the average annual poor rate in the last three years, and in case a loan is raised it must be paid back within five years.

Subsequent legislation has diminished these limitations. Relief for the purpose of emigration may now be given, not only to persons settled in the union, but to those who, though not so settled, could not in accordance with the law be removed in case of their destitution;² and also to orphans or deserted children under sixteen years who have become chargeable to the union, and whose settlement is unknown or is not in England.³ Moreover, it is no longer necessary that there should be a preliminary sanction by owners and ratepayers, in case the sum to be spent on emigration does not amount to more than £10 per head, and the total of the expenditure for the purpose does not exceed half the average annual poor rate during the last three years.⁴

But there is still the provision in the Act of 1834 to the effect that relief for emigration requires the approval of the Central Board, which thus has to decide as to each individual case.

The Board has in general required that explicit information (in a prescribed form) should be supplied with regard to each person to be emigrated, the expenditure involved, and the country of destination. It is to be specially remarked that the Board, at the instance of the United States of America, now refuses to sanction emigration to those States at the cost of the poor rate. As regards the sending of pauper children to Canada,

the regulations in Glen, P. L. O., p. 86, under which boys may be admitted into the R.N. from their fifteenth year. The Admiralty endeavour as much as possible to encourage the admission of such boys into the Navy. Fowle, *ut supra*, remarks (p. 147), that "the spirit shown in making it (the offer to receive pauper children into the Royal Navy), and its tendency to bridge over the gulf that divides the poor from the citizen, by enabling the boy to defend his country, instead of being maintained by it, is above praise."

¹ 4 & 5 William IV. c. 76, ss. 62, 63; 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 29.

² 11 & 12 Vict. c. 110 s. 5; 24 & 25 Vict. c. 55, s. 9; 28 & 29 Vict. c. 79, s. 8.

³ 13 & 14 Vict. c. 101, s. 4.

⁴ 12 & 13 Vict. c. 103, s. 20.

there are a number of special regulations. The emigration of pauper children to that colony had, since 1870, attained comparatively large proportions in consequence of the action of two ladies, Miss McPherson and Miss Rye. Accordingly the Central Board thought proper to make detailed enquiries as to the condition of these children, and in 1875 sent their inspector, Mr. Doyle, with this object to Canada. His report was not very favourable, and specially represented the want of suitable and systematic supervision. As a result, the Board subsequently assented to the sending of pauper children to Canada only on condition that proper measures should be taken for supervising them, and the children must also have been in a workhouse or district school for at least six months before their emigration.¹

The number of persons emigrated at the cost of the poor rates has varied much in different years. In 1852 it was 3271; in 1871 it was 893; and then decreased in 1878, when it was only 23. It has since risen. In 1883 it was 429, of whom 133 children and 95 adults were sent to Canada, 105 to Australia, and 42 to the United States.

On the average £10 a head was expended for the emigration of children to Canada; and the whole sum spent from the poor rates on emigration in 1883 was £1842. The general tendency is that the poor rate should supply funds for the emigration of adults only in exceptional cases; as it is thought that such relief may be left to the special societies for the promotion of emigration, or to charitable institutions.² The persons sent out at the cost of the poor rate are almost exclusively orphan or deserted children.

Finally, we must mention one more kind of outdoor relief, the importance of which we are unable to estimate, as we have not been able to obtain particulars on the subject. By some of the older Acts,³ the guardians, or the overseers and churchwardens, are empowered,

¹ See Memorandum of the L. G. B. of 30th April, 1883; 13th Annual Report, p. 32. The entire regulation, of which only the main points have been here indicated, is a striking instance of the conscientiousness with which the Board fulfils its duties.

² As a matter of fact, much more help to emigration is given by charitable societies than by poor-law authorities. For instance, the number of persons whose emigration was paid for in 1884 by the "Board of Guardians for the relief of the Jewish poor in England" (a purely charitable institution) was 469 (in 1883 it was 492), so that from this one source means were supplied for the emigration of more persons than from the poor rates in the whole of England and Wales. In the interesting 26th Annual Report of this society, from which the above figures have been taken, there is a statement of the principles upon which it is considered right to act as regards the provision of means of emigration. The first essential is that those sent out should be qualified for emigration as regards their physical condition and their general character; and help is generally given only when the applicant himself, or some relation or friend, contributes to the cost. Ordinarily the assistance granted does not amount to more than half the expense of emigration. Thus in 1884 the emigrants themselves contributed £727, out of a total cost of £1647. This society prefers young unmarried men as emigrants, and sends most of them to America.

³ 59 Geo. III. c. 12, ss. 12, 13; 1 & 2 Will. IV. c. 42; 1 & 2 Will. IV. c. 59; 5 & 6 Will. IV. c. 69, s. 4.; 36 Vict. c. 19 [see also 50 & 51 Vict. c. 48; Tr.].

for the relief and employment of the poor, to buy or lease land, up to fifty acres, in or near the parish, in order to set the poor to work ; for the same purpose waste or common land may be cultivated with the assent of the lord of the manor and of the majority of the commoners. So, too, Crown land may be taken with the consent of the Treasury. The guardians or overseers may let such land to poor persons at a reasonable rent, on condition that it is maintained in proper cultivation ; or, on the same condition, allotments from a rood to an acre in extent may be let to poor and industrious persons at a suitable rent, to be cultivated on their own account ; but the erection of buildings on these plots is expressly forbidden.

SECTION II.

THE WORKHOUSE PRINCIPLE.

From the above account of particular branches of Outdoor Relief, it will be seen that it is a mistake to regard it, as many English and German writers do, as merely relief at home by means of a money payment. In English authors we often meet with the assertion that the great number of outdoor paupers, or the large amount spent on outdoor relief, proves that the workhouse principle, laid down by law, is little carried out in practice. Some conclude from this that the principle is generally impossible of application, while others here find reason to demand a stricter legal limitation of outdoor relief.

In the first place, we must remember that in the English laws and regulations the workhouse is prescribed as the ordinary mode of relief for able-bodied paupers only. With regard to others, the guardians are not limited in the choice of the kind of relief to be granted. It is certainly true that the efforts of the Central Board have always been directed to extending the use of the workhouse as far as possible to other classes of paupers also. But there neither has been nor could be any intention of entirely abolishing outdoor relief. Particular kinds of outdoor relief are indicated as desirable and suited for further extension ; for example, the boarding-out system, the payment of school fees, also certain contributions towards emigration. Nor has the entire abolition of medical outdoor relief ever been suggested. The tendency is, merely, to confine relief at home, so far as it consists in a money payment, to a minimum, and to substitute the workhouse for that particular kind of assistance.

The demand for the abolition of outdoor relief is only to be understood in this limited sense ; how far the tendency has manifested itself in practical administration is not shown by the statistical returns of the number of outdoor paupers and the expenditure for outdoor relief, because they lump together the different kinds of outdoor relief, both those which some people want to abolish, and those against which nothing is to be urged. In the item "Outdoor Relief" a money payment at home is doubtless the chief factor, but it is impossible to find any definite figures as to the extent to which such relief is afforded. To the question in what degree does the work-

house principle come into practical application, we can only say that the statistical material supplies no clear answer.

Let us now examine this workhouse principle, and deal with the arguments urged for and against it.

I. In favour of the grant of relief by admission to the workhouse and against relief at home in money¹ it is urged:—²

(1.) When a person is admitted to the workhouse, the restrictions imposed on his liberty and his mode of life, and the strict discipline to which he is subjected, render his condition less desirable than that of the poorest independent labourer, and therefore the latter has an inducement to make what provision he can for the time when he may be out of work, or when age or illness may come upon him. But where outdoor relief is granted, not only is there no such inducement, but there is the danger that by the grant of relief a directly demoralizing influence may be exerted on the rest of the working population. Many of them are obliged to be satisfied with the bare necessities of life, and as even a poor law system must provide these, there is the risk that the independent labourer, seeing that his own efforts cannot bring him to a better position than that of a pauper, may lose all pleasure and interest in independent work.

(2.) The influence on the working classes also operates in another direction. In the grant of outdoor relief there is always the danger of aiding insufficient wages, and thus of artificially keeping down a scale of remuneration which ought to be raised, and which would in effect be raised if the grant of aid did not interfere with the free operation of the laws of supply and demand. This danger disappears when a pauper is received into the workhouse, where his labour may be employed for the establishment itself, or for other public objects, without exercising an unfavourable influence on the general rate of wages.

(3.) As the admission of the pauper to the workhouse makes his

¹ For the sake of brevity, we here use "outdoor relief" as meaning only that part of such relief which consists in the supply of money or necessities at home.

² The following extract from the Report of the Poor Law Commissioners for the year 1839, printed by Glen (P. L. O., p. 100), may be of interest as embracing the different arguments in favour of the workhouse principle, though in somewhat different form and sequence from those employed by us: "By means of the workhouse and its regulations, it is in the power of the guardians and the commissioners to place the condition of the pauper actually at its level—to provide for all his wants effectually—and yet so as to make the relief thus afforded desirable to those only who are *bonâ fide* in need of it. This principle of the workhouse system is very well understood as respects the able-bodied labourers, and with very few exceptions the benefits which arise from its application are admitted and appreciated. . . . If the condition of the inmates of a workhouse were to be so regulated as to invite the aged and infirm of the labouring classes to take refuge in it, it would immediately be useless as a test between indigence and indolence or fraud. It would no longer operate as an inducement to the young and healthy to provide support for their later years, or as a stimulus to them, while they have the means, to support their aged parents and relatives. The frugality and forethought of a young labourer would be useless if he foresaw the certainty of a better asylum for his old age than he could possibly provide by his own exertion."

position less desirable, it affords a security that relief will only be claimed in case of real destitution. The workhouse test affords an effective means, that is not available in the case of outdoor relief, of preventing the guardians from being imposed upon with regard to destitution. In outdoor relief there is always a risk that the applicant may by false pretences or by concealment of facts obtain assistance to which he has no right. Moreover, the admission of the pauper to the workhouse is an inducement to any of his relations who are in easy circumstances to fulfil their obligations towards him.

(4.) Admission to the workhouse is the only means of securing with certainty that the pauper shall be kept from starving. In the grant of outdoor relief there is always danger that it may be insufficient, and that if there is no help from any other source, the State may fail to fulfil its duty of preserving its citizens from starvation.

II. The arguments urged against the workhouse principle proceed from two different points of view :—¹

(1.) Relief in the workhouse is more costly, and involves expenditure for the erection and maintenance of special establishments, which would have been saved under a system of outdoor relief.

(2.) The workhouse principle is inhumane. By admission to the workhouse family ties are dissolved, and the incentive to independence is lessened. There is also the danger of moral degradation by association with the other inmates of the workhouse.

The first objection is purely financial, the second touches the ethical side of the question. The first is one to which we should attach little weight, even admitting its accuracy. It has been often shown that in the case of a poor law system the main question is and must be what kind of relief is most for the interest of the community, for the advantage of the State ; and the question of expense is subordinate to this consideration. The objection is in truth very shortsighted. People only ask what expense will be incurred by the relief of a given number of paupers in this or the other fashion, and omit to reflect that the tendency of the workhouse, under a proper poor-law system, is to reduce the number of persons relieved. If the workhouse principle, apart from expense, is the right one, it must be assumed that the number of paupers will not be constant, but will steadily decrease. Accordingly, any temporary

¹ See especially Professor Bryce's address to the South Midland P. L. Conference (Reports 1876, p. 7), also Reports by Mr. Wodehouse (1st Annual Report of the L. G. B. App., p. 88), and Mr. Longley (3rd Annual Report of the L. G. B., App., p. 136). In Seyffardt's paper on the Elberfeld system, printed in the 'Reports on Poor Laws in Foreign Countries,' p. 365, he has thought right to set forth in detail the arguments which he considers to be valid against the workhouse principle. As we make it our rule to abstain from criticism of German writings, we must refrain from combating Seyffardt's arguments, and content ourselves with reproducing the observation of an English author on the subject. Fowle (*ut supra*, p. 49) says : "The writer does not appear to have a very practical knowledge of the working of the English system, for he fails to notice that few persons who would be thought worthy of outdoor relief, still fewer who would deteriorate in the workhouse, ever find their way within its walls."

increase in expenditure will be amply balanced in the course of years by the saving consequent on the reduction of pauperism.¹

The second objection is much more serious. The simple answer to the statement that the workhouse principle is inhumane is that poor law relief is not based on humanitarian considerations, but is administered in the interests of the community.² The assertion that admission to the workhouse is morally injurious to the persons relieved is certainly a formidable argument against the whole principle. But every one who has actually seen English workhouses knows that this assertion represents merely a theory founded on a sentimental over-estimate of the real character of the classes of the population who receive poor law relief.

It is only necessary to look at the inmates of a workhouse.³ If we except the one class who would be better out of the workhouse, the single women who come there to lie in, we find that the inmates are almost entirely poor people who are either unfitted by nature for the struggle of life or are broken down by their mode of living, or are incapable of work owing to age or illness; that they stand pretty much on the same footing⁴ as regards morality; and that they are not likely to be deteriorated by intercourse with each other. Is it possible, in connection with these people, to speak of the beneficent influence of family ties? Most of them, before their admission to the workhouses, have dwelt in tenements which can barely be called homes. The removal of the children from their previous surroundings is a blessing for them; and, as regards the separation of man and wife, a striking and practical proof is to be found in the following facts, showing the small extent to which sentiment operates in this class.

In accordance with an order of the Central Board, up to 1847 the two sexes were completely separated from each other in the workhouses. Public opinion, however, was very strong against this regulation. People painted in strong colours the evil consequences of tearing asunder family ties, and declared that it was barbarous cruelty that old married people who were forced by circumstances to claim poor-law relief should be separated from each other in the workhouse.

¹ The following passage in the report of the guardians of the Whitechapel Union for the half-year ending Michaelmas, 1884, meets the case: "The guardians trust, however, that they will be credited with higher aims than even those of reducing either the number of paupers or the expenditure in poor relief. The conviction having once been forced upon them that the system of relief which prevailed throughout the country was productive of great social evils, and that in their efforts to deal with poverty they were going beyond their legitimate province, and injuring rather than benefiting the poor, the guardians determined by the gradual application of sound principles of relief to do what was in their power to stem the tide of hereditary pauperism."

² Professor Bryce in his speech above quoted observes that "kindness to the individual is cruelty to the class."

³ We assume that the children and the sick are maintained in separate establishments, as is invariably the case in the metropolitan districts.

⁴ Persons of distinctly bad character are, in accordance with an express provision of the General Consolidated Order of July 24, 1847, article 99, § 2, to be kept separate from the rest of the inmates.

The opposition reached such proportions that the legislature was obliged to deal with the matter, and in 1847 it was enacted that married couples over sixty years old should not be compelled to be separated in the workhouse.¹ But in practice it was found that only an insignificant number of these old married couples were desirous of living together.² In those workhouses in which, in consequence of these enactments, special rooms have been erected for married couples, there is great difficulty in getting them occupied, because such couples, for the most part, absolutely refuse to occupy one room.³

There is no doubt that there are cases in which the breaking up of families is a real hardship, and also some in which association with the other inmates of the workhouse may have an injurious effect on individuals who chance to be morally superior to them. But these are exceptions, and it would be preposterous, on account of them, to alter a regulation which is in general a good one.⁴ Such cases may be dealt with otherwise. The guardians have a right, even in the case of the able-bodied, to make exceptions from the general regulations on the ground of special circumstances. And even the most strenuous upholders of the workhouse principle, who demand increased stringency in the regulations on the subject, do not go so far as to demand that relief shall never be given outside the workhouse.

In the poor-law system it is of especial importance to separate

¹ 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, s. 23. This provision is extended by 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 10, by which the guardians are empowered, with the assent of the Central Board, to allow man and wife to live together in the workhouse if one of them is over sixty years old or is not able-bodied.

² According to the 10th Report of the L. G. B., p. xxviii., the number of married couples who have availed themselves of the permission to live together in the workhouse was in the year 1880, in the metropolis, 117, and about an equal number in the rest of the country.

³ I myself have come across a characteristic instance of this kind. When I visited the Kensington workhouse with Mr. Hedley, and heard him ask the inmates the usual question whether any one had complaint to make, an old man came forward and complained that he was obliged by the master of the workhouse to live in the same room as his wife, although he had expressly objected to do so. The master answered that he could not make any other arrangements, because the workhouse was full, and only the rooms for married couples were empty. When the man was asked why he did not want to live with his wife, he answered that in the wing devoted to married people, smoking was strictly forbidden, though (now and then) allowed in other parts of the workhouse. Thus the enjoyment of an occasional pipe was considered to outweigh the charms of the society of his better half.

⁴ It is impossible in all cases to prevent injury to individuals from regulations made in the interests of the community. In poor law questions people in many ways seem to be actuated, even now, by humanitarian notions alone, and this explains the fact that objections are raised which would never be thought of if any other matter were in question. Take, for example, the case of the sick man who applies for admission to hospital. He is forced, in the general interest, to submit himself to certain restrictions, to be separated from his wife and family, though in particular cases there is no reason against the admission of his wife also, and indeed this might sometimes be an advantage. The man who claims public assistance has no right to complain if it is granted him in a form which to him personally is a hardship, but which is judged to be fitting in the interests of the community.

rules from exceptions, and not to have regard, in framing general regulations, to objections which only apply to exceptional cases. It should be remembered, too, that such cases, for which general regulations are too harsh, furnish the occasion for private charity. The existence of stringent rules, suited to average paupers, supplies private charity with a proper field for its operations. The English poor law has always had in view¹ this co-operation of private charity with public relief, and it is one of the main advantages of the workhouse system that it draws a distinct line between the two provinces of relief.

Let us proceed from this criticism of the workhouse system to an account of the English workhouse itself.

SECTION III.

WORKHOUSE ADMINISTRATION.

As already stated, a workhouse has to be provided for each union. The plans, the building, and any alterations, are subject to the control of the Central Board, which may sanction loans for these purposes. Of course, workhouses differ greatly as to size; the smallest being in Wales, where there are several intended only for 50 or 60 persons, while some of the largest are in the metropolis, where one (Marylebone) is constructed for the reception of 1868 persons.²

The Central Board has issued uniform regulations with regard to the administration of workhouses. They are very detailed, but may be shortly stated as follows:³

I. The Consolidated Order provides for the appointment of a staff of officers for the *administration of the workhouse*. As regards most of them, such as medical officers, schoolmasters, nurses, porters, &c., their names explain their functions; but the Order has nevertheless prescribed their duties with the utmost minuteness. Here it will be sufficient to mention the duties of the most important of them—viz., the master of the workhouse. With him rests the supervision of the whole establishment; the classification of the paupers,

¹ See the following passage in the Report of the Royal Commission of 1834, p. 263: "The bane of all pauper legislation has been the legislating for extreme cases. Every exception, every violation of the general rule, to meet a real case of unusual hardship, lets in a whole class of fraudulent cases by which that rule must in time be destroyed. Where cases of real hardship occur, the remedy must be applied by individual charity, a virtue for which no system of compulsory relief can be, or ought to be, a substitute."

² According to a return published in 1883 of the average number of inmates of workhouses, there are two in Wales, Lampeter and Aberayron, which contain on an average twelve inmates, as against 1868 in the Marylebone workhouse. See 'Parliamentary Papers,' 1883, vol. 58, p. 937. [The Liverpool workhouse seems to be absolutely the largest in the kingdom. It has accommodation for about 4,000 persons.—TR.]

³ The more important provisions are contained in the Consolidated Order of July 24, 1847, arts. 88-152 and arts. 207-214; Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' pp. 100 and 198.

their employment, their food, their clothes, are all matters for which he is responsible ; he has to see to the maintenance of discipline, to keep accurate record of all proceedings in the establishment, &c. He is assisted in these functions by the matron, who is generally his wife, and who is specially responsible for the supervision of the female inmates and the children up to seven years old. She also acts for the master in case of his absence.

For the supervision of the establishment there is a special Visiting Committee of the Guardians,¹ which has to visit the workhouse at least once a week to receive the reports of the master, the medical officer, the chaplain, the schoolmaster, &c. ; to examine the stores in hand, and to inform itself as to the general condition of the workhouse. It has also to afford the inmates an opportunity of making any complaints, and to make any necessary investigations on the subject. The result of the visit is to be entered in a visiting book under fourteen prescribed heads, and this book has to be produced at the next meeting of the Board of Guardians.

II. *Admission to the workhouse* is granted—

(a) Upon a written order of the guardians, which must be signed by the clerk ;²

(b) Upon a provisional order of the relieving officer or of an overseer, which these officials are empowered to give in urgent cases ;

(c) Without a previous order, by the master or matron of the workhouse, who may themselves admit a destitute person in case of sudden or urgent necessity.

In cases (b) and (c) the final decision rests with the guardians, to whom the case has to be submitted at their next meeting.

The new inmate is in the first place examined by the medical officer in a receiving ward. If found to be ill, he is, upon the order of the medical officer, placed in the infirmary or sick ward, or in case of infectious disease or lunacy, in a special establishment.³ If he is in good health, he must, before admission to the workhouse, be thoroughly cleansed and be clothed in the dress provided by the guardians. Ordinarily the clothing for all the inmates is the same, but exceptions may be made in particular cases. The pauper's own clothes are purified and preserved, and are delivered to him on his discharge.

III. *Classification of inmates*.—The pauper is taken from the receiving ward into the ward of the workhouse provided for his class. There are rooms separate⁴ from each other for the following seven classes :

¹ If the guardians omit to appoint a Visiting Committee, the Local Government Board has the power of appointing a paid visitor under 10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, s. 24.

² The order must not be dated more than six days previously.

³ Dangerous lunatics must in no case be kept longer than fourteen days in the workhouse.

⁴ With regard to the special provision as to the cohabitation of married couples over sixty years old (10 & 11 Vict. c. 109, s. 23, and 39 & 40 Vict. c. 61, s. 10), see above, p. 206, note 1.

- (1) Infirm men.
- (2) Able-bodied men and youths over fifteen.
- (3) Boys between seven and fifteen.
- (4) Infirm women.
- (5) Able-bodied women and girls over fifteen.
- (6) Girls between seven and fifteen.
- (7) Children under seven.

Subdivisions of particular classes may be made with reference to the moral character or behaviour or the previous habits of the inmates. The maximum number of persons to be admitted into the respective wards is prescribed by the Central Board.¹ Any excess over this number must be reported to the Central Board.²

There is no kind of communication between the respective wards ; different classes are kept rigidly separate. Children under seven, however, may be accommodated in the wards for women. The mother is always allowed access at reasonable times to her child under seven years old. Parents in general have the right of seeing their children in separate divisions of the workhouse once daily. Finally, persons in one ward may be employed in a suitable fashion as attendants or nurses in another ward.

IV. *Discipline and Diet.*—The daily routine of the inmates is prescribed once for all. At fixed hours they must rise and go to bed, must take their meals and perform their tasks. Every morning, at the appointed time, the names of the inmates of the respective wards must be called over by the master of the workhouse or the matron. The meals, except in the case of the sick and children, are taken in the dining hall. For each class there is a special dietary approved by the Central Board, in which is precisely laid down the kind and quantity of food to be given at breakfast, dinner and supper.³ This dietary is to be hung up in the dining hall, and any inmate who believes that he does not receive the amount due to him, has the right of requiring that his portion shall be weighed out in the presence of two witnesses. In the case of the sick, the medical officer may order special food apart from the dietary (house diet, full diet, low diet, fever diet, extras), and also spirituous liquors. Otherwise, the inmates are only allowed to have the prescribed food. Spirituous liquors are strictly forbidden, and there is a special penalty for their introduction into the work-

¹ In accordance with the recommendations of a special Cubic Space Committee of 1870, the minimum of room per person is fixed at 300 cubic feet, but in the sick wards it is 850, and in those for lying-in women 1200 cubic feet. These figures relate only to the sleeping rooms, but besides these there are in all workhouses dining-halls and workrooms. There are also, at any rate in the wards of the infirm, rooms in which the inmates pass the day.

² As regards the metropolis, there is a special provision that if the maximum prescribed by the Central Board is exceeded, repayment from the common fund shall be suspended, and it may even be entirely withheld : 33 & 34 Vict. c. 18, s. 1, subs. 4.

³ The following dietary is given as an example :—

houses.¹ Exceptions are only permitted at Christmas, when the paupers may be regaled with whatever food the guardians or charitable people may provide for them.

Smoking is generally forbidden, but this prohibition is not very rigidly enforced. The inmates are ordinarily allowed to receive tobacco from persons visiting them and to smoke it in the open air between the meals and the beginning of work.

As regards visitors, the guardians fix a certain day, generally once a week, on which the inmates may receive visits without limitation, but in the presence of an officer of the establishment, in order that he may see that forbidden articles are not introduced. In cases of serious illness, the visits of relatives are always permitted. Moreover, the master or matron is empowered on special occasions to allow visits; and free use is made of this discretionary power.²

Not only is the introduction of food and drink forbidden, but also that of books and writings of improper or unsuitable character which may be likely to produce insubordination. All books introduced have to undergo the censorship of the master.³ Card-playing and

	BREAKFAST.		DINNER.							SUPPER.	
	Porridge.	Milk.	Cooked Meat.	Potatoes and other Vegetables.	Bread.	Soup.	Broth.	Suet Pudding.	Hash.	Porridge.	Milk.
	pt.	pt.	oz.	oz.	oz.	pt.	pt.	oz.	lbs.	oz.	pt.
Sunday . . .	1½	½	4	12						1½	½
Monday . . .	1½	½			7		1			1½	½
Tuesday . . .	1½	½				½		14		1½	½
Wednesday . .	1½	½			6	1				1½	½
Thursday . . .	1½	½	4	12						1½	½
Friday . . .	1½	½					½	14		1½	½
Saturday . . .	1½	½							1	1½	½

This dietary is designed for men, in that for women the quantities are rather smaller. Of late years in many workhouses an alteration of the dietary has been introduced by giving fish once a week for dinner. The cheapness of fish in England has allowed this to be done without increasing the expenses. Medical men regard this alteration as very beneficial to health. See 13th Annual Report of the Local Government Board, p. lii. Every alteration of dietary requires the previous approval of the Central Board: Workhouse Dietary Order of Feb. 16, 1848; Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 262.

¹ 4 & 5 Will. 4. c. 76, ss. 91-94.

² See the question of Mr. Dixon Hartland on this point in the House of Commons, of March 10, 1885, and the answer by the Parliamentary Secretary of the Local Government Board (*Times*, March 11, 1885).

³ In the workhouses there is always plenty of literature, newspapers, illustrated journals, religious books, &c. This is procured partly by the guardians; and

games of chance are forbidden ; but this prohibition is not very rigidly enforced. In some workhouses the infirm inmates pass much of their time in playing dominoes and games of the same sort.

As regards the employment of the able-bodied inmates, it is provided generally that the guardians shall determine the kind of employment, and that in no circumstances is any remuneration to be paid. As regards the work and the principles upon which it is selected, there is much difference in the respective unions ; and this is a point on which some detailed observations will be made presently.

Children admitted to the workhouse must be instructed for at least three hours daily in reading, writing, religion and other subjects, such "as may fit them for service, and train them to habits of usefulness, industry and virtue."

The question of divine service has given rise to various difficulties and disputes, and is now regulated in the following way.¹

In every workhouse a special register is to be kept of the religious creed of the inmates. In the case of children under twelve, the religion of the father is to be entered, or, if this is not known, or the child is illegitimate, the religion of the mother. Children over twelve are allowed to choose for themselves in what religion they will be brought up. This register is at all times to be open to the inspection of the ratepayers and of the ministers of each denomination. A minister may, in accordance with the regulations, visit and instruct the inmates of the workhouse who are inscribed on the register as belonging to his faith, unless such inmate, being over fourteen years of age, raises objection. For every workhouse a special chaplain has to be appointed with the approval of the Bishop of the Diocese, and it is his duty to hold divine service² on Sunday, to instruct and examine the children, and also to report upon the moral and religious state of the inmates. If in this way divine service is not provided for an inmate according to the rites of his religion, he may, under certain restrictions, attend service outside the workhouse.

Temporary absence from the workhouse may also be permitted either by the guardians themselves or by the master in accordance with their instructions. Special reasons for such absence must be given, as, for example, in order to visit a near relation or to seek

presents of books are often made to workhouses by private individuals. A friendly donor has presented the workhouses of the metropolis with the pictures of the German Crown Prince and Princess [1885], which leave much to be desired in the matter of resemblance, but serve to adorn the bare walls of the day-room in the ward allotted to the infirm.

¹ 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 23, and Creed Register Order of Nov. 26, 1868 ; Glen's 'Poor Law Orders,' p. 537. See also 25 & 26 Vict c. 43, and 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113, s. 14.

² Divine service must be held in the workhouse every Sunday, unless the Central Board dispenses with it on special grounds. It must be attended by all the inmates (except the sick), unless they object on religious grounds. Grace is to be said before and after each meal, very brief. On Sundays and holidays no work is required or done except the most necessary household duties.

work. Periodical absence at stated intervals is not to be permitted.¹ The master must report regularly to the Board of Guardians as to the leave granted by him.

Paupers may quit the workhouse for good at any time on giving notice of their intention, and are ordinarily only detained for such a "reasonable time" as may be necessary for carrying out the regulations for discharge (giving up the workhouse clothing, receipt of own clothing, &c.). In accordance, however, with the Act of 1871,² the guardians may direct that the discharge shall not be till twenty-four hours after notice has been given, and this period may be extended to forty-eight hours if the pauper has already discharged himself in the same month, and to seventy-two hours if he has done so more than twice in the last two months.³ If he is able-bodied, and other members of his family are also in the workhouse, they are discharged with him unless the guardians make an exception for special reasons.⁴ The moot question, whether a married woman may be discharged from the workhouse without her husband, has been settled by the Central Board by the decision that the husband by virtue of his marital authority may forbid his wife to leave the workhouse, but that if he refuses to make use of this authority the guardians cannot prevent the wife from discharging herself, though they may discharge her husband with her.

V. *Punishments*.—There are very comprehensive penal regulations for the maintenance of discipline. Thirteen minor offences are specified in respect of which the master may punish the pauper as disorderly with a reduction of diet up to forty-eight hours. If the pauper repeats one of these minor offences within seven days, or if he commits one of eight graver offences specially mentioned, he may be punished by the guardians as refractory, with solitary confinement up to twenty-four hours, and this may be accompanied with a reduction of diet.⁵ In certain circumstances, the master is empowered himself to inflict solitary confinement up to twelve hours. Corporal punishment is restricted to boys. It must be inflicted not earlier than two hours after the offence, and only with a rod or other instrument previously approved by the guardians or the Visiting Committee.⁶ A report of all punishments inflicted is to be entered in a special book.

¹ This provision is not very strictly enforced in practice, and cases are not infrequent in which the pauper is allowed to go out for the Sunday once or twice in the month.

² 34 & 35 Vict. c. 108, s. 4.

³ With regard to casual paupers, there are special regulations to be mentioned hereafter, when we come to speak specially of that class.

⁴ This is in accordance with the principle already mentioned, that relief to any member of a family should be regarded as given to the head of the family.

⁵ If the punishment of twenty-four hours' solitary confinement appears to the guardians inadequate for the special case, the delinquent may be taken before the magistrate, who may impose a severe punishment under the general enactments; see 34 & 35 Vict. c. 108, ss. 7, 8.

⁶ These provisions are very characteristic of the care with which the smallest details of administration are regulated by the Central Board.

So much as to the regulations issued by the Central Board. The Board has itself characterized them as follows in the Report of 1839 :

"They will be found to consist of two classes of regulations :—

"(1) Those which are necessary for the maintenance of good order in any building in which considerable numbers of persons of both sexes and of different ages assemble. (2) Those which are necessary not for that purpose, but in order that these establishments may not be almshouses but workhouses in the proper meaning of the term, and may produce the results which the Legislature intended."

Anybody who has seen an English workhouse must admit that the first object is fully attained, for excellent order is maintained. All legitimate wants are amply satisfied without disregard of the necessity for careful and economical administration. The proper mean is preserved between humanitarian indulgence and excessive stringency. In this respect the English regulations may certainly serve as a model for other establishments of the kind.

But how as regards the attainment of the second object? To speak the truth, we must admit that in effect the establishments seem more like almshouses than workhouses.¹ This diversion of workhouses from their original object is, however, not to be laid to the charge of the regulations, but is mainly the consequence of the kind of people who are now inmates. In 1869 Mr. Goschen issued a statistical return as to the various classes of inmates of metropolitan workhouses. In round numbers they were grouped as follows :

	Per cent.
6,000 sick, including lying-in women	· 39
5,000 old or infirm persons requiring medical assistance	· 6
1,700 imbeciles	· 8
2,400 children	· 37
10,500 healthy old people	· 10
3,000 able-bodied adults	·
28,600	100

These percentages would, roughly speaking, apply to the metropolis at the present time. As regards the rest of the country it is different, inasmuch as the number of children in the country workhouses is much greater. While in the metropolis children are in the workhouses at any rate only up to seven years old, in the rest of the country a larger proportion of the pauper children remain in the workhouses.

We shall consider here only the figures given for the metropolis. In the case of 53 per cent. of the inmates, there can scarcely be any question of doing work. The majority may thus be considered incapable of labour. Of the remaining 47 per cent. 37 per cent. are over sixty years of age, and therefore cannot do work requiring

¹ The separate arrangement in the casual ward will be specially referred to. In our present observations we leave the casual paupers and their treatment out of the question.

ordinary physical powers. Thus only 10 per cent. are left who are qualified to be inmates of a workhouse in its proper sense.

If we examine these ten per cent. more closely, however, the case assumes a different aspect. Among them there are not 1 per cent. of whom it can be said that their bodily and mental powers would enable them to take an independent part in the struggle for existence.¹ More than 9 per cent. are people who, although not too old nor too young for work, nor suffering from any malady requiring medical treatment, are nevertheless the residuum of the community. They are persons whose helplessness or degradation is written on their countenances, figures such as are often to be found in prisons, and as to whom any sensible man would say that it is in the interest of the community as well as of the particular individual that they should be kept as much as possible from the outer world.

It is sad that the number of inmates who have fallen through their own faults and vices is so large, and we will not attempt to decide whether the proportion is greater in England than elsewhere. The measures of prevention to be taken with regard to such persons do not belong to the province of the poor law, but must be treated in connection with an entirely different question, which in our opinion is the most important one for England, viz., preventive measures against drunkenness.²

We have specially referred to this class of persons in order to enable a right judgment to be formed as to the treatment of the inmates of the workhouse. For it is quite natural that an establishment in which only ten per cent. are able-bodied, and of these not one per cent. are up to the average of labourers, should not possess the character of a real place of work.

The fact that the number of really able-bodied is so small must, especially where (as in the metropolis) poor law administration is efficiently carried out, be regarded as a proof that at least one

¹ In my visits to English workhouses, I have taken special pains to clear up this point. My questions generally received from the master the reply, "We have such and such a number of 'able-bodied men' in the establishment, but we have very few who would have a fair chance in the labour market." On visiting the ward for the able-bodied, I recognized the truth of this statement, and if I enquired as to the circumstances of the really able-bodied men, I found that many of them were not English but Irish. The number of Englishmen in workhouses as to whom it may be said, "Why does not this man support himself by his own labour?" is very small indeed. Of course this is so only in ordinary times; in real crises of trade and manufactures, such as, for instance, existed in some districts in the north of England in the winter of 1884-5, the case is different. But such exceptional times, in any relief system, demand exceptional measures, and the only special thing about England in this respect is that such cases of necessity occur more frequently than elsewhere, because the percentage of the population dependent on trade is much larger.

² Only a man who has himself been in England, and has made himself acquainted with the life of the lower classes, can understand the movement of the teetotalers with their pledge of total abstinence from spirituous liquors. To us Germans it is incomprehensible. See the speech of Mr. S. Morley, M.P., at the conference of relieving officers convoked in London on the 24th of February, 1885, by the National Temperance League (*Times*, March 2, 1885).

main object is attained, namely, that persons who can maintain themselves, do in fact usually abstain from applying for public relief.¹ The workhouse test has been successful in securing that such persons shall make no use of the so-called "right to relief." In order to appreciate the improvement in this respect, it is only necessary to glance at the condition of affairs which was described by the Royal Commissioners in 1834, and the main points of which have been already given in our account of the historical development of the poor law.

If the present workhouses do not give the impression of being places of labour, this is due, not to faulty administration, but to the fact that now there is not a sufficient number of inmates for a workhouse of this kind. A striking proof of this is to be found in the fact that in the metropolis a large number of unions have combined to place all the able-bodied paupers of their districts in a single workhouse, and that this workhouse is ordinarily not half full.

The circumstance that the number of really able-bodied in the workhouses is so small must naturally also have an influence on the kind of work which the guardians can require to be performed.

It is not long since oakum-picking was almost the only occupation in workhouses, and it remains the chief one. This untwisting and pulling to pieces of old ships' cables is senseless from every point of view. If the object is to employ labour in the workhouses in the most remunerative fashion in order to meet the costs of maintaining the paupers, the result of oakum-picking is most unsatisfactory. The net proceeds of the work are insignificant. If we put aside the question of profit, and consider only that of the best deterrent (it being supposed necessary, especially soon after the Act of 1834, to give the paupers unpleasant tasks in order to render the workhouse test more stringent), oakum-picking is also unsuited to this purpose, as it is irksome only to those who are not used to it. The old hands find it, as is generally acknowledged, a very easy and comfortable employment. It appears, however, defective in a point which in a real workhouse would be regarded as most important, namely, that an educational influence ought to be exercised by the work, in order that the man himself may have pleasure in his labour, and that a desire for employment may be aroused in him. In order to effect this, it is, above all, necessary that the work should be regarded as really useful by those who are compelled to do it. From this point of view there seems great doubt as to the wisdom of the regulation to the effect that the pauper is in no case to have an interest in the results of his work.² But certainly work like oakum-picking, which

¹ Nicholls is right in saying (vol. ii. p. 441), "A workhouse may be regarded as being useful in proportion to the small number of its inmates." This applies especially to the able-bodied.

² Mr. Longley, who is certainly to be regarded as one of the most competent experts in the matter, pronounced against this provision in his reports (above quoted) to the Central Board. He was especially in favour of the grant of extra diet as a reward for industry and good work, and there certainly could be very

is scarcely of any use, must be depressing, rather than elevating. Its only advantage, upon which much stress is laid in England, is that it does not compete with private enterprise.

We will not attempt to decide whether this last reason is of paramount importance as regards the choice of work.¹ At any rate, there is no objection to occupying the inmates with the manifold duties connected with the establishment or with the production of articles for branches of the public service, *e.g.* the army or navy. In our opinion the chief object should be to make the work as remunerative as possible in the case of those paupers who are little likely to maintain themselves independently outside the establishment, and this is the case with the majority of the inmates. But as regards the really able-bodied, educational considerations should be mainly regarded in the choice of occupation. Here the chief object should be to arouse a desire for regular labour and a love of industry. In the case of many of these people it is their dislike of regular labour that has brought them into the workhouse, and they should be shown the way out by being habituated to hard and regular work, but to work of a useful kind, such as may be performed by reasonable men outside the workhouse. If they see that by the expenditure of the same amount of exertion they can maintain themselves outside the workhouse, this consideration, rather than a task which is useless and merely deterrent, is likely to make them try to be independent of public relief, and to stand on their own feet. Confinement in a workhouse is of itself sufficiently deterrent; no increased severity is required;² and it is specially necessary to avoid everything likely to dull those who are susceptible of improvement. Nothing is more likely to do this than useless work. There is no doubt that the choice of an occupation which would be in accordance with these principles is attended with serious difficulties. Here, as in the case of all enforced labour, we have not only to consider a number of general points, as, for example, the question how to supply the necessary supervision, the danger that those employed may destroy the tools or materials entrusted to them,

little objection to providing industrious inmates with small quantities of tobacco as a special recognition, and giving them permission to smoke. At the present time the express prohibition of smoking is generally disregarded, and it is only a question how far individual inmates can obtain tobacco from their friends or from the benevolent.

¹ It should be remembered that labour in workhouses must be differently regarded from that in gaols. Residence in prisons is involuntary, and the work performed there is essentially in contrast with free labour, much more so than that in workhouses, where the inmates have always the option of going back to the open labour market.

² Here we find the common English characteristic of rushing into extremes. After coming to the conclusion that it is reasonable so to administer the poor law that everybody, so far as possible, shall be deterred from claiming public relief, people seem to have carried the principle of repulsion beyond reasonable bounds, and to have invested it with undue importance as regards the whole system. The consequence is that the salutary influence which a well-chosen occupation may exert upon the paupers has not been sufficiently appreciated.

&c., but we must also, in choosing the work to be performed, have regard to the above classification of the inmates. Only a small minority are competent to perform work which requires the use of full bodily powers. The larger number of the persons to be employed are only able-bodied to a limited extent. We must also remember that individual inmates may at any time leave the establishment, and that for this reason, apart from other grounds, the work must not be such as to require much time for learning it. Still, recognizing all these difficulties, we must confess that it would be easy to secure something better in this direction than is ordinarily supplied in English workhouses.

The question of the proper kind of employment for workhouse inmates has certainly received too little consideration, and it is very strange that the Central Board, which has done so much in the way of introducing improvements, has left this matter almost untouched. No attempt has been made to collect materials showing in what way the employment of workhouse inmates is regulated by particular unions. It is unquestionable that great differences exist; and no doubt particular unions may have struck out the right line in this matter.¹ But in most unions the work consists now, as it did half a century ago, almost exclusively of oakum-picking, stone-breaking, broom-making, and, in rare cases, of mat-making and wood-cutting.²

The fact that in this matter the Central Board, contrary to its usual custom, has remained absolutely passive, may be attributed to two causes. The first is the fear that the performance of useful and remunerative work will be objected to as competing with private enterprise. This is a very intelligible ground upon which a party ministry may desire to avoid measures which would be unpopular among a large proportion of the population. There is also the

¹ Here also the Whitechapel Union excels. It adopts the principle of "rendering the workhouse educational as well as deterrent." See the Report already quoted, p. 1; and with regard to the work performed in the workhouse of this union, see the very interesting Report of the workhouse master, of Dec. 1, 1884, at p. 52.

² At the Poor Law Conferences of 1883, the subject of employment in workhouses was treated at length. The discussions on the subject afford an insight into the experience of individual unions. Very valuable material is to be found in an address by Mr. John Hall at the Yorkshire Conference (Report, p. 519). By enquiries at individual workhouses he has procured information as to the work done, and although the materials which he brought together make no claim to completeness (no particulars are given as to the number of the inmates occupied in the workhouses in different branches of work), it seems clear that, besides farm-labour, oakum-picking and stone-breaking are the chief occupations. The corn-mill introduced into a number of unions, and also fire-wood bundling, appeared to be improvements. The general result is thus stated by another speaker, Mr. E. Williams (North-Western District Conference Report, p. 267):—

"It is generally admitted that workhouse labour has never yet been made profitable, that the enforced labour now being performed is in many instances done at an actual loss to the ratepayers, and that it is enforced, not with the idea of gain, but as a species of punishment or deterrent against the habitual pauper or the vagrant classes. . . There are no elevating influences in our present system."

second reason, that in the workhouse regulations very little consideration has been given—except in the treatment of children—to the importance of improving the inmates so as to make them useful members of society. All the regulations seem to take it for granted that it is hopeless to think of ameliorating such persons as enter workhouses. It is usual to make much of the deterrent character of the workhouse in order to warn people against entering it, and anybody who has undergone the workhouse test cannot be very confidently expected to leave and to take a satisfactory place in the community. This at any rate is the case with regard to the majority of the inmates, but in this matter even a small minority deserves consideration.

This is the one point as to which objection may be properly taken to the English workhouse with its present administration. The regulations are sufficient to prevent claims for public relief from being made by those who are in a condition to maintain themselves; the management of the workhouse is excellent; but there are no regulations which are calculated to enable the inmates to find their way back to independence.¹

If we except those persons admitted solely on account of disease, we must admit that as regards the rest it is very improbable that their power and their desire to work should be strengthened and improved by their treatment in the workhouse, or that they should in general feel themselves fitted to leave it and to renew the struggle for existence. However deterrent the workhouse may seem to the man who makes acquaintance with it for the first time, it is very probable that after a long stay in it, and with the wearisome monotony of the existence,² this feeling may be entirely deadened, and the man may become accustomed to workhouse life.

But, as is the case with a number of objections which have been

¹ In a paper read by Mr. Alsager Hill in 1869, at the Social Science Congress at Bristol (Transactions, p. 519), in which the employment of workhouse inmates in useless labour is strongly condemned, another point is raised which may be noted in this connection. He says the workhouse authorities might put themselves *en rapport* with the labour market, so that those within the workhouse shall as speedily as possible be put again into the labour market. We do not fail to appreciate the importance of this suggestion, although it obviously applies more to the inmates of casual wards than to those of the workhouse proper. But we believe that the establishment of a connection with the labour market, the procuring of work outside the workhouse, does not come within the province of the poor law officers, but is a task more suited to private charity. Private charity has already done something in this direction for at least one class of workhouse inmates, viz., the mothers of illegitimate children, by establishing societies for befriending girls, and this has been attended with the best results. But it has been shown that it is not enough simply to procure employment, but that it is necessary that persons brought out from the workhouse into the open labour market should receive further aid in order to preserve their independence. It is requisite that more interest should be taken in such persons than officials can bestow.

² Fowle, p. 140, aptly characterizes the English workhouse as a house of cheerless comfort.

raised, not without reason, against the English poor law, this has nothing to do with the system itself, but only with the fashion of its administration, and we believe that, through the improvements introduced or already in progress, this reproach may be removed without any alteration of the system, and merely by a change in the practical administration and especially in the selection of work.

SECTION IV.

PAUPER CHILDREN.

The class of paupers whose judicious treatment is attended with the greatest difficulties are the children. In the first place, the number of those upon whom unsuitable treatment exercises a bad influence is far larger than in any other class. Regard must be had to the parents, so that the relief may not make them reckless in bringing children into the world or in the neglect of provision for their maintenance. Regard must also be had to the children, in order that the method adopted may remove them from pauperism and make them useful members of the community. And finally, regard must be had to the labouring poor, and care must be taken that the pauper children shall not be in a better position than the children of the working classes. The first point is the one which can be the most easily dealt with. The English poor law generally provides that relief given to the children should be regarded as relief to the parents, and consequently that the latter should be subject to the same restrictions as if they had claimed relief for themselves.¹ It is much more difficult to deal with the second and third points. It must be remembered that here there are divergent considerations to be regarded, and that the one may be neglected in favour of the other. We must take into account the fact that most of the pauper children have not been cared for in mind or body, and that therefore, apart² from the question how far hereditary tendencies play a part in pauperism, special care is required in order to make the children useful men with capacity for success in the struggle for existence. There is obvious difficulty in securing this without giving the rest of the population the notion that the poor law provides for paupers out of the public rates better than the independent workman for his own children.

It is just this difficulty which has caused the Central Board to abstain in this matter from favouring or recommending any one method, and to confine itself to the collection of unbiassed evidence as to the various systems (see above, p. 98), in order that

¹ See specially the restrictions referred to at p. 133, as to the case in which the father or unmarried mother is able-bodied. If outdoor relief is given to the father of a child between five and thirteen years old, a condition is always made that the child should attend an elementary school: 36 & 37 Vict. c. 86, s. 3.

² In a paper by Dr. F. J. Mouat on the education and training of the children of the poor, published in the 'Journal of the London Statistical Society,' vol. 43, p. 184, which contains very valuable material, special stress is laid on the point "that pauperism and the diseases begotten of it are to a very large extent hereditary."

Boards of Guardians may determine which it is best for them to choose.

In the account which we proceed to give, we shall see that each plan has drawbacks, and that it mainly depends on the practical administration how far the disadvantages attaching to particular systems are developed or diminished.¹

I. The Royal Commission in 1834 stated in their reports that the first step was to remedy the evils resulting from the maladministration of the poor laws; and that reforms of a positive nature would be mainly due to the influences of a moral and religious education.

The subsequent measure by which pauper children were to be brought up in workhouses thus seems to have been only provisional. It was an improvement compared with the previous irrational mode of relief, especially that given in the form of head money (see above, p. 30), and was suited to check the recklessness in founding a family which had resulted from the former system. It soon appeared, however, that there would be the greatest difficulty in securing real improvement in the education carried out in workhouses, even if all the regulations as to the instruction to be given were accurately and effectively carried out.

In the case of the pauper children, we are confronted with the fact that, as wide experience shows, instruction alone is not education. Even if it were possible to provide sufficient teaching power in all workhouses (and this would scarcely be practicable in the small unions), the further question would arise, whether the workhouse, containing a large number of persons of low average morals, would be a suitable place for the education of children. Even their separation from the other inmates can scarcely be carried out in small workhouses.

The fact that the household work and the general supervision of the wards devoted to children are undertaken by other inmates of the workhouse involves constant association of the children with persons whose moral influence is not at all likely to be beneficial. The children must not only be instructed in book learning, but in games and in different sorts of occupations, and the influence necessarily exercised in the time not devoted to books is frequently of the greatest importance.

Moreover, the whole atmosphere of a workhouse is little calculated to produce strong and independent men, conscious of their strength and proud of their independence. The crushing mono-

¹ This is the standpoint adopted by Sir Charles Dilke when President of the L. G. B., and expounded by him in his speech at the Central Meeting of Poor Law Conferences in 1883. He says (Rep., p. 462) that "no one system is the best, or at all events we do not know for certain that any one system is the best, therefore we ought not to bind ourselves by the lines of a system at the present time." Mr. Selater Booth, the previous President of the L. G. B., expressed himself to the same effect at this Conference (Rep., p. 459), and took occasion to praise "the elasticity of the system, the willingness of the guardians to try, and of the Board to sanction experiments."

tony, the unsocial uniformity of existence, which are almost inevitable in such establishments, must depress the children and weaken their desire and their power to advance in the world. Everybody knows from his own experience that the impressions of youth are the most lasting, and, whether cheerful or melancholy, are never fully obliterated in the development of the man and in later life.

The risks connected with the education of children in the workhouse are so obvious, and are so hard to avoid, even with the best management, that the few advantages which the system affords scarcely weigh anything in the balance. These advantages mainly consist in one point which must be conceded, viz., that education in workhouses is cheaper than under any other system. The accommodation exists and needs little addition, the staff is there, and thus all the charges are reduced to a minimum. Another advantage is not necessarily associated with this system, but may be secured by good management, at any rate in the larger workhouses. The children may be instructed in work useful to them in after life; they may be brought up to domestic service, and may be taught the various trades which occupy the adults.

But these advantages by no means outweigh the serious drawbacks which we have mentioned above, and it has to be remembered that in small workhouses the advantages are least and the drawbacks greatest. The first measure which was designed to alter the present system naturally had regard specially to these smaller workhouses, and had for its object the creation of greater establishments.

II. In 1839 an enquiry was instituted by the Home Secretary as to the condition of pauper schools, and in the very valuable report published in 1841 the disadvantages connected with the education of children in workhouses were clearly set forth, and it was recommended that several unions should be combined with the object of providing an establishment in common for the reception and education of children.¹ This proposal was approved in Parliament, and in 1844 the Central Authority was empowered to make combinations of unions for the purpose of educating the children in district schools apart from the workhouse.²

The new enactment, however, on account of the increase of expenditure involved, met with such strong opposition from the Guardians that the Central Board made little use of its power in this behalf. This was doubtless due not only to the disinclination of the Guardians on the ground of expense, but also to the fact that the value of the new system was questioned by good authorities.

It was based on the notion of freeing pauper children from the

¹ The two reports of Sir James K. Shuttleworth and Mr. Tufnell should be specially mentioned. In the report of the latter he says, with truth, "the atmosphere of a workhouse that contains adult paupers is tainted with vice. No one who regards the future happiness of the children would ever wish them to be educated within its precincts."

² 7 & 8 Vict. c. 101, s. 40; 11 & 12 Vict. c. 82, s. 1; 13 & 14 Vict. c. 101, s. 3; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, ss. 10, 11.

disadvantageous influence of workhouse surroundings, and at the same time of providing for their instruction and education by special establishments with an appropriate staff. In order that this system should not be too costly, it would be necessary to provide establishments of which the general expenses would fall on the combined unions. But the size of the establishments involved new drawbacks. The crowding of a large number of children in schoolrooms, dormitories, and playrooms, has disadvantages from a sanitary point of view. Not only is it impossible for the large number of children of low physique to receive the treatment suitable to them, but there is the further danger that infectious diseases may spread—a danger which has been proved to be real by the frequent outbreak of maladies (especially eye and skin diseases) in the district schools.¹ In this connection there are also moral considerations opposed to the bringing together of so large a number of children. It is to be feared that children debased by their bringing up may debase others, and this risk is increased owing to the limited extent of the control which can be exercised in large dormitories. Moreover, in case of pauper children, who have often been neglected from their birth, it is most important to pay regard to the characteristics of the individual child, and this is impossible in large establishments.

We see, then, that though the district schools are a decided improvement upon the workhouse schools, they have considerable drawbacks. A better system was called for, and was not long in being introduced.

III. A plan of dealing with pauper children which had long existed in Scotland, and had there been admittedly attended with the best results—the so-called “Boarding-out System”—was now tried in England.²

This system supplies just what is the chief want of the district schools. By boarding-out the children in families a home is provided for them in which the necessary attention can be bestowed on their physical or moral deficiencies; at the same time they are completely freed from the fetters of pauperism, and become part of the general population. In the cases of orphans and deserted children, it appears specially desirable to give them the benefits of family life, from which their unfortunate circumstances have shut them out. Here the children are brought up in a way suited to their condition and to the occupation which they are to follow in after life, and they are often not aware that they are paupers.

¹ See Third Annual Report of the L. G. B., pp. 210–245 (Dr. Bridges and Dr. Mouat). Fourth Annual Report of the L. G. B., App. p. 55 (Prof. Nettleship). In consequence of unfavourable experiences in this matter, the Central Board directed, in a circular of Dec. 3, 1873, that all children sent to district schools should be examined by the medical officer to ascertain whether they were free from infectious disease, and were in such a state of health as to be able to “take part at once in the ordinary discipline and occupations of the school” (Third Annual Report of the L. G. B., App. p. 2).

² See as to the Scottish system, the report by Mr. Henley made in 1869. Parliamentary Papers, 1870, No. 176.

But practical difficulties were at once met with in the adoption of this system ;¹ in the first place that of finding foster-parents ready to receive children for a remuneration limited, in the interest of the ratepayers, to a maximum of 4s. a week ; secondly, the still greater difficulty of finding candidates as to whom there was a reasonable security that the children's bringing up would be safe in their hands ; and, finally, the difficulty of supplying the necessary supervision.

The Central Board was aware that this system might easily lead to abuses, and deemed it necessary to lay down precise rules in order to avoid them. In a Boarding-out Order of November 25, 1870, provision was made for the case of children boarded-out outside their own union, this being generally the practice in towns, from which they are mostly sent to labourers' families in the country. In a second Order of September 10, 1877, the most important of these provisions were extended to children boarded-out within the union itself.²

Under these regulations, in every district adopting the boarding-out system, a special Boarding-out Committee of two or more members is to be chosen in order to be responsible for finding suitable homes for the children, and for keeping these homes under inspection. Only orphans or deserted children from two to ten years old may be boarded out, and a medical certificate of their state of health must previously be obtained. Ordinarily not more than two children are to be placed in the same house, this maximum being raised to four in the case of brothers and sisters. The foster-parents, who must be of the same religion as the child, must bring it up as their own, provide it with food and clothing, take care that it goes regularly to school and church, and must report any illness by which it is attacked to the Boarding-out Committee. They may receive for each child 4s. weekly (not including school fees, medical attendance, and an addition up to 10s. quarterly for clothing.) There must be a school within a mile and a half from their house, and the residence of one of the Committee must be within five miles. The children are not ordinarily to be boarded-out in places with more than 15,000 inhabitants. They are to be visited at least once in every six weeks by a member

¹ After the usual English fashion, a special society has been formed under the name of the National Committee for the Promotion of the Boarding-out System. Its President, Mr. Francis Peek, has warmly advocated the boarding-out system in his book 'Our Laws and Our Poor' (London, 1875). A prominent position in this movement is also taken by Miss Annette Preusser and Mrs. Nassau Senior, late inspector of the L. G. B. The last-named lady has contributed to the Third Annual Report of the L. G. B., App. p. 311, a very interesting report, 'As to the effect on girls of the system of education at pauper schools,' and has discussed the question from the point of view of health and of morals, as well as with regard to its subsequent effects on the careers of the children. In fact, the boarding-out system seems to be specially designed for girls, for whom the danger associated with their bringing up in large establishments is greater than in the case of boys. A reply to Mrs. Nassau Senior's report is given in the Fourth Annual Report of the L. G. B. by Mr. Tufnell (inspector), one of the chief champions of district schools.

² The two Orders are printed in Glen's P. L. O., pp. 553 and 733.

of the Committee, and a report upon them is to be laid before the Board of Guardians at least once a quarter. Further, the schoolmaster is to report on them quarterly, and if a child is twice unfavourably reported on, and does not improve upon being warned, its boarding-out must cease.

This is the main purport of the regulations of the Central Board, which are designed to prevent the children from being handed over to people who only wish to make pecuniary profit without bestowing proper care upon them. It must be owned that if these regulations are intelligently carried out, the children are cared for in the best possible fashion. But as a matter of fact, there is much complaint that the Boarding-out Committees do not always do their duty.

The chief objection, however, to the system is of another kind, and is in effect a weighty one. These pauper children are assured of a bringing up such as the mere labourer often cannot bestow on his own children. How many labourers, especially in the villages in which the children are usually boarded-out, can afford to pay for each of his own children 4s. a week besides providing clothing, school fees and medicine?

There is serious danger that many a labourer who sees that children deserted by their parents are thus cared for, may think that if he deserts his own and leaves them to the poor law, it will be the best thing that he can do for them. At any rate, this system deprives the labourer of all inducement to make provision for his children on his death. Whether these drawbacks outweigh the advantages which the system offers to the child itself is very doubtful.¹

We must regard it as a sign of the sound principles which actuate the Central Department that it avoids every appearance of favouring this method. There can be no doubt that any general introduction of the boarding-out system which would induce parents to rely upon their children being thus dealt with would involve serious dangers for the working classes. As matters at present stand, it is understood that the application of the system to any individual cases cannot be reckoned upon with certainty, and in this way the evils involved are materially lessened.

IV. Besides these main systems, there are a number of others. They consist, however, mainly of mere modifications of those already described, the drawbacks of which they are intended to minimise.²

Thus it was hoped that an improvement of the first-mentioned system, the bringing up of pauper children in the workhouses,³ would

¹ These drawbacks are specified in a very distinct and practical fashion by Fawcett in his work on Pauperism, above quoted.

² The provision of s. 6 of 14 & 15 Vict. c. 105, by which the guardians are empowered, if the pauper children cannot be properly cared for in their own workhouse, to contract for their reception into the workhouse of another union, can scarcely be regarded as a modification of the main system. This is only an attempt to help the small unions which could ill afford the outlay for a proper schoolmaster, &c., and have only a small number of pauper children.

³ The plan of sending children living in the workhouse to public elementary day schools has become very general of late years. [TR.]

result from having them educated, not in the workhouse itself, but in the neighbouring national or board schools. As, however, the children go back from these schools as soon as the hours of instruction are over, the bad influence of the workhouse atmosphere is only slightly lessened; and, moreover, it must be very depressing to the pauper children to see their schoolfellows go home to their parents while they themselves must return to the workhouse.

The plan referred to at p. 200 of sending children as emigrants to the colonies may be regarded as a modification of the boarding-out system. The bad effect which that system may produce on the rest of the working classes here disappears, but on the other hand the possibility of keeping the children under supervision is rendered difficult. The Central Board, as above mentioned, has for this reason thought it well to issue special regulations as to the emigration of pauper children.¹ The most important and also the most successful modifications are those of the second system, the bringing up of children in special establishments. In the first place, besides the district schools in the unions combined for their provision, the so-called separate workhouse schools have been erected. These separate schools stand exactly on the same footing as the district schools.² Advantages and disadvantages are to be found equally in both cases, with the single exception that the number of children in separate schools is usually rather smaller than in district schools, and that the drawbacks already mentioned are thus lessened. Lately attempts have been made to secure this last object in a greater degree by the so-called Mettray or Cottage System. By this plan, instead of placing the children together in a large building, cottages are erected in rural districts, and in this way children are divided into smaller groups. The buildings are arranged so that the separate cottages are grouped round a schoolhouse. This plan almost entirely gets rid of the drawbacks attending the large district schools with their accumulated masses of pauper children, and at the same time a new advantage is secured. In the separate cottage a workman's family is usually established by whom the children are supervised; the boys are taught the trade of the husband, and the girls are instructed in domestic duties by the wife. In this fashion a real home is provided for the children with family life, and they receive not only excellent instruction (which the district schools supply), but also real education. The individuality of each child may be separately dealt with, and care is taken

¹ In the memorandum of the L. G. B., already quoted, of April 30, 1883 (13th Annual Report, p. 32), the Central Board limited to 300 the number of the children whose emigration to Canada was to be sanctioned in that year.

² The management of the separate schools is carried out by a specially chosen School Committee of the Board of Guardians, while for that of the district schools a separate board is formed from the combined unions of the district. The unions of the metropolis by which separate schools have been erected have placed them all in the suburbs of London, and a number of sanitary precautions have been taken by which the drawbacks in point of health which we have mentioned as affecting the district schools have been reduced to a minimum.

that by early instruction in a particular handiwork the children are made skilled labourers. This system has but the one drawback of being, at any rate at present, so expensive that only a very small number of unions have adopted it.¹ In the metropolis, Chelsea and Kensington have alone done so.² If it is eventually found practicable to introduce improvements in the matter of cost, this system is certain to be widely adopted in future. It unites the advantages of the district school and the boarding-out systems, and has reduced the drawbacks of both to a minimum.

We may say the same of another method of treating pauper children, namely, bringing them up in a training-ship. In 1867 the Metropolitan Guardians were empowered by law to obtain one or more ships in order to train pauper children for sea service.

The new departure has answered admirably.³ All the reports agree that in every respect, especially in that of health, the effect on the boys has been excellent, and that it has turned them into useful men. This system, however, has also the drawback of being costly, and it is only available for a limited number of boys;⁴ usually the boys are not sent before they are ten years old, and they must be provided with a medical certificate to the effect that they are perfectly healthy and fit for a seafaring life.

In the same way the system of sending the children to the so-called certified schools is applied to a limited number of pauper children. These are schools under private management, which are entirely or partly maintained by voluntary contributions, and are certified by the L. G. B. as fit for the reception of pauper children. They are subject to regular inspections by the Poor Law inspectors, and the certificate may at any time be withdrawn. The cost of maintaining a child in these certified schools was origin-

¹ The President of the L. G. B., Sir Charles Dilke, in a recent speech before the Society for Befriending Girls, dilated on the great advantages of the Cottage System while recognising that its cost would stand in the way of its general adoption (*Morning Post*, 20 Mar., 1885).

² The cost of the village homes erected at Banstead for Kensington and Chelsea is estimated at £70,000. The buildings consist of eight cottages for boys and twelve for girls, a schoolhouse, a chapel, an infirmary, and a workshop. Altogether 672 children can be accommodated in the homes. The cost of erection thus amounts to over £100 a head. That of the buildings erected in Marston Green by the parish of Birmingham is reckoned at about the same sum. Here there are, in connexion with the school, large playgrounds, a swimming bath, &c. Other establishments have been erected at less expenditure, but are correspondingly inferior to these model institutions. The late inspector of the L. G. B., Mr. Andrew Doyle, has striven much to promote the extension of the cottage system.

³ 32 & 33 Vict. c. 63, s. 11; and the Training Ship Order printed in Glen's P. L. O., p. 493. The Admiralty provided a ship, the *Goliath*, and a naval officer was appointed as commander. The *Goliath* was destroyed by fire in 1875, and since that date another ship, the *Exmouth*, has been employed.

⁴ The number of boys on the *Exmouth* averages 500. It should be noticed that the L. G. B. has also authorized unions outside the metropolis to contract with the managers of the training-ship to receive boys from their unions. The system is thus not entirely confined to the metropolis.

ally not to exceed that of its maintenance in the workhouses. This provision, however, has now been altered, so that reasonable expenses may be paid up to such rate as may be sanctioned by the L. G. B.¹ in particular cases. There are in all about eighty certified schools, most of them being for children who have some physical or mental defect, blind, deaf, dumb,² idiots, &c. Others are Church institutions, and the number of certified schools exclusively for Roman Catholic children is somewhat large.

We have thus given an account of the different systems for dealing with pauper children.³ The mode which is most generally adopted at the present time is doubtless to keep them in workhouses, although from year to year the proportion of those received in district or separate schools steadily increases.

There is no doubt that of all systems that of workhouse schools

¹ 25 & 26 Vict. c. 43. And now 45 & 46 Vict. c. 58, s. 13. See also 13th Report of the L. G. B., p. xlv.

² By 31 & 32 Vict. c. 22, s. 42, the guardians are empowered with the approval of the Central Board to send blind, deaf, or dumb children to a suitable school even if not certified. Here we may recall the provision of s. 58 of 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, which enacts that relief afforded to blind or deaf and dumb children shall not pauperize the parents.

According to an article in the 'Charity Organization Reporter,' 1884, p. 358, there are in England twenty-six institutions for the reception and education of blind and deaf children. There are besides a number of special schools in which instruction is given to such children. This article states that industrial training for these children is either non-existent or is very defective. The late Mr. Fawcett, who was himself blind, paid special attention to the introduction of improvement in the education of blind children. In an article in the *Times* of 17th March, 1885, it is stated that out of 5,126 deaf and dumb children in England, only 2,890 have the advantage of a school education. It has been proposed that the provision of schooling for blind, deaf, and dumb children should be made a general duty of the State, and Mr. Mundella, Vice-President of the Committee for Education, has taken occasion to express this view.

³ There is no trustworthy return as to the proportions in which the different systems are employed. We extract the following figures from the 13th Annual Report of the L. G. B., p. xlv., and App., p. 236. In the half year ended Lady Day, 1883, there were on an average :—

I. In workhouse schools, or in separate union or parochial schools :

Boys	. 14,070,	of whom 7,216 under, and 6,854 over ten years old.
Girls	. 12,100	„ 7,160 „ 4,940 „ „

Total 26,170.

II. In the district schools :

Boys	. 4,264,	of whom 2,057 under, and 2,207 over ten years old.
Girls	. 3,224	„ 1,428 „ 1,796 „ „

Total 7,488.

III. On the training-ship *Exmouth* :

488 boys over ten years old.

It is especially unfortunate that the separate schools are classed with the workhouse schools rather than with the district schools, with which they have more affinity. As to the application of the other systems, complete details are wanting, but the following figures may be given. The number of children who on December 31, 1883, were boarded out beyond the limits of their unions was 835. The

has the most drawbacks and the fewest advantages.¹ But its complete abolition is for many reasons not to be thought of. In the first place it should be noticed that in all other systems the consent of the father and mother is necessary before the child can be removed from the workhouse of which its parent is an inmate to another establishment. In the case of orphans and deserted children, the consent, if no relative interposes, is given by the Central Board.² If the parent refuses consent, nothing can be done but to leave the children in the workhouse. A refusal of this kind is usually met with where the parent does not intend to remain long in the workhouse, but even when the consent is given, the guardians themselves have to consider whether it is not probable that he will soon exercise his right of leaving the workhouse when he pleases, in which case the child must also be sent back. Not only would unnecessary cost be incurred by placing the child in a special establishment, but also the maintenance of discipline would be endangered by the short stay of such children.³ Further, in the workhouse a large number of

much larger number boarded out within the union is not stated. The number of children sent to Canada from April 1883 to the end of the year was 133.

Among earlier years there is a rather more complete return for 1878, according to which there were—

10 District Schools with	6,206 children.
28 Separate Schools „	7,011 „
415 Workhouse Schools with	20,401 „
In National and Board Schools there were	2,870 „
In Certified Schools	1,873 pauper children.

¹ According to the Reports of the Poor Law School Inspectors published in the Annual Reports of the L. G. B., the results of the workhouse schools are in general not so bad as one might suppose, especially in the case of boys. See particularly the Reports of Inspectors Bowyer, 1872-3, Mrs. Nassau Senior, 1873-4, the Rev. Dr. Clutterbuck, 1875-6, Mr. Mozley, 1883-4. A report presented to Parliament in 1861, Parl. Paper, No. 469, gives very interesting figures as to the results of the workhouse schools. From 1850-1860, 15,710 boys and 14,030 girls who had been for more than two years in workhouse schools, were sent to situations (domestic service, trades, &c.). Of these children there returned to the workhouse :

a. For no obvious fault of their own	1,363 boys, and 1,896 girls.
b. On the ground of their own fault	880 „ „ 1,756 „

Thus the education was shown to have a bad result in 5·8 per cent. of the boys and in 12·4 of the girls. But here the undoubtedly considerable number of children whose later career has not been recorded are left out of account.

Other returns of the same kind for particular unions in more recent years have given almost the same result. In all cases the girls who turned out badly were twice as numerous as the boys. In the district and separate schools the results as regards girls are much worse than as regards boys. Consequently the boarding-out system is employed specially for girls.

² 25 & 26 Vict. c. 43, s. 4 ; 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113, s. 14 ; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 23.

³ A classification of 35,232 pauper children brought up in establishments has been given by the Rev. J. O. Bevan at the 53rd Annual Meeting of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, Report, p. 629, as follows :

Legitimate children whose father is alive	32·67.
Orphan „	25·2.
Deserted „	20·23.
Illegitimate „	21·9.

children are admitted merely provisionally, in order that, when their health and capabilities have been ascertained, they may be sent to the establishment suitable to their special case. All these circumstances must be kept in mind in order rightly to understand why so many children are kept in workhouse schools.¹

Moreover, the question of cost plays an important part, especially in small country unions. It is quite natural that if a teacher is appointed in the workhouse, and the means of instruction are thus provided (and this must be done because a number of children are in receipt of relief for a short time only), the guardians will be inclined to avail themselves of the existing machinery, and to save the cost of educating the children in special establishments. If in the smaller unions all children permanently under the charge of the guardians were sent to special establishments, there would be no permanent element for the workhouse schools to deal with, and it might easily happen that the schoolmaster would have no children to instruct. Though it is by no means in accordance with my general views to make the question of cost paramount as regards the education of pauper children, it would be unreasonable to leave this point entirely out of consideration, especially in the case of the smaller and poorer unions.

And by reason of its costliness, the general introduction of the excellent cottage system is not to be thought of. If we put aside, as only applicable to special cases,² education in national and board schools, on training ships or in the Colonies, the only choice that remains is between the boarding-out system and the district schools. But in our opinion the boarding-out system should be limited to special cases; its general application might, as pointed out above, exercise a bad influence on the character of the working classes. The district school or the separate school, which stands on the same footing, is in our opinion the institution of the future.

There is a consensus of opinion that in the district or separate schools the education is better, and leaves little to be desired in any respect.³ The disadvantages already mentioned may be reduced to a minimum by appropriate administration, if excessive stress is not laid upon the question of economy. In the management of these establishments, important improvements have been made, both as regards health and education.

Since 1874 it has been required as a preliminary to the sending of a child to a district school that there should be a medical certificate that the child is free from infectious disease, and is in such a state of health as to fit it for admission. Children whose health is unsatisfactory are thus excluded, and those newly admitted are not

¹ It is also necessary to take into account the large number of children under the school age who are left in the workhouses.

² But see note 3 on p. 224. [Tr.]

³ While the reports of the Inspectors of Poor Law schools differ much as to the advantages of particular systems, they entirely agree in this point. They further describe the extensive improvements which have been made in the industrial training of the boys in these establishments.

brought into association with the others, but are placed in a so-called probationary ward, in which they are under the special observation of the superintendent, the schoolmaster or mistress, and the medical officer. It is not until these different officials have had an opportunity of forming a judgment as to the characteristics, capabilities, and defects of the individual children, that they are placed in the division appropriate to the special case. The new buildings have been so constructed that the particular wards in which the children are grouped according to sex and age, to disposition and aptitude, form separate wings.

While the above-mentioned danger of infection of body or mind is thus reduced to a minimum, further precautions are taken to keep the children healthy and to bring them up as useful members of the community. The greatest attention is paid to their bodily training, and more importance is attached to gymnastics, athletics, swimming, bathing, open-air games, &c., in these establishments than is bestowed on such matters in the case of children of the upper classes in Germany. The rule is universal that after lessons the time shall be devoted to physical training.

For the technical education of the boys there are instructors in various trades—tailors, shoemakers, carpenters, bookbinders, &c.—who instruct the boys in the work selected, and at the same time supply the wants of the establishment. The girls are occupied in the laundry and in other domestic work, and are instructed in needlework, &c. Music is zealously taught, and a great number of the boys are trained as musicians, and are willingly accepted as bandsmen in the Army and Navy.

It is specially worth notice that there are no difficulties in finding subsequent employment for the children. The girls find places as domestic servants, the boys get employment in the trades in which they have been trained. The demand for children from these establishments generally far exceeds the supply.¹

Children after leaving often remain in correspondence with the superintendents or teachers, and particular establishments are in the habit of keeping a record of the career of the children educated there. Here, too, the results are better each year.²

¹ See the Tabular Statement, in the 13th Annual Report of the L. G. B., p. 264, showing the occupations of 1,206 children who in 1883 had completed their training in the district schools of the metropolis. Of 530 girls, 523 were in domestic service; of 666 boys, 117 brought up on the *Exmouth* had entered the Royal Navy, and 70, also from the *Exmouth*, had joined the Merchant Service; 156 boys had enlisted in naval or military bands; 52 were bakers, 49 shoemakers, 48 domestic servants.

² See Reports of the Inspectors of Poor Law schools, published in the Annual Reports of the L. G. B. (13th Report, App., p. 120). The Lambeth Parochial School at Norwood, which I visited with Mr. Hedley, the general Inspector, may be instanced as a model pauper-school. In this institution, belonging to a metropolitan union, but itself outside London, there are about 650 children, 300 girls, and 350 boys. The boys receive instruction on three days a week for three hours in the morning and two and a half hours in the afternoon; with fifteen minutes interval between each lesson. On the three other days the

No doubt this improvement in administration involves an increase of expenditure ; on the one hand the number of teachers and other officials is greater, and on the other hand that of the children received is less. Moreover, it often happens that structural alterations have to be made ; land has to be obtained for recreation, &c.¹ But all these additional expenses are quite justified. It has to be considered that expenditure for the education of the rising generation is a remunerative investment, and that the cost of bringing up pauper children in a proper fashion may diminish that of prisons or work-houses.² The reform of social evils has to begin with children, not with adults, in whose case there is much less hope of improvement. In the case of adults the State must restrict itself to the removal of bad influences ; in the case of children it has the duty of taking care that good seed is sown in their education.

It admits of considerable doubt whether there is any justification for the legal provision that even those parents who give over their children to the care of the public may nevertheless exercise paternal rights to their full extent. At present the parents of children admitted into pauper establishments are in a position to impose a veto upon the sort of education which the guardians consider suitable for the children, or may remove them at will from establishments in which they are excellently cared for, only to appear again in a few weeks with those children before the doors of the work-house.³

boys are employed in the workshops, the girls in domestic duties. On two days in the week each division is engaged in Swedish gymnastics, which are excellently taught. The choice of the trade in which each boy is employed is left absolutely to him, but when once chosen it cannot be changed without special grounds. The superintendent showed me the applications from employers for the children to be discharged at the end of the next term, and he remarked that in each branch the number of applications exceeded that of children available. Generally the children require no further assistance after leaving, *i.e.* after the completion of their fourteenth year.

¹ According to a statement in the 7th Annual Report of the L. G. B., p. 421, the cost of each child in a district or separate school of the metropolis amounts on an average to £26 1s. 6d. a year. This apparently does not in all cases include interest or repayment of loans. There are, however, wide differences in the cost at the respective schools, the lowest being £14 17s. at one of the smaller schools (Mile End), while on the training-ship *Exmouth* it is nearly four times as high, being £54 7s. 10d. In this case £16 5s. 8d. per annum, or double that in other establishments, is spent on the board of each child.

² This has been demonstrated in England by the figures showing the decrease in the number of juvenile offenders. Since 1868, when the number of those convicted was 15,033, it has steadily fallen, year by year, and has recently remained pretty constant. For 1882 it was 11,699. See Statistical Abstracts, 1883, p. 170.

³ The evils of the present practice are fully recognized in England, and this point is now being much discussed in public. Among the subjects of all the Poor Law Conferences held in 1884 was that of "the control of the guardians with respect to neglected and deserted children," and we believe that all the Conferences have pronounced in favour of an extension of the powers of the guardians and a limitation of the rights of the parents. The President of the L. G. B. himself, Sir Charles Dilke, acknowledged at the Poor Law Conference at Macclesfield the need

It is only for the worst cases of neglect on the part of parents in the bringing up of their children that the English legislation has made provision by the establishment of Industrial Schools.¹ As to these schools—which, like prisons, are under the Home Department—we may add a few words.² The Industrial Schools are designed for four classes of children:—

1. Children under fourteen who are found begging or wandering, and without settled abode, or are destitute and either without parents or with a surviving parent in prison, or frequent the company of known thieves; any one may bring these children before the magistrate or before the justices, who may order them to be sent to a certified Industrial School.

2. Children under twelve, who are charged with an offence punishable by imprisonment or some less penalty, who have not already been convicted, and in whose case the justice (regard being had to age or other circumstances) thinks it right to abstain from punishment.

3. Children under fourteen, whose parents or guardians declare before the magistrate that in consequence of the refractory character of the child they are unable to control it. In this case, too, it is at the discretion of the justice, on consideration of the circumstances, to decide whether the child shall be sent to an Industrial School.³

4. Children under fourteen years who have been brought up in pauper schools, and whose transfer to an Industrial School, either as refractory or as having convict parents, is demanded by the guardians. The magistrate has to determine whether the transfer to an Industrial School is expedient.

The order must specify the time during which the child is to be detained in the school; this must not be beyond its sixteenth year. Parents are required to pay a sum not exceeding 5s. a week for each child admitted, and this payment may be enforced by two

of reform (*Times*, August 16, 1884). At the Poor Law Conference in London it was resolved that statutory power ought to be given to the guardians, so that if a child is thrown upon the rates by the fault of its parents, the guardians may exercise rights over the child *in loco parentis*, until it becomes independent (*Times*, December 10, 1884). See also in the *Times*, February 10, 1885, a letter on this question by Mr. William Tallack.

¹ Closely akin to Industrial Schools are the Reformatory Schools designed for juvenile offenders up to the age of sixteen. Admission to Reformatory Schools forms part of the penalty after a term of imprisonment of at least ten days: 17 & 18 Vict. c. 86; 29 & 30 Vict. c. 117.

² The Industrial Schools, like the Reformatory Schools, are under the supervision of a special inspector and of an assistant inspector. This inspector has to make a previous examination of the establishments to be used as Industrial or Reformatory Schools, and they are authorized to receive children by his certificate. The principal enactment as to Industrial Schools is 29 & 30 Vict. c. 118. The expenditure for the schools is given in the judicial statistics, not in the reports of the L. G. B.

³ For these classes of children there is also the so-called Truant School at Upton House, in which a specially severe discipline is maintained. Children sent there are not allowed to remain longer than two months in the establishment.

justices.¹ For the rest, the costs of the Industrial Schools are provided by contributions of School Boards, by voluntary contributions, and by a grant-in-aid from the State.²

Generalizing as to the different classes of children admitted to these establishments, we may say that the Industrial Schools are designed for children as to whom, in consequence of the situation in which they are placed, or of their own characteristics, there is reason to fear that they may fall into vice or crime, having perhaps already taken the first step on the downward road.³

SECTION V.

POOR LAW MEDICAL RELIEF.

While the English public rightly believe that the present treatment of pauper children fulfils all reasonable requirements, the system of dealing with the sick does not meet with such general approval.⁴

Two special objections are raised against the existing system; (1) that in many districts, especially in the country, the medical treatment is quite inadequate; many of the medical officers being deficient in the scientific knowledge undoubtedly required; and (2) that the way in which medical assistance is now given is calculated to deter people from making provision for the day of illness, and exercises a

¹ There has been much complaint that particular unions do not take sufficient steps for enforcing these contributions. In fact the greatest strictness is required in this particular, so that parents may not find that the establishment of Industrial Schools gives them a premium on neglecting their children. See the article on this question in the 'Charity Organization Reporter' of 1884, p. 342.

² The expenses for 104 Industrial Schools existing in 1882 amounted to £217,821, of which sum £10,674 was drawn from the parents. The number of children admitted in that year was 3,652, viz. 3,136 boys and 516 girls. The total number of children in the Industrial Schools was 14,866, viz. 12,574 boys and 2,292 girls. See Judicial Statistics for 1882, p. 4.

³ There is a special kind of Industrial School called the certified Day Industrial School, in which the children only pass the day while they live with their parents. These are only a milder form of Industrial Schools (see particularly 39 & 40 Vict. c. 79, ss. 16, 17.) The number of Day Industrial Schools is but small. In the metropolis, so far as we know, there is none at all. According to a recent enactment, 39 & 40 Vict. c. 79, ss. 12, 13, provision is also made for the admission to Industrial or Day Industrial Schools of children, whose parents, in spite of previous warning, fail to obey an order to send their children to school. By 34 & 35 Vict. c. 112, s. 14, the children under fourteen of a woman convicted of an offence, and having been previously punished, may be sent by the magistrate to an Industrial School if they are without proper guardianship.

⁴ In 1883 the question of medical relief was discussed at the Poor Law Conferences, the reports of which afford a good insight into the different views and currents of opinion on this matter. The most valuable speech was that of Mr. W. Bousfield at the General Conference in London, Report, p. 427. There is also abundant material in the Parliamentary Papers for 1844, 1854 and 1864, in the reports of the select committees appointed to inquire into the subject. Of late years the most important information is afforded by the circular addressed by Mr. Goschen on December 13, 1869, to the guardians, enquiring as to the practice prevailing in the respective unions with regard to the sick poor in and out of the workhouse, and the answers to this circular published in the 22nd Report of the P. L. B., App., p. 31.

directly demoralizing influence. Those who have once accepted this kind of relief often lose the sense of responsibility and independence, and do not emerge again from the ranks of pauperism. The fact that the receipt of medical assistance is so often the first step to permanent pauperism frequently stands in the way of measures calculated to improve the quality of medical relief.¹ Akin to this is the consideration that in consequence of such improvements the labourer's own provision for illness is likely to be still less than formerly.

The suggestions for amendment are numerous and varied. We need only mention two. On the one hand, it is proposed to introduce into medical relief the strict principles of the English poor law, especially to make the admission of the sick into an institution the rule, and outdoor medical relief the exception. On the other hand, it is thought possible to enact compulsory insurance against illness.

Both proposals have for their object to make providence compulsory, but in the first case the compulsion is merely indirect, since by imposing conditions and limitations on medical relief people are induced to make voluntary provision against illness. The extension of sick-clubs and provident dispensaries is thus an element of the first-named proposal.

The obstacle to this scheme is not only its costliness, but particularly the fact that such treatment appears inhumane and would be unpopular and impracticable; its adoption would result in public relief being largely supplemented by private charity. As regards the treatment of the sick, it is quite impossible to leave the question of humanity out of consideration, and it operates much more forcibly in this branch of relief than in any other. There is scarcely anything to be altered in the present application of principles as to the employment of indoor medical relief.² The grant of medical relief by admission of the applicant into an infirmary now takes place only (*a*) from considerations as to the kind of sickness, *e.g.*, if it is either infectious or is such as to require constant medical care; and (*b*) from considerations relative to the surroundings of the patient, and the treatment which he is likely to obtain at home, which may often be in no wise calculated to secure his early recovery.

As regards the proposal to introduce a system of compulsory insurance against sickness, a detailed description would lead us too

¹ In Glen's P. L. O., p. 94, we find: "In the administration of medical relief to the sick poor the objects to be kept in view are—(1) to provide medical aid for all persons who are really destitute; (2) to prevent medical relief from generating or encouraging pauperism, and with this view to withdraw from the labouring classes as well as from the administrators of relief and the medical officers all motives for applying for or administering medical relief unless where the circumstances render it absolutely necessary."

² Mr. Longley, who, in the Report already quoted, specially urged the application of a more rigid rule as to the grant of medical relief, seems to us to go too far in this direction. He would never grant outdoor medical relief if the person concerned has a bad character or has had the opportunity of making provision for illness. Recognizing, as we may, the duty of every man to provide against the event of his illness, this suggestion seems to us to have somewhat too harsh a character.

far from our subject. We confine ourselves therefore to a short statement of the main principles of the project of Compulsory National Insurance, of which a clergyman, Canon W. L. Blackley, is the author. A full account of this project, which is especially interesting for Germany, may be given on another opportunity.

Canon Blackley proposes that every one, male or female, and not merely the working classes, shall be required to deposit a sum of £10 with the Post Office, as a premium towards a general National Insurance Club. The payment may be made by instalments, but must be completed by the end of the twenty-first year of life. For the wage-earning population the employer is to make a deduction of from 1s. 3d. to 4s. a week from the wages till the fulfilment of the obligation has been vouched for by "club tickets" issued after the payment of premiums. This deduction is to take place after the age of eighteen. If the premium is not fully paid by the twenty-first year, interest has to be reckoned on the deficiency. Every member of the National Insurance Club is to receive in case of illness 8s. a week, and further, after attaining the age of seventy, 4s. a week.¹ These are the main points of the project, which has received extraordinary support of late years, and upon which a select committee of the House of Commons² has been appointed to enquire. But it is not likely to be soon carried into effect, and the present system of medical relief, to an account of which we now pass, is likely for a long time to be in practical operation.

The present system of medical relief is of two kinds:—indoor and outdoor. We begin with the latter.³

I. At least one District Medical Officer must be appointed for each union, whose duty it is to treat sick paupers not received into the workhouse, &c. In unions of large population there are several such officers. The usual regulation is that no medical officer should have a district of more than 15,000 acres, or a population of more than 15,000 persons under his charge. The arrangement of districts requires the approval of the Central Board.

The payment of the Medical Officer varies much in different districts. It is generally by fixed salary. There has been much discussion⁴

¹ The scheme therefore is not only one of sick insurance, but also of pensions. But, as Canon Blackley himself informed me, the pension scheme is only a complement of the other, because, after the age of seventy, special medical care is required on account of age, and it would frequently be difficult to draw a sharp distinction between the infirmities of age and actual disease.

² This movement also has called into existence a special society to enlist public opinion on behalf of the scheme, this is the National Providence League, which had Lord Shaftesbury for its President. Information on the subject will be found in the 'Collected Essays on the Prevention of Pauperism,' by the Rev. W. L. Blackley, London, 1883.

³ Provisions in force as to medical out-relief are to be found in the General Order of July 24, 1847, printed by Glen, Articles 75 and 76, 158-161, 168-170, 177-183, 206, 207.

⁴ The Poor Law Commissioners in their Reports of 1839 recommended that the remuneration should be by a fixed sum per head of the chronic sick and by a payment per case for the rest. See the detailed statements as to this question in the Reports of the Select Committees of 1844, 1854, 1864.

as to whether this kind of remuneration is the most suitable, or whether it would not be better to have a payment for each case treated or for each visit. Opinions are still divided on this point. In favour of the system of salary it is urged that this is preferred by the Medical Officers because it gives a more assured position, and that it is also cheaper for the union.¹ The objection to it is mainly that it makes the guardians too lax in the grant of medical relief, because the expenditure is not affected by the number of cases treated in the course of the year. To a certain extent there is now a union of the two systems, since salaried medical officers receive special remuneration for certain specified operations of difficulty.² In the metropolis, where there are 154 district medical officers, the average salary is £115. In the provinces the salary is much smaller, but the Medical Officers have in all cases extra receipts from fees for vaccination, for examination of pauper lunatics, &c. Since 1847 the State has contributed part of the payment of the District Medical Officers, and both their number and their remuneration have considerably increased.³

It seems to be the almost universal opinion that, especially in rural districts, there is need of improvement in the class of medical men employed.⁴ The plan of appointing the medical officers for life has not had the success anticipated. It was believed that in this way capable medical men would be attracted to the post, but it was forgotten that the guardians would thus be bound to retain the services of old doctors whose professional knowledge had made no progress. The power of superannuation introduced by recent legislation⁵ has not quite removed the evil, because the guardians are not inclined, except when absolutely forced, to burden the union with the cost of pensions. In medical circles there is a general belief that the personnel would be improved by making the medical officers servants of the State.⁶

¹ See the speech of Dr. Prior at the South Midland Poor Law Conference, 1883. Report, p. 120.

² See article 177 of the General Order of July 24, 1847, and the interesting provisions in article 179, under which the Medical Officer is entitled to only half the fixed payment if the patient has not survived the operation more than thirty-six hours and has not required and received several attendances afterwards.

³ In the 13th Annual Report of the L. G. B., p. 328, the number of District Medical Officers, exclusive of the 154 Medical Officers of the metropolis, is given as 3,368, but it is expressly stated that this does not represent the number of appointments, because changes in the course of the year are not taken into account and consequently some are counted twice over. As to the remuneration, no exact figures are given except in the case of the metropolis. In the years 1882 and 1883 the total amount for medical relief was £317,133, but it is not apparent how much of this is for the remuneration of District Medical Officers or Medical Officers of workhouses. As already mentioned, the State contributes half the salaries.

⁴ This is quite recognized in medical circles. See especially a speech of Dr. Higginbotham (Midland Poor Law District Conference, 1883, Report, p. 64), in which will be found some valuable material with regard to the question of poor law medical relief.

⁵ 27 & 28 Vict. c. 42; 29 & 30 Vict. c. 113; 33 Vict. c. 2.

⁶ See the so-called *Lancet* Memorial of the year 1878, and the answer of the L. G. B. in the 8th Annual Report, p. 86.

It is the duty of the medical officer personally to undertake the treatment of the sick. It is only in case of emergency that he is entitled to employ as his deputy a practitioner whom, on accepting office, he has to nominate to the guardians. The order for attendance on a sick person is usually issued by the relieving officer or by the guardians; but, as above stated, the overseers and the justices can also give such order; since cases of illness may be always classed as "of sudden and urgent necessity." If the medical officer undertakes the treatment of a sick person without an order from the relieving officer, he must give notice to the relieving officer, so that the latter may obtain the decision of the guardians on the case. As regards the sick or infirm in need of permanent medical relief, a special list has to be prepared, which at least once annually must be drawn up afresh by the clerk or relieving officer. A duplicate is to be sent to the District Medical Officer, and the sick person is furnished with a ticket entitling him to medical treatment until it is revoked. Except in chronic cases the order for attendance is usually in force only for a specified time, after the expiration of which the case is submitted to the guardians afresh, in the event of further medical relief being required. But particular unions differ much as regards the period for which an order of this kind is usually given.¹ Formerly the orders were, for the most part, issued for the whole illness—"during sickness,"—a practice which has now very sensibly been abandoned.

The order or ticket requires the medical officer to treat the sick person. Whether he visits the patient's residence or lets the patient come to him, depends on the circumstances of the illness. In every union a place has to be appointed at which the medical officer is to be found at fixed times, and where those patients have to come whose illness does not make it necessary to visit them at home. This plan is thoroughly carried out in the metropolis, and here the places for consultation are the dispensaries, of which there is one in each union.

The introduction of dispensaries must be regarded as a great advance in poor law medical relief, but at present they are confined to the metropolis and a few other large towns. In the metropolis, where the dispensary system was introduced in the year 1867, the legal enactment by which the Central Board was empowered to suspend repayments from the common fund to the respective unions until they had erected a dispensary, afforded the necessary lever for bringing the system rapidly into operation.² But in the rest of the country such dis-

¹ For this reason the scanty information as to the number of medical orders issued is of no value. According to the 13th Annual Report, p. xliii., in 1883 the orders for outdoor medical relief in the metropolis were altogether 102,198 in number. The number of persons treated is much smaller in consequence of those counted twice. It cannot be estimated with accuracy, on account of the differences in the respective unions with regard to the time for which the orders are in force.

² 32 & 33 Vict. c. 63, s. 14. The detailed provisions as to the administration of dispensaries are embodied in the Metropolitan Dispensary Order, Ap. 22, 1871, Glen, P. L. O., p. 573. Sir Charles Trevelyan and Dr. Bridges have especially promoted the establishment of dispensaries.

pensaries are found only exceptionally. In rural districts the District Medical Officer has ordinarily to provide for the supply of the necessary medicines in consideration of a fixed annual payment. Only in the case of specially dear drugs (*e.g.* quinine, cod-liver oil, &c.), provision is made for their being procured through the relieving officer. There is much complaint that, owing to this method, the medicines supplied suffer in quality and quantity.

If the medical officer considers a special diet necessary for the patient, he is not empowered to order it directly, and may only recommend the grant of so-called "medical extras;" the final decision resting with the guardians.¹ It is true that in practice this recommendation has almost the same effect as a direct order, for naturally the guardians are unwilling to be responsible for the possible consequences of non-compliance with the doctor's advice. But by the medical officers themselves it is regarded as degrading to their position that they are not entitled to order what they consider necessary for the sick, and that in this matter they must be subject to the unskilled opinion of the guardians, or even of the relieving officer, who is socially much their inferior. Yet it must not be forgotten that it is just these medical extras, frequently including wine or other alcoholic liquors, which give an inducement to people to resort to the poor law medical officer in case of illness; and many poor persons, if they did not do this, would be forced to deny themselves such extras even if considered necessary by their private doctor. A liberal allowance of medical extras would involve the real danger of increasing the number of applications for poor law medical relief. This danger is perfectly recognized in England, and the guardians endeavour, as far as lies in their power, to induce the medical officer to limit the recommendation of extras to what is absolutely necessary.

Another circumstance which tends to make people claim poor law medical relief when they might provide for themselves is that in the country the medical officer is frequently the only practitioner in the neighbourhood, so they see no manifest difference whether they lay by for illness, and then pay the doctor out of their own pocket, or whether they do not do this, and yet are treated by the same person in the same way. And as they have the prospect of receiving medical extras if they resort to the doctor as poor law medical officer, while if they pay the same doctor out of their own pocket they must deny themselves the strengthening diet which is perhaps requisite for them, they are directly induced to claim poor law medical relief without scruple.

Yet it is practically impossible in cases of illness to institute searching inquiry as to whether the applicant is really destitute. Relief in this case must be afforded speedily. It is easily intelligible

¹ See Glen, P. L. O., p. 195: "A medical officer is not empowered by the orders of the L. G. B. to order food or articles of diet, as meat, milk, wine or porter for his pauper patient. Any direction that he may give to that effect will only amount to an expression of opinion on his part that relief in food or other necessaries is required."

that the poor law officers do not like to assume the responsibility of refusing medical assistance until perfect destitution is proved. One method by which in this case the guardians are secured from imposture, consists in the grant of medical relief by way of loan, and in this way there is a possibility of recovering by summary procedure the costs incurred.¹ Another plan much employed of late years in order to limit applications for poor law medical relief is to limit the order for attendance to a short period, and thus to provide that the patient, unless pronounced by the doctor to be incapable of so doing, shall personally appear before the guardians in order to obtain its prolongation.

Finally, we must here take note of the endeavours which have been made, by the establishment of sick clubs and provident dispensaries, to give people an easy means of making provision for illness. In the Metropolitan Provident Medical Association, by an entrance fee of 10s. and a monthly contribution of 1s., medical attendance, inclusive of medicines and other requisites, may be secured for husband, wife, and children under fourteen. In the country the contributions are still less, the subscription for a single man being usually 5s. annually. Efforts are being made to extend these very useful institutions.

II. Great as is the difference between town and country as to outdoor medical relief, it is still greater as regards indoor medical relief. This difference, and at the same time the disadvantages of the system may be shortly characterized. In the country there is too little, and in the towns, especially in London, too much of such relief. In the country little progress has yet been made with the movement, which began after 1860, for the removal of sick paupers from the workhouse, and their treatment in special establishments. Ordinarily the sick constitute the chief portion of the workhouse inmates, and are kept in a separate sick ward. The disadvantages involved have been already mentioned.² In the workhouses, owing to their not having been erected and designed as infirmaries, there is no suitable accommodation for inmates requiring medical care, while proper administration is made much more difficult by the large number of inmates requiring special treatment.

We confess that it is not easy to say how this is to be helped. The erection of a special infirmary for each union is impracticable on account of expense. A central establishment for several unions has the disadvantage that the removal of the sick cannot easily be carried out, on account of distance. Consequently the endeavour has been not so much to secure the erection of such central institu-

¹ See the provisions as to relief by way of loan (above, p. 110). As regards outdoor medical relief, difficulties have arisen as to the mode of calculating the expenditure in consequence of the fact that the medical officer is not paid for the particular case, but receives a yearly salary. For want of sufficient proof of this amount, the Courts have frequently refused to make an order for its repayment.

² See above, p. 65, where mention is made of the discussion on this subject at the Social Science Congress, Glasgow, 1860, and especially of the suggestions of Miss Louisa Twining.

tions as to utilize another sort of establishment. By a legal enactment of 1851 the guardians are empowered, with the approval of the Central Board, to subscribe to hospitals and infirmaries so as to be able to send their sick paupers to such institutions.¹ Extensive use is now made of this power, and thus better provision is at any rate made for the removal and suitable treatment of the sick.

As regards the sick received into the workhouses, an improvement has been introduced to the extent of appointing nurses possessing more skilled knowledge than formerly. It used to be the practice to employ other inmates of the workhouses as nurses, to which there is the obvious objection that not only are they without any skilled training, but there is no security for their exercising care in the treatment of the patients. About 1860 an association was founded for promoting the employment of trained nurses in workhouses and infirmaries, while at the same time a number of schools were established for training persons as nurses.

This was especially the case in the metropolis, in which the Act of 1867 had authorized the newly-erected asylums to be used as training establishments for nurses.² On May 13th, 1873, the Central Board issued a regulation under which persons between twenty-five and thirty-five might be admitted to the asylums as probationary nurses, be employed there for one year under the control of the medical officer and the matron, and eventually receive certificates of competency. In the metropolis female nurses receive at first £10 to £15 annually, the salary gradually increasing up to £30. Male nurses, who generally receive their training in military hospitals, are paid more highly. In the metropolis the employment of trained nurses is now almost universal, and this improvement is also making its way in the provinces.³

As regards indoor medical relief in the great towns, and especially in the metropolis, we find that not only is the removal of the sick from the workhouse completely carried out, through the erection of special infirmaries, but that there are numbers of hospitals and infirmaries maintained by voluntary contributions. It is this which

¹ 14 & 15 Vict. c. 105, s. 4, now extended by 42 & 43 Vict. c. 54, s. 4. The Central Board endeavours to secure that difficult operations shall not be conducted in the workhouses, but that all serious cases shall be treated in separate institutions. See the statement of Mr. Dodson, late President of the L. G. B., in the House of Commons on June 20th, 1881, *Hansard*, iii., vol. 262, p. 852.

² 30 Vict. c. 6, s. 29.

³ According to the 13th Report of the L. G. B., App. p. 328, there were, in 1883, 1,016 nurses in the metropolis; in the rest of England and Wales, 1,101 female and 175 male nurses. In 1866 the number of paid nurses in the metropolis amounted altogether to only 114. It will be seen how quickly this improvement had been carried out. As to its gradual development and as to the important efforts of Miss Nightingale, Mrs. Wardroper, Miss Agnes Jones, and Miss Florence Lees, see an article in the *Pall Mall Gazette*, May 30, 1885, 'Hospital Nurses, Past and Present.' It may be added that there is a special institution—The Metropolitan and National Nursing Association for District Nurses—for the training of ladies in the work of Nursing; many clergymen's daughters avail themselves of this Association.

has led us to the above conclusion that rather too much is done in this direction. It will be easily understood that admission to these institutions, which are managed by eminent physicians, and serve for the practical training of students in medicine, is governed less by the patient's need of charity than by regard to the nature of the illness and desire for an interesting case. It should be added that in nearly all such institutions a similar tendency arises from the fact that the subscribers generally receive a number of letters of admission according to the amount of their contribution, and do not concern themselves very much as to whether the recipients are in need of charity. There is in this way a dangerous competition between charity and poor law relief, and the want of a rigid line between the two is not calculated to encourage putting by for illness.¹ This is especially the case in London, where the poor law arrangements are so complete as not to require to be supplemented by charitable institutions. The removal of the latter from the towns to the country would benefit both.

Of the poor law infirmaries of the metropolis we shall speak hereafter in connection with the metropolitan poor law system.

In the metropolitan establishments it is the practice to appoint medical officers devoting their whole time to their duties, while in the provinces such officers are usually engaged in private practice. It is the duty of the medical officer of the workhouse, besides undertaking the medical treatment of the sick, to see to their diet as well as to that of the pauper children. It is also his duty to report to the guardians, if he has reason to believe that the food, ventilation or other arrangements in the workhouse are not such as are desirable in the interests of the inmates. Finally, he has to examine the state of health of those newly admitted, to report as to the causes of any deaths that occur, to certify, with regard to pauper lunatics admitted, whether their disease is such that they may without danger be left in the workhouse, or whether they ought to be treated in special asylums.²

¹ We agree perfectly in this point with Mr. Loch, *ut supra*, p. 87, who remarks specially with regard to medical relief, "The sharper the line is drawn between the poor law and charity in these matters the greater is the possibility of making it (charity) tend to, instead of seduce from, self-help." The bad influence of charitable institutions makes itself felt in the case of outdoor as well as of indoor medical relief, as out-patients are usually treated gratuitously at specified times. The whole question has been lately discussed at a Conference called by the Metropolitan Provident Medical Association, at which the necessity for reform is generally recognized. See the *Observer* of Jan. 25, 1885.

² The duties of the workhouse medical officer are set forth in Article 207 of the Gen. Cons. Ord. of July 24, 1847, and the two amending orders of April 4, 1868, and Aug. 24, 1869, Glen, P. L. O., 532 and 546. The officer has to enter in a special Report Book each visit paid by him, with any necessary details as to infectious or epidemic diseases. This book is to be laid before the guardians at every meeting, and they may require the attendance of the officer with a view of obtaining further information. Great importance is attached by the Central Board to such reports, in which proposals may be made for any sanitary improvements in the workhouse arrangements. See Instructional Letter of April 20, 1868,

III. Here it is necessary to enter into some detail as to the treatment of pauper lunatics.

Only the main provisions of the regulations on the subject need be specified.¹ Any detailed account of this complicated matter, in which the question of personal freedom plays a large part, would be far beyond the scope of our work, and is moreover superfluous at the present time, as a new enactment on the subject is expected.²

In the English enactments as to the treatment of lunatics three classes of persons are distinguished.

(1) Lunatics guilty of criminal acts, or criminals who become insane.

(2) Pauper lunatics.

(3) Private patients and "chancery patients."

Here we are only concerned with the second class, which however

Glen, P. L. O., p. 533. A half-yearly report is to be made on January 1st and July 1st, containing answers to the following questions :

1. Is there sufficient ventilation and warmth ?
2. Has the accommodation during the preceding six months for the several classes of sick been sufficient ?
3. Are the arrangements for cooking and distribution of food, as regards the sick, satisfactory ?
4. Is the nursing satisfactorily performed ?
5. Is there a sufficient supply of towels, vessels, bedding, clothing, and other conveniences for the use of the sick inmates ?
6. Are the medical appliances sufficient and in good order ?
Are there any water-beds or rack bedsteads ? and, if so, are they sufficient in number and in good order ?
7. Are the lavatories and baths sufficient and in good order ?
8. Are the supply and distribution of hot and cold water sufficiently provided for ?

This string of questions affords a striking illustration of the comprehensive care and forethought of the Central Board.

¹ For further information on the subject see the 'Lunacy Acts,' by D. P. Fry, 2nd ed., London, 1877, and the 'Lunacy Law and Practice,' by H. M. P. Pope, London, 1877. See also Archbold, 'Law and Practice' with respect to pauper lunatics, 2nd ed., edited by Glen, London, 1877. The chief statutes are 16 & 17 Vict. c. 97, ss. 96, 97 ; 25 & 26 Vict. c. III.

² In the year 1877 a scandal led to the appointment of a Parliamentary Committee to report as to the necessity of fresh legislation on this matter. At the present time another *cause célèbre*, the Weldon case, has led to the introduction of the new Lunacy Bill. In connection with this Bill detailed inquiries have been made as to the legislation with regard to the treatment of lunatics in foreign countries, Parl. Paper, 1885, C. 4283. This is not the place to deal with the points involved, and the observations in the text are limited to the main question. We may, however, remark that it seems to us that in England people are inclined to ascribe to defects in the law the errors which are made in practice, though they are really attributable to the fact that those entrusted with the execution of the laws are unequal to the functions imposed on them ; that the magistrate is deficient in law and the doctor in medical science. We have often noticed that while foreigners misapprehend English institutions because they only regard the letter of the law and not its administration, the English themselves are inclined to fall into the other extreme ; they identify the legal provisions with the mode of carrying them out, and cannot see that such provisions are reasonable enough in themselves, and that the errors are due to the fact that the agency by which they are administered is defective, that the magistrate is no lawyer, and the doctor is not a competent physician.

includes part of the third, since certain lunatics are treated as pauper lunatics whether they have means or not. If they have, the expenses incurred are repaid. With regard to the "pauper lunatics," again, two classes have to be distinguished:

(a) Pauper lunatics proper.

(b) Lunatics in whose case special precautions are prescribed in the interests of the community without reference to their means.

In this last class are included lunatics found wandering at large and those not under proper care. It is competent to any person to notify cases of this kind to relieving officers, police, or magistrates. The two former are required, within three days, to give information to the magistrate of any case which comes to their knowledge. Moreover, the poor law medical officer must report to the magistrate upon any such case within three days. As regards the other class of pauper lunatics, the poor law medical officer and the relieving officer have to bring the case before the magistrate. The poor law medical officer informs the relieving officer, who takes the lunatic to the magistrate.

The order for the admission of the lunatic into an asylum is granted by one justice, or in special circumstances by two justices, after a medical practitioner has, as the result of personal examination of the case, given a certificate that the patient is a lunatic and proper person to be taken charge of.¹

Pauper lunatics are admitted either to County or Borough Asylums, Licensed Houses or Registered Hospitals, Unlicensed Houses, or finally, to Workhouses.

We proceed to particularize these different establishments.

Only a small proportion of the lunatics are received in workhouses. Workhouses are not designed for dangerous lunatics, who are exclusively sent to Asylums, Registered Hospitals or Licensed Houses. To these last establishments all lunatics are ordinarily sent in whose case medical treatment is likely to effect a cure, or who require constant medical supervision. Those admitted to the workhouses are therefore only the harmless and the incurable lunatics. If a lunatic is admitted to the workhouse the medical officer has to certify to the guardians whether he is to be regarded as dangerous, or for other reasons requires constant supervision. In such cases the guardians have to take the necessary measures to send the lunatic either to an Asylum or to a Licensed House, as they are prohibited from keeping him more than fourteen days in the workhouse.²

Not more than one lunatic may be kept in an Unlicensed House. The number of lunatics in such houses is small, and is practically limited to cases in which special supervision is not required, and where relations or other responsible people can do what is necessary.

Still smaller is the number of persons received in Registered

¹ If the lunatic cannot be brought before the justices an order of admission may be given by a clergyman in association with the relieving officer, provided that there is also the necessary medical certificate.

² 4 & 5 Will. IV. c. 76, s. 45; 25 & 26 Vict. c. 111, s. 10. See also 31 & 32 Vict. c. 22.

Hospitals and Licensed Houses. The Registered Hospitals are establishments either entirely or mainly supported by voluntary contributions. The Licensed Houses are private establishments, which require special authorisation. The license is granted in the provinces by the Quarter Sessions, in the metropolis by the Commissioners in Lunacy.¹ It is in the first instance valid for thirteen months, after which it may be renewed. Before it is granted, plans of the establishment must be submitted, an inspection must be made, and if it is designed for more than one hundred persons there must be a resident medical officer. Licensed Houses and Registered Hospitals must be inspected twice a year without previous notice by a committee appointed by the magistrates, who have to make a report of their inspection to the Central Board.² Registered Hospitals and Licensed Houses are only used for the admission of pauper lunatics if there is no room in the County or Borough Asylums.

The majority of pauper lunatics are kept in the last-named public Asylums, in which, if space admits, private patients may also be received.³ The public lunatic asylums are almost all of recent date, having been for the most part erected in the present century. Most of the pauper lunatics were previously kept in the workhouses. A number of Acts during the first half of the century required the erection of asylums by counties and by boroughs having a separate commission of the peace. These Acts were consolidated in 1853, and have since been amended in particular points.⁴ According to the existing law, all counties without a lunatic asylum are required by the Quarter Sessions or by the Home Secretary to provide one. Towns with not less than six justices may erect an asylum for themselves. The plans and regulations of the asylums are to be submitted to the Commissioners in Lunacy for their approval. The costs of erection are to be defrayed from the county or borough rate. The management is in the hands of a committee of visitors, to be appointed by the Quarter Sessions or by the Town Council. They must visit the asylums every two months, and must make an annual report to the Lunacy Commission, to whom all the documents as to the admission are to be sent in duplicate, and who must cause annual inspection of the asylums to be made by two commissioners, who report on the condition of the asylums and examine the different books which have to be kept. Special inspections may at any time

¹ This board consists of eleven persons, appointed by the Lord Chancellor, six being paid and five unpaid. Half of the paid Commissioners are medical men, the other half barristers. As to their duties, see 8 & 9 Vict. c. 100; 18 & 19 Vict. c. 96; and 18 & 19 Vict. c. 105.

² Licensed houses may also at any time be visited by the guardians or by the poor law medical officers.

³ 16 & 17 Vict. c. 97, s. 43.

⁴ The principal act, the Lunatic Asylums Act (16 & 17 Vict. c. 97), repeals a number of earlier enactments. It is amended by 18 & 19 Vict. c. 105; 19 & 20 Vict. c. 87; 25 & 26 Vict. c. 111; 26 & 27 Vict. c. 110; 28 & 29 Vict. c. 80. [See also 48 & 49 Vict. c. 52. By the Lunacy Bill now (1888) before Parliament it is proposed to make some further alterations as to pauper lunatics. —TR.]

be ordered by the Lord Chancellor or the Home Secretary. Moreover the guardians and the poor law medical officers are empowered at any time to visit the lunatics admitted from their district unless this appears undesirable on medical grounds. The superintendent of the asylum has to send to the guardians a half yearly report as to the pauper lunatics under treatment.

As regards the cost of maintenance of pauper lunatics, every union has to pay for its own.¹ Since 1874, however, the State makes a contribution of 4s. weekly for each lunatic admitted to a public asylum or to a Registered House.

This contribution, which is only paid in respect of lunatics in asylums, would naturally have the effect of lessening the number of those in workhouses, and increasing that in asylums.

This latter increase has certainly taken place, but it has not been accompanied to any important extent by a decrease in the number of lunatics maintained elsewhere. As a matter of fact there has been an enormous increase in the number of lunatics in public asylums, while the number of the others has remained much as it was. The following table extracted from the 13th Annual Report of the L. G. B. (p. xx.) will make this clear.²

On the 1st January.	INSANE PAUPERS CHARGEABLE TO THE POOR RATES IN:—				TOTAL.
	County or Borough Lunatic Asylums.	Registered Hospitals or Licensed Houses.	Workhouses.	Residing with Relatives or in Lodgings or Boarded out.	
1873	28,411	1,581	14,343	7,070	51,405
1874	29,297	1,727	15,018	6,839	52,881
1875	30,497	1,842	15,376	6,856	54,571
1876	31,973	1,507	15,509	6,526	55,515
1877	33,432	1,439	16,038	6,312	57,221
1878	35,553	910	16,265	6,214	58,942
1879	36,627	1,303	16,005	6,230	60,165
1880	37,815	1,335	16,464	5,980	61,594
1881	39,128	1,458	16,811	6,127	63,524
1882	40,501	1,729	16,976	6,113	65,319
1883	41,894	1,707	17,330	6,255	67,186

It will be seen that the number of lunatics in the registered hospitals is very small, and varies much in different years. The number of those living with relations, &c., does not amount to ten per cent. of the whole, having very slightly decreased since 1873. The majority are in public lunatic asylums and workhouses; there being an increase as regards both, but especially as regards the asylums. It must be remembered, however, that only one class of lunatics is admitted to the workhouses, while the asylums admit all

¹ If a lunatic does not possess a settlement, the cost of his maintenance has to be defrayed from the county rate.

² The clerk to the guardians has to send annually to the L. G. B. a special list of pauper lunatics. Such lists furnish the material for the table.

classes. Still, figures do not show that in consequence of the contribution from the State, those classes of lunatics who might be maintained in workhouses have been sent to public asylums to a large extent as compared with previous years.

The chief reason of this is no doubt the costliness of these asylums. According to an abstract made by Dr. S. W. North¹ the weekly cost of maintenance is 9s. 6½d. per head in the county asylums, and 11s. 4½d. in the borough asylums, while in the workhouses it only amounts to 5s. As regards this last amount it must be admitted that the cost of the staff which, in the case of workhouses, cannot be separately apportioned to the lunatics, is not included, though it is reckoned in the case of the asylums. The difference between the amounts is so great that the guardians, even with the contribution of 4s. a week from the State, scarcely gain by sending away such lunatics as they could keep in workhouses.² It should, moreover, be observed that the number given under the head of Lunatics in workhouses includes also those who are in special institutions for idiots and imbeciles.³

These figures show the enormous increase of pauper lunatics. The number has risen annually, and is now 15,700 in excess of what it was ten years ago. Unfortunately, too, the rise is not only temporary, but has been steadily going on for many years, as will be seen from the following figures.⁴

On the 1st of January, 1852, the number of pauper lunatics was	21,158
" 1869, "	45,143
" 1872, "	50,135
" 1879, "	60,165
and, according to the report on January 1, 1884,	70,470

These are figures which deserve serious consideration, and which can scarcely be entirely accounted for, as is often assumed, by the drunkenness of the lower classes.⁵

¹ See the speech of Dr. S. W. North at the Yorkshire Poor Law Conference, 1881. Reports, p. 390.

² It should be stated that with the approval of the Commissioners in Lunacy and the L. G. B., chronic lunatics, if not dangerous, may be sent back from the asylums to the workhouses. 25 & 26 Vict. c. 111, s. 8; 26 & 27 Vict. c. 127, s. 2; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 43.

³ See below, p. 259, as to the establishments erected by the Metropolitan Asylums Board at Caterham, Leavesden, and Darenth. According to the last report of the Commissioners in Lunacy, the number of paupers in these institutions is 5,321, while in the workhouses there were 12,056. The cost in these establishments amount to 8s. 9d. a week, and are thus considerably lower than in the county asylums.

⁴ The following interesting figures are taken from the report of the Commissioners in Lunacy for 1883. Besides 70,470 pauper lunatics (31,004 males, and 39,466 females), there are under the control of the Commissioners in Lunacy 8,058 private patients. Of the latter 686 were in county and borough asylums, but the larger majority were in registered hospitals and licensed houses. In the course of the year 1883 14,458 persons were newly admitted into the establishments under the control of the Commissioners.

⁵ In Dr. North's very instructive paper, already quoted, this frightful increase of lunacy is ascribed mainly to the unhealthy dwellings of the working classes. No

SECTION VI.

CASUAL PAUPERS AND BEGGARS.

We have repeatedly dwelt upon the difficulty of so organising the poor law system that adequate help shall be given to the destitute without affording an incentive to pauperism. This difficulty is especially felt as regards the treatment of vagrants.

It is intensified by the fact that the term "destitute" comprises two entirely different classes of persons, between whom it has hitherto been found very hard to draw a line. On the one hand are the genuine working-men in search of employment, who are in want owing to no fault of their own; on the other hand, the professional vagabonds who roam from place to place, and whose object it is to live comfortably without work, at the expense of other people. Strong police measures are necessary to repress the latter class, since their existence is an injury to the former.

As long as no fixed line is drawn between these two classes between real and only apparent destitution, any measures against vagrants are liable either to the objection that the destitute are inadequately relieved, or to the still stronger one that idleness is encouraged, and thus there is a direct incentive to pauperism.

The danger involved in this latter consideration is so obvious as not to need further discussion. Nothing has so demoralising an effect upon the whole working-classes as the sight of crowds of beggars, living jovially and doing nothing. But in dealing with this class, all stringent regulations are inoperative as long as they are not supported by public opinion, and this will be the case so long as people fear that harsh measure will be dealt out to those who are destitute for no fault of their own. If public opinion is not convinced that the destitute are suitably and adequately provided for, there will always be benevolent souls who will feel impelled to mitigate the severity of the law by private charity.¹ But as it is not possible for individual benevolence to discriminate

doubt this is a factor which has to be considered. Unhealthy and over-crowded dwellings are not only attended with physical and moral evils, but must also have an influence on the mental condition of those who inhabit them. Moreover, whether they do not drive people to the public-houses and are thus an indirect cause of lunacy is a doubtful question. See my essay on 'Labourers' Dwellings in England,' Leipzig, 1886. With regard to the measures against drunkenness, it may be stated that the Habitual Drunkards' Act, 1879, authorizes the provision of Retreats, which have to be certified by the magistrates, and are subject to Government inspection. They were introduced on the ground that habitual drunkards "call for protection as much as if they were deprived of their reason by the act of God." In practice, however, very little use has been made of this measure, which was only passed experimentally for a period of ten years.

¹ Nicholls, vol. ii. p. 65, rightly says: "As long as the people's sympathies are excited by the appearance of want, so long will the charitably disposed be compelled to give. The best prevention of unreasoning benevolence will be found in the people's being convinced that the really destitute are relieved and properly provided for at the public charge."

between real and only apparent need, alms are lavished for the most part, not on the destitute and the deserving, but on those who know best how to excite pity, because begging is their trade. We can thus only come to the unsatisfactory conclusion, that indiscriminate almsgiving, evoked by the harshness of repressive measures, favours the profession of mendicancy, and therefore supplies an incentive to pauperism scarcely less powerful than that afforded by lenient enactments.

With these general remarks, we proceed to the consideration of the way in which vagrants are dealt with in England. It will be obvious from what we have said that it is necessary that the regulations for the relief of vagrants should be treated in connection with the penal provisions against rogues and vagabonds. As regards the latter class it will be enough shortly to recapitulate the account given in the first part of this work.

English legislation has always treated beggars and vagabonds with extraordinary severity. The old Acts contained a complete penal system, with progressive penalties against "sturdy vagabonds," and "valiant beggars." For the first offence, the punishment was public whipping, for the second, cutting off the ears, for the third, hanging; and even in the Act of 1713, which belongs to a more humane period, we find the provision that vagabonds, before being sent back to their home, are to be publicly whipped, till their bodies be bloody.¹ Even the Act of 1824, which is still in force, bears the traces of the severity of the middle ages. In accordance with this Act,² a beggar wandering alone, or asking for alms in public places, streets, etc., may be punished as an idle and disorderly person with imprisonment for one month with hard labour. If he has already been sentenced as an idle and disorderly person, the penalty is raised to imprisonment with hard labour for 3 months, and if after having been thus punished as a rogue and vagabond, he is again found guilty, he may be condemned as an incorrigible rogue to imprisonment and hard labour for twelve months, to which whipping may be added. It will be seen that the penalties still in force leave nothing to be desired on the ground of severity.

If, however, we look into the matter and inquire how far these provisions are of practical application, we shall be of a different opinion. It is not merely that under the English penal system only a limited number of cases of repeated offences are punished, but it is also a well recognised fact that a magistrate is very reluctant to impose a penalty for simple begging if no grave offence is associated with it.³

¹ 13 Anne c. 26. "Be stripped naked from the middle, and openly whipped till his or her body be bloody"!

² Details of the provisions of the Act 5 George IV c. 83, have been already given, p. 25.

³ In the House of Commons on May 10th, 1869, Mr. Goschen, the then President of the P. L. B., stated that there was "a difficulty in procuring the conviction of vagrants, because magistrates did not regard the offence as one of a serious character." Similarly Mr. Thomas Dickens, in the Transactions of the

Moreover, there is one English arrangement by which alms may be asked for without liability to penalty. This is the so-called Pedlar's Certificate, which is granted by the police for a fee of 5s. a year. The possessor of this document, by providing himself with a stock of two match-boxes, may appeal for charity in the streets during the whole year, if he only takes the precaution always to stretch out the hand with the match-boxes in it. This molestation of the public by many hundred persons in London, is an English characteristic.¹ It is the legalized evasion of the enactments against begging, which are held by the public to be excessive in stringency.² The result is that these penal enactments have little effect, and only touch novices in the art of mendicancy.

We proceed to a description of the fashion in which this class of persons is dealt with by the poor law authorities.

As all who are really destitute, whether able-bodied or not, must, under the English law, be relieved by the guardians, and as on the other hand, any person admitted to the workhouse could leave it as soon as he liked, vagrants used at any time to find a free lodging for the night, with supper and breakfast in the workhouse. It was with reason that the workhouses were styled pauper hotels, and were used as convenient resting-places by professional vagrants after they had spent the proceeds of their day's begging in tippling and jollification. In 1842 the legislature endeavoured to remedy this abuse by providing³ that the guardians might prescribe a task of work to be done by any person relieved in any workhouse, in return for his food and lodging. The task was to be sanctioned by the Central Board, but no one was to be detained against his will for more than four hours after breakfast on the morning following his admission into the workhouse. If he refused or neglected to perform his task, the guardians could have him punished as an idle and disorderly person.

It was soon seen that wherever the task was severe and was rigidly enforced, the number of beggars and vagrants decreased. This fact was regarded as warranting an extension of the enactment, and in an Act of 1871⁴ it was provided that the pauper should not be discharged before eleven in the morning after his admission or before the completion of the prescribed task. If he had been thus relieved on more than two occasions during one month in the same union, he

Manchester Statistical Society, 1880, "The Borderland of Pauperism," declares that the police magistrates almost always discharge beggars and vagabonds brought before them for the first time. The result is that the beggars wander from one district to another, and escape punishment.

¹ Another question is how many of these disguised beggars actually possess such a certificate. The risk which they run if they stretch out their hand without having a certificate, is in effect not greater than if they really begged, but perhaps the two boxes of matches might be confiscated.

² Loch, *ut supra*, p. 43, says, "The pedlar is a kind of legalized vagrant, a vagrant with a legitimate and recognized purpose in roving."

³ 5 & 6 Vict. c. 57, s. 5.

⁴ The Pauper Inmate Discharge and Regulation Act, 34 & 35 Vict. c. 108.

was not to be entitled to discharge himself until 9 A.M. on the third day after his admission.

These provisions, however, which are decidedly of a penal character, did not apply to all persons relieved, but only to a special class, the casual paupers,¹ who are defined in the Act as "any destitute wayfarer or wanderer." English writers define them somewhat differently, namely, as those who claim relief in a place which is neither that of their settlement nor of their residence.² This brings into sharper relief the particular characteristic of the class: they are homeless persons who only claim shelter for the night. Thus the Act³ of 1864, applying only to the metropolis, described this class of persons as "houseless poor." But as regards this last expression, it does not matter where the person has a settlement, while under the Act of 1871, a person in need of shelter, whose settlement is in the district where he is relieved, is not to be treated as a casual pauper.⁴

There are special regulations with regard to the treatment of casual paupers. Either separate accommodation is reserved for them in the workhouse, or separate buildings are provided. In the case of these "casual wards," the erection of which may be required by the Central Board, the discipline, the management, and the food are specially prescribed. The provisions on this subject in the Act of 1871 have been amended and made more stringent by an Act of 1882,⁵ especially relating to casual paupers, the provisions of which are as follows:

Admission to the casual wards is to be granted on an order of the relieving officer,⁶ or of an overseer, or, in case of urgent need without an order, by the master of the workhouse or superintendent of the

¹ The Act gives the guardians power to require in the case of other inmates of the workhouse or particular classes, that they shall not be discharged immediately on their application, but shall be detained a certain time. The introduction of this measure is left to the discretion of the guardians, while the enactments as to casual paupers are obligatory.

² See Archbold, 'Justice of the Peace,' p. 242.

³ 27 & 28 Vict. c. 116. Under this Act (see also 28 Vict. c. 34, and 30 Vict. c. 6. s. 69, sub s. 9) the expenditure on the houseless poor or casual paupers was made a common charge on the whole metropolis.

⁴ Since settlement has almost lost significance as regards relief, it does not appear reasonable that it should be introduced in this case. Whatever the intention of the legislature, practically little attention is paid to the point, and, as a matter of fact, a person is ordinarily treated as a casual pauper if only in need of shelter for a single night, without reference to his settlement. The doubtful question as to what is meant by "Casual Pauper" and what by "Vagrant" is discussed in the Annual Report of the Whitechapel Union, already quoted, p. 15.

⁵ 45 & 46 Vict. c. 36, and the General Consolidated Order of Dec. 18, 1882. 'Regulations with respect to Casual Paupers,' Glen, P. L. O., p. 866.

⁶ For some time the police assumed the duties of assistant relieving officers with regard to casual paupers, and issued orders for their admission to the casual wards, but as, in the beginning of the year 1872, the Chief Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police complained that the police were thus taken away from their proper duties, the L. G. B. ordered by circular that the employment of police constables as assistant relieving officers should be discontinued after the 1st July 1872: (2nd Annual Report of the L. G. B. p. xxi.)

casual ward. Moreover, in the Metropolis, if there is accommodation, admission is to be given to persons brought in by the police as having been found helpless. The casual wards are open for the admission of persons in summer (April to September) from 6 P.M., in winter from 4 P.M. The person admitted is in the first place examined as to whether he has money or valuables about him; if so, they are taken away. He must take a bath, and is furnished with special clothes, while his own garments are, if requisite, dried and disinfected. The diet is distinctly prescribed, and is less than that given in the workhouse. The order seems to contemplate that each vagrant shall have a separate cell for a bedroom. But the cell system is in practice rarely carried out.

The task required to be performed is ordinarily, in the case of men, either stone-breaking or oakum-picking; in the case of women, either domestic work or oakum picking. The superintendent of the casual ward has to provide each inmate with work suited to his capacity, but within the prescribed limits. If he refuses or neglects to perform his task, if he does not comply with the regulations and other requirements, if he gives a false name, or makes any false statement, he may be taken before the magistrate for punishment as an idle and disorderly person. If he destroys any of the property of the establishment or his own clothes, he may be punished as a rogue and vagabond.¹ The penalty is somewhat severe. For neglect of work it is ordinarily fourteen days' imprisonment with hard labour; for insubordination, not less than a month's imprisonment with hard labour. Notice of these penalties is placarded in the wards for the information and warning of the inmates.

Discharge is not to be granted before 9 o'clock on the second day after admission, or before the completion of the prescribed task, and if the person in the course of a single month has been admitted more than once into the casual ward of the same union, not before nine o'clock on the fourth day after admission. Sunday is not to be reckoned in this period, and the metropolis is to be regarded as one union.² The provisions, however, with regard to detention are only permissive. The guardians can dispense with them in regard to particular classes of persons, and the superintendent of the casual ward has independent authority to permit an earlier discharge if there are special circumstances in the case.

These then are the present regulations—what is the result in practice? According to the official statement, it is very favourable.³ In the year 1883, when the new Act was first in operation, the average

¹ The penalty for destruction of clothing is a very necessary one, as it used often to happen that casuals resorted to this device in order to be provided with new clothes.

² Since July 1, 1872, visiting police officers have been appointed in the metropolis, to visit each casual ward at least twice every week, and to identify those inmates who are regular frequenters of the Casual Wards. Old and experienced police officers are ordinarily selected for this purpose. They do not wear uniform.

³ 13th Annual Report, p. xxiii. The figures are given in the Appendix, p. 225.

number of casual paupers relieved daily in England and Wales was 4,790, as against 6,114 in the previous year. In the metropolis alone the decrease is still greater: the number falls from 813·9 to 482·4 per diem. Without here questioning¹ the trustworthiness of these figures, we may ask whether the mere numerical reduction of casual paupers is a proof of the favourable working of the new system? On two grounds this question must be answered in the negative.

One point which has escaped attention is, that besides casual wards a number of refuges have been erected by charitable societies for the reception of the homeless, and that the number of such institutions has increased, owing especially to the more stringent provisions of the new Act. The influence of these institutions on the figures given above is illustrated by the following fact. According to the official returns, there was in the year 1883 an average of 482·4 persons in the casual wards in the metropolis daily, or rather nightly. The figures are reckoned on the night from Friday to Saturday.² It would be supposed that in the winter months, when sleeping in the open air is impossible, the numbers would be larger than in the warmer season. This, however, is not the case. In the first three weeks of January there were in the casual wards of the metropolis on each Friday night, 458, 471, and 490 persons respectively, while in the first three weeks of May the numbers were 556, 518, and 459. The explanation of this striking fact is that the refuges are only open in the winter months. In order to form a just estimate it would be necessary to include the number of persons admitted to the refuges.³

But then comes the further question whether the persons admitted to the casual wards are those for whom these more stringent regulations are designed? From ocular demonstration and from conversation with several superintendents of casual wards, we believe that this question too must be answered in the negative. The majority of persons admitted are not professional vagrants, but rather persons who are out of work for the time, and yet possess too much self-respect to beg. Real vagrants can always manage, by begging or in some other fashion, to obtain the very small sum, generally not more than three-pence, which is enough to procure them quarters for the night in the common lodging-houses.⁴ In this way the stringency of the new

¹ Comparing the figures for 1883 with those previous for years, it is necessary to take into consideration that in consequence of the extension of the period of detention, the number of persons in the workhouse on any particular day represents a much smaller number of admissions than previously.

² The number of newly-admitted inmates varies on different days of the week. It is always smallest on Sunday, and largest on Tuesday (261·5 as against 411·5). This fact is significant. People try to avoid spending Sunday in the casual ward, as it is not reckoned in the period of detention; but after they have managed to get through Sunday, and perhaps Monday, they come back in swarms to the casual ward on Tuesday.

³ See as to these refuges the speech of Mr. Wilkinson at the Central Poor Law Conference, 1881: Reports, p. 319.

⁴ See the speech of Mr. Dorington at the West Midland Poor Law Conference, 1883. Mr. Dorington, as the result of enquiries made by him in 157 unions, states, that "the professional vagrant, instead of coming to the house (i.e. casual ward) now goes to the lodging-house."

regulations has driven the professional vagrant, against whom they were directed, from the casual wards to the common lodging-houses, which have become a dangerous centre for roguery of all kinds ; while, on the other hand, those who really require relief, and are really deserving of it, are treated as evil-doers, since no one who has ever seen a casual ward can doubt that it is very like a prison, if, indeed, the discipline is not actually stricter.¹

The new regulation makes the professional vagrant more dangerous, and does not afford suitable and sufficient relief to the man who is destitute without any fault of his own. Indeed, the latter is often worse off after being in a casual ward than he was before. It should be remembered that a destitute person admitted into the casual ward is obliged to work on a scanty diet, and is afterwards discharged in a penniless condition, without any advice as to where he may find employment, and that this discharge takes place comparatively late in the day, not before 9 A.M. In most cases it must be quite impossible for him to get work on the day of his discharge. In the evening he finds himself once more compelled to resort to the casual ward, till in the end he no longer regards begging with aversion, and becomes one of the very class from which he should hold himself aloof. On the other hand, when real vagrants are admitted to the casual wards² the treatment appears in some degree unsuitable to them. The great object in their case ought to be to inspire them with a desire to work, but the work performed in the casual wards, which possesses no educational character, is quite unfitted for this object.³ In our opinion the new regulation is in every way a blunder, and ought to be revoked as soon as possible.

The treatment of beggars, vagrants, and casual paupers appears to be the branch of the poor law which is most defective, and most in need of improvement. In amending it, the first object should be

¹ In the *Pall Mall Gazette* of March 9th, 1885, a journalist who had spent two days and a night in a casual ward, gave a description, entitled 'On the Tramp,' of its management in true though perhaps somewhat too strong colours. He concludes with the following words : "In my opinion, such treatment as that which I saw meted out to my brethren in distress can only tend to increase the moral and physical degradation of the man, who by stress of circumstances, or by youthful indiscretion is compelled to start on the tramp."

² The reports of the L. G. B. class as "habitual vagrants" those known to have been admitted into the casual wards more than once in a single month. In the year 1883, the total number of habitual vagrants identified by the Visiting Officers in the Metropolis was 20,629. Here, too, there appears the remarkable fact that the number of habitual vagrants in the respective weeks in May, is larger than in January (in May 567, 536, 597 and 460 respectively ; in January 188, 280, 398 and 340), see 13th Report of L. G. B. p. 229.

³ In the report of the Whitechapel Union already quoted, we are told, p. 15, "that the labour test imposed upon vagrant paupers is not calculated to induce a spirit of independence and habit of work, nor to impart physical power to enter upon industrial employment ;" "that habitual vagrancy cannot be repressed by severe discipline and treatment unassociated with the means for dispauperization." The Whitechapel Union, which has distinguished itself in several ways by its excellent way of dealing with paupers, also affords a good example to other unions as regards the casual poor ; see the Resolutions of the Guardians with regard to the Treatment of Vagrants (*Times*, Dec. 30, 1884).

to punish professional vagrants severely, but by penalties which can and will be enforced, and to take care that the kind of work shall have an educational influence on those relieved. Finally, the way ought to be smoothed for their obtaining regular employment after their discharge. If instead of useless oakum-picking, calculated to destroy all taste for labour, it were possible to substitute some useful and profitable occupation, and if they were paid ever so small a remuneration, according to results, a great step in advance would be made.¹ Those who had become destitute from mere misfortune, instead of being driven to a penal and degrading task, would be put in a position to leave the establishment with money in hand, so as to be able to support themselves until again in regular employment. On the other hand, the professional vagrants would be accustomed to the performance of work by which, if so disposed, they could earn a living after their discharge.

There would also be great advantage in making such arrangements as would establish a connection between the casual ward and the labour market, so that those discharged might know where to find employment. Hitherto very little has been done in this respect.² In places where free registers for the unemployed have been established, they have been found to answer very well. For this purpose the officers of the registrars of births, deaths, and marriages are frequently used, as the registrars, on account of their local knowledge, are persons specially suited for the purpose.

The only improvement worth notice (already adopted in a number of unions) is as follows: On discharge from the casual ward the pauper receives a "way-ticket," i.e., a form specifying a certain route, and entitling its possessor at particular hours and at particular stations to receive bread and at night to be lodged in a casual ward, where he is only obliged to do a slight task of labour on the next morning, and then receives a new way-ticket for the following day.

This so-called "Berkshire system"³ is considered to afford a happy combination of severity and kindness, and especially to furnish a means for distinguishing between the vagrant and the wanderer in search of employment. The latter receives, until he finds work, necessary food and lodging, while the vagabond is not inclined to make use of a favour which is only granted him on condition of his adhering to a prescribed route. At the same time it is hoped that in this way police magistrates may be led to deal more severely with persons who beg in spite of their way-ticket. But if this system, which has much in its favour, is to have any large amount of success, the first condition is that it should be adopted over a much larger

¹ Mr. Thomas Dickens, in the paper already quoted, recommends a system of payment by results. He considers that 4*d.* a day might be paid to the inmates for satisfactory work.

² This is essentially a work to be taken up by private philanthropy. See above, p. 218, note 1.

³ See the speech already quoted of Mr. Dorington at the West Midland P. L. Conference, 1883.

area. Otherwise the result will be that professional vagrants will avoid those districts in which they are treated with such strictness, and will flock all the more to others. The effect will thus be merely to remove the plague of mendicancy from one place to another.

SECTION VII.

METROPOLITAN POOR LAW ADMINISTRATION.

The poor law administration of the metropolis is of particular interest in two respects. In the first place, it is interesting to see how means have been found to overcome the inherent difficulties of combining a uniform poor law system with local self-government in a city with circumstances so very different from the rest of the country. In the second place, the metropolitan administration is of special significance, because of late years London has been made a field for the improvements which have been tried with regard to the poor law system, in order that if they succeed here, under the eyes of the Central Board, they can be extended to the rest of the country.¹

Until after 1860 the poor law administration of the metropolis in no wise differed from that of the rest of the country. In London, as in the Provinces, it was carried out originally by the respective parishes independently of each other. The Act of 1834 had less effect here than elsewhere, because in London many of the parishes carried out the poor law system under local Acts which were not repealed by the Act of 1834. In consequence of that Act, fifteen metropolitan unions had been formed, in which the poor law administration was carried out in accordance with the principles generally applied. The same system had been introduced in twelve parishes, which on account of their size were allowed by the Central Board to remain separate. But besides these districts there were eleven other parishes which were separately administered under local Acts. Consequently, about a third of the metropolis had a poor law system different from the rest.²

The Committee appointed in 1861 to inquire into the operation of the poor laws occupied itself specially with the circumstances of the metropolis, and in its report, which appeared in 1864, strongly represented the necessity for reform. Its members were unanimous as to the disadvantages resulting from varying administration under local Acts in the same city, and they also came to the conclusion that there ought to be an adjustment of the burden of poor law relief between the poor districts, with their large number of paupers, and the rich districts with their large means in comparison to the amount of destitution.

These are the two main points dealt with in the Acts of 1864,

¹ This is, for instance, the case with regard to the treatment of casual paupers; and the metropolis has also led the way in endeavours to reform both the medical relief system and the plan of bringing up pauper children.

² See as to the old poor law system of the metropolis, a paper by Lumley in the journal of the London Statistical Society, vol. xxi., p. 169.

1865, 1867, 1869 and 1870, applying especially to the metropolis.¹ The equalizing of the poor-rate, which was called for in fairness, afforded an opportunity for costly improvements, only possible in a large area with ample means. As regards Poor Law Medical Relief especially, a number of improvements were made which have not even yet been extended to the rest of the country on account of the expense involved. Poor law administration in the metropolis, which had previously been more defective than elsewhere, is now in many respects superior to that of the rest of England.

The following points may especially be noticed in which London differs in this respect from the provinces.²

I. The metropolis is divided for poor law purposes into 30 districts, of which 17 are unions of several parishes, while the rest consist of single parishes with their own Boards of Guardians. The Boards of Guardians are specially constituted, since in addition to the elected and the *ex-officio* guardians certain others are nominated by the Central Board, which thus exercises additional influence on the poor law administration. Its power of nomination, however, is so far limited that the total number of its nominees, together with the *ex-officio* guardians, shall not exceed one-third of the elected guardians; and further, that such nominees shall either be resident justices, or ratepayers assessed at not less than £40 to the poor rate.³

The metropolis forms a special division, with three inspectors and two auditors.

Each metropolitan union or separate parish administers relief, and manages its poor law establishments like unions outside the metropolis. The solidarity of the respective districts is, however, shown by the fact that particular branches of the poor law, which are elsewhere administered by Boards of Guardians, are here carried out independently by a special body, the Metropolitan Asylum Board, dealing with the whole of London; and further, that in the case of many other branches of the poor law, the charges of the various districts are equalized by means of the Common Poor Fund.

II. Such equalization was first introduced in 1864 with regard to the houseless poor.⁴ It is a pure chance in the case of this class of persons whether they become a burden on one district or on another; and as their choice in making application for relief is absolutely unrestricted, it is only reasonable that the whole metropolis should bear the expense. It was thought unnecessary in the first instance

¹ Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act, (27 & 28 Vict. c. 116; and 28 Vict. c. 34;) Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867, (30 Vict. c. 6;) Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1869, (32 & 33 Vict. c. 63,) and Metropolitan Poor Amendment Act, 1870, (33 & 34 Vict. c. 18.)

² Especially valuable material for forming a judgment on the existing poor law system of the metropolis is contained in the report of Mr. Wodehouse, (23rd Annual Report of the P. L. B., Appendix, p. 32,) and in the detailed and instructive reports of Mr. Longley, (3rd Annual Report of the L. G. B., Appendix, p. 136, and 4th Annual Report, Appendix, p. 40.)

³ 30 Vict. c. 6, s. 79; 31 & 32 Vict. c. 122, s. 9.

⁴ 27 & 28 Vict. c. 116; 28 Vict. c. 34.

to form a special fund for these not very considerable expenses, and it was provided that re-payment should be made from the existing funds of the Metropolitan Board of Works of the cost incurred by respective districts for houseless poor.

But when in 1867, and again in 1870,¹ a number of other charges were made common to the whole metropolis, it became necessary to create a special fund.

In 1867 a Common Poor Fund, was formed, to which the various districts of the metropolis were made to contribute according to their rateable value. In 1869 the Valuation of Property (Metropolis) Act made provision for a uniform valuation.² The mode of contribution to the fund is practically regulated as follows. Each district, in the first place, defrays its poor law charges from its own means, but in so far as such charges are common, the auditor half-yearly certifies the sum which the particular district has to receive out of the Common Fund; while, on the other hand, the sum is brought into account which such district has to contribute to the common expenses of other districts, and consequently only the difference between these sums has to be paid or received. For the administration of the Common Poor Fund, which is thus very simply managed, a special receiver of the Common Poor Fund is appointed by the Central Board.

The following items are chargeable to the whole metropolis, and are payable out of the Common Poor Fund.³

1. Maintenance of lunatics in asylums, hospitals, and licensed houses.

2. Maintenance of fever and small-pox patients in special hospitals provided for them.

3. Maintenance of pauper children in district, separate, certificated and licensed schools, and of boarded-out orphans and deserted children.⁴

4. Maintenance of casual paupers in the wards provided for them.

5. Expenses of medical relief, including medicines and other appliances.

6. Salaries and rations of officers including those in district schools, asylums and dispensaries.

And, finally,

7. An allowance of fivepence per day for each pauper over sixteen years old, who is maintained in the workhouse, or in establishments other than those mentioned in 1, 2, and 4.⁵

¹ 30 Vict. c. 6, 33 & 34 Vict. c. 18; see also 32 & 33 Vict. c. 63, s. 21.

² 32 & 33 Vict. c. 67.

³ We omit the expenditure for the registration of births and deaths, for vaccination, &c., which are not poor law matters, though they happen to be charged on the poor rate.

⁴ Under 39 & 40 Vict. c. 79, s. 10, outdoor relief to cover school fees of pauper children is also chargeable to the Common Fund.

⁵ For details of the legal provisions on the subject, and especially as to the power of the Central Board to suspend or withhold repayment in case a union disobeys the regulations of the Central Board, see above p. 78. This enactment gives the Central Board greater power as to poor law administration in the metropolis than in the rest of the country.

The following figures will give a notion of the proportion of poor law expenditure common to the entire metropolis, and of the sums borne by the respective unions. In the year 1882,¹ the entire expenses of poor law administration in the metropolis amounted to £2,172,294, of which £884,536, or 40·7 per cent. was defrayed from the Common Poor Fund.

The main items of this last sum are as follows :—

Salaries of Officers	£241,019
Maintenance of Paupers in Workhouses, &c.	£220,902
„ Lunatics	£211,041
„ Pauper Children	£156,087

Thus rather more than two-fifths of the poor law expenditure is borne in common by the whole metropolis. This proportion has only slightly varied in different years, thus, in 1872 it was 38·7 per cent.; in 1875 it rose to 42·9; fell in 1877 to 39·1, and amounted in 1880 to 42·3. It may be interesting to give a few figures showing the way in which the poorer districts profit by the equalization. Of the thirty unions, &c., of the metropolis, eleven contribute to the Common Fund, while nineteen receive from it a contribution to their expenditure. The total amount of relief derived by the poorer from the richer unions amounted for the financial year 1882–83 to £197,599, or 13·4 per cent. of the total poor law expenditure of the poorer districts. In some of these districts, however, the contributions amounted to a much higher proportion of the general expenditure; thus in St. George's in the East it was 37 per cent., in Bethnal Green 33 per cent.; also in Holborn and St. Saviour's the percentage was a high one, while, on the other hand, in St. Marylebone it was under 1 per cent., and in St. Pancras and Hackney, between 1 and 2 per cent.

III. We proceed now to a description of the Metropolitan Asylums Board.² Under the Act of 1867 the Central Board was empowered to unite the poor law districts of the metropolis for the provision of asylums for the reception of the sick, insane, or infirm, or for other classes of paupers. Under this enactment the Central Board in 1867 formed the entire metropolis into an asylum district, under the Metropolitan Asylums Board, to which was committed the management of a constantly-increasing number of establishments. The Act provided that the cost of erection of these establishments, and that of the general administration, should be contributed by the several unions, &c., in proportion to their rateable value, but that the maintenance of the inmates should be charged to the several districts liable to relieve them; and the amount was to be adjusted half yearly in the way above described.

¹ See 13th Report of the L. G. B., p. xxix., and Appendix, pp. 177, 186, 194, 326. This abstract only includes expenditure in connection with the poor law, not the other charges upon the poor rate.

² With regard to the action of the Metropolitan Asylums Board, its President, Mr. (now Sir) E. M. Galsworthy, has lately published a very full report. An extract is given in the *Times*, Jan 16, 1885.

The establishments are administered by the Metropolitan Asylums Board, the members of which (called managers) are partly nominated by the Local Government Board, partly elected by the respective unions. According to the Act, the number of nominated managers must not exceed one-third of those elected; they must be either justices of the peace, or resident ratepayers assessed at not less than £40 to the poor rate. The total number of managers, the number to be elected by each union, and their qualifications, are prescribed by the Central Board. At present the Metropolitan Asylums Board consists of sixty members, fifteen of whom are nominated by the Local Government Board. These nominated members are invariably persons of position.¹

The following establishments are at present under the control of the Board:—

a. The training ship, *Exmouth*, devoted to the reception of pauper boys, of whom from 500 to 600 are on board.

b. Four lunatic asylums outside the metropolis, in which about 5550 persons can be received. Those at Leavesden and Caterham are devoted to the reception of harmless lunatics, the former for 1100 women and 900 men; the latter for 1150 women and 900 men. Both have extensive grounds, which are cultivated by the inmates. The inmates are also employed otherwise, as far as their condition permits, the men mainly in tailoring and carpentering; the women in domestic work. Two other asylums, at Darenth, are devoted to the reception of idiots, one of them being exclusively for imbecile children. The number of the latter amounts to about 600, part of whom are instructed in some occupation.

c. Five fever hospitals, for the reception of 951 fever patients; also an asylum in course of construction designed to receive 512 convalescents. In these hospitals a limited number of small-pox patients is also received; for the latter, however, there are special establishments, viz.,

d. Small-pox hospitals. Besides the large Plaistow hospital and some other establishments outside the metropolis, certain hospital ships are used for the reception of small-pox cases.² Special ambulance stations are established for the removal of patients to the hospitals.

In 1883 the expenses of the Metropolitan Asylums Board amounted altogether to £421,030, or 19·4 per cent. of the poor law expenditure of the metropolis. The sum has increased from year to year; in 1873 it was £118,675, or 7·3 per cent. of the whole; but

¹ Of late years the Central Board has nominated two ladies, the Countess of Ducie and the Honourable Maude A. Stanley, as managers. [There are now (1888) three ladies among the nominated managers, viz.: the Honourable Maude Stanley, Miss Baker, and Mrs. Jeune. Tr.]

² It is to be observed that the persons received into these hospitals do not by any means all belong to the pauper class. Admission to the fever and small-pox hospitals does not constitute a *status pauperis*. In cases of urgency, admission is granted without a special order, but notice must then be given to the guardians of the union in which the person last passed the night.

in 1878 it amounted to £253,407, remaining at about that figure for a few years, and again largely increasing after 1881. The cost of these institutions appears high. The daily expenditure for a small-pox patient is estimated at 6s., while that for a lunatic, who contributes by his labour to the cost of his maintenance, is reduced to 7½d. There is much complaint as to the extravagance of the Metropolitan Asylums Board, but the means for forming a judgment on the subject are not available to a foreigner. It may be noted, however, that there is a wide-spread opinion that the managers are not the sort of persons required, occupying as they do a position which is not likely to make them pay much regard to economy of administration.¹

IV. We may here shortly touch upon a few other characteristics of the Metropolitan Poor Law administration, which we have for the most part mentioned elsewhere.

Apart from the formation of the whole metropolis into a district for the purposes of the Metropolitan Asylums Board, there are also combinations of several unions for particular branches of the poor law. Thus, a number of unions have entered into an arrangement with the Poplar union to receive their able-bodied male paupers, and the Poplar workhouse is exclusively used for this particular class. By a special establishment of this kind, it is possible better to carry out the strict discipline suited to the able-bodied, and also to employ their labour to greater advantage.

Similarly some unions have combined with their neighbours for the erection of a sick asylum. As regards poor law medical relief, more has been done in London than in the rest of the country, and this has been made possible by the fact that in the metropolis, as the unions are near each other, a particular one, if too poor or too small to build an infirmary for itself, can combine for this object with others, while in the provinces such an arrangement would scarcely be practicable, owing to distance. In the metropolis there are now seventeen infirmaries, and five sick asylums, in which on an average 10,491 persons are received, while about 4000 persons are still treated in workhouses. Thus the removal of sick paupers from workhouses has here been to a large extent carried out.

The infirmaries are new establishments, which have been constructed so as to satisfy all sanitary requirements. The plan of erecting pavilions has been for the most part adopted, such pavilions being connected by a passage with the administrative block in which

¹ This point is specially urged by the Sanitary Authorities under the Metropolitan Management Acts who demur to the yearly increasing expenditure of the Metropolitan Asylums Board. See the statement of Mr. George Russell, Parliamentary Secretary to the L. G. B., in the House of Commons, in answer to a question on this subject on March 12, 1885 (*Times* of March 13, 1885). The relations between the Asylums Board and the Sanitary Authorities are not particularly good. In the Annual Report of the Metropolitan Asylums Board, already quoted, it is pointed out somewhat emphatically that the Authorities do not do their duty with regard to the inspection of dwellings, &c., and that in consequence of this neglect, and of the bad sanitary state of the dwellings, a large number of severe cases of fever and small-pox are caused, and much expense is involved.

are the rooms of the medical officers, the operating rooms, and the offices. This system has the advantage of minimizing the labour of administration, owing to the central position of the main block, and admits of classification and perfect separation of different diseases. The corridor connecting the pavilions with the main building serves for the ventilation of the wards, and for the exercise of the convalescents. It is, wholly or in part, roofed with glass; fresh air may be admitted through its windows, and the door leading from it to the pavilion may be opened or closed according to weather. The ward-space allotted to each patient is 850 cubic feet.

In every establishment there are two medical officers who give their whole time. The total number of nurses amounts to 610, or, on an average, one skilled nurse to every seventeen patients. A comparison of this organization with the state of things before the passing of the Act of 1869, when all the sick were treated in the workhouses, is enough to show the remarkable progress which has been made in a short time with regard to this matter.¹

A further advance in the matter of medical relief has been made by the provision of dispensaries, which now exist in all the districts. In these not only are the medicines dispensed for persons treated at home, but there is also a consulting room where the district medical officer attends at fixed hours, and where those outdoor patients whose disease does not require that they should be visited at home apply for advice and medicine.

The metropolis is also ahead of all other districts as regards the treatment of casual paupers, for whose accommodation almost every district has a special building, sometimes with the separate cell system.

The introduction of all these improvements naturally involved a large expenditure. The money was mainly raised by way of loan, and the cost was thus spread over a number of years, but the poor rate steadily increased. In 1873 the expenditure was £1,630,886, while in 1883 it was £2,172,294, having risen more than half a million sterling in the course of ten years.²

It is very remarkable that this augmentation of expenditure has been entirely caused by the erection of new poor law establishments and the cost of maintenance of a large number of inmates.³ The number of persons relieved at home and the cost of their relief have

¹ In the 13th Annual Report of the L. G. B. (p. xxxi.) there is an interesting summary of the improvements effected in Metropolitan Poor Law Medical Relief in the previous fourteen years. In order fully to appreciate them, the following facts should be remembered. In 1866 the average ward space was only between 500 and 600 cubic feet per patient; the total number of trained nurses was 111, or 1 nurse to 75 patients; and the medical officers were almost invariably engaged in private practice.

² Against the increase in expenditure, however, must be set the still greater increase in the sources of revenue. In spite of the augmented expenditure, the poor rate has fallen from 1s. 7½d. on the rateable value in 1873 to 1s. 6¼d. in 1883.

³ Whereas in 1870 there was only accommodation in the then existing poor law establishments for 35,093 persons, there was accommodation for 56,561 in 1882. The following figures for 1881 are taken from the 11th Annual Report of the Local Government Board:—

diminished from year to year. In 1873 the expenditure for outdoor relief amounted to 42 per cent. of the entire cost of relief, it has now fallen to 25·3 per cent.

There is no doubt that the metropolis is in advance of all other districts in the application of proper principles to the grant of out-relief. This is mainly due to the legal provision by which the expenses of poor law establishments are, for the most part, thrown upon the entire metropolis, while those for outdoor relief are borne by the individual unions. This naturally makes each union chary of granting outdoor relief. In some it has nearly disappeared. For example, in the Whitechapel Union in 1884 the average number of outdoor paupers was 20, as against 1254 indoor paupers.

In the metropolis the right principles of poor law relief are generally recognized, and are actually carried out. It is there that we find the English poor law system in its most complete form.¹

There were :—

Establishments.	Number of persons for whom accommodation was provided.	Average number of inmates.
38 Workhouses	26,986	24,498
21 Separate Infirmaries and Sick Asylums	10,529	9,830
18 Schools	10,500	10,271
24 Casual Wards.	1,521	855
1 Training Ship.	600	545
4 Metropolitan District Asylums } for Imbeciles and Lunatics }	4,817	4,731
7 Metropolitan District } Infectious Hospitals }	1,608	725
113 Establishments	56,561	51,455

The cost of maintenance in the different establishments for each inmate was :

	£	s.	d.
In the Workhouses	17	8	7
„ Schools	22	14	4
„ Asylums	26	16	2
„ Infirmaries.	32	15	9
„ Hospitals	121	12	5

¹ As a proof that this opinion is shared in England we may cite a speech of the late president of the Local Government Board, Mr. Slater Booth, at the Central Congress of Poor Law Conferences in 1883. He says that “in the metropolis, the poor law was perhaps best carried out.” “The Government had naturally most influence not only on account of its central position, but because of the wise provisions of the Metropolitan Poor Act, which threw a large proportion of the common charges on the rate of the whole metropolis.” Compare also the speech of Mr. C. J. Ribton Turner at the Social Science Congress in Liverpool in 1876 (Report, p. 740): “The Metropolitan Poor Act, 1867, seemed to be the most beneficial and the widest in its scope, and to leave little to be desired, except that it should be put into full force, and that similar powers should be conferred throughout the country.”

CONCLUDING OBSERVATIONS.

Il n'y a pas de nation, à quelque rang qu'elle soit placée, qui ne puisse être une leçon ou offrir des exemples. Qui doute que les peuples aient beaucoup à gagner à l'échange de leurs lumières et de leur expérience aussi bien qu'au commerce de leurs produits? Mais cela doit se faire avec une entière liberté de part et d'autre sans asservir ni dénaturer ce qu'il y a de spontané dans l'existence nationale.—Faucher, Etudes sur l'Angleterre. Paris, 1856, vol. i. p. xviii.

ON these words of Faucher are based the brief observations with which I shall bring my work to a conclusion.

In describing the English Poor Law System, it has been my endeavour to regard it from the point of view of an outside observer, and to form a judgment *sine irâ et studio*. I have intentionally refrained from touching on German matters; I have abstained from drawing any conclusion as to the expediency or possibility of transplanting the English system, or particular parts of it, to Germany. Conclusions of this kind would have entirely altered the character of the book. I should have had to abandon the field of observation to which I have devoted myself in order to enter into contested questions, or to criticize German methods. But having ended my account of the English poor law system, I may be permitted in conclusion to point out explicitly that I have written as a German for Germans, and not only for German savants, but also for those who occupy themselves in a practical way with questions of pauperism, and with whom, apart from any interest in foreign institutions as such, the first question is, What practical lesson can we learn for Germany?

This question cannot be exactly answered in a few words. It demands a detailed examination of the German relief system, with its advantages and disadvantages, and it cannot be dealt with in the few pages which I shall devote to these observations, but would require a fresh treatise to itself. I profess to give nothing more than the brief remarks of a student of the English poor law system, who is convinced of the pressing necessity for a reform of that of Germany. Without going into detail, I shall state only a few main points as to which, in my opinion, England might serve as a model for the amendment of our relief system.

1. In England the poor law applies uniformly to the whole country, and thus by the character of the organization, especially by the establishment of a Central Board, care is taken not only that the destitute person shall everywhere receive the required assistance, but also that such assistance shall everywhere be of the same character, governed

by the application of uniform principles. The scope of relief is so regulated that assistance is limited to bare necessities, and that it is mainly granted in a form which subjects the pauper to sensible restrictions.

Let us examine these points more in detail. The advantage of the uniform character of the English relief system is that the individual may always rely upon being protected from the worst consequences of destitution, namely, from starvation; but on the other hand he knows perfectly well that relief, whatever the circumstances in which it is granted, will only be of the prescribed kind and amount. The evil influence which reliance on public relief may exercise on individual industry and thrift is much lessened if it is made clear to every man that if he does not provide for hard times, help will only be accorded to him in the prescribed way, and in a fashion which will not be agreeable to him. Every one may thus foresee the consequences of failing to lay by for the future, and nobody can count on obtaining a large measure of help by a pitiful account of his sad condition or by any other device.

The uniformity of the poor law system has another advantage, the value of which will be especially appreciated in Germany. It shows the possibility of dealing with poor law relief apart from legislation as to domicile, and of providing, by amendment of the Settlement Law, for help being afforded at the place where the destitute person happens to be resident.

It would be superfluous to dwell on the necessity of an alteration of our law connecting relief with settlement, and on the disadvantages which that law involves, not only for the pauper himself, but for the rest of the population, by reason of the enormous amount of legal proceedings and other inconveniences involved. The whole law of domicile is based on the notion of regarding relief as an equivalent for the economic advantages which the district concerned had received from the pauper before his destitution. But this notion is erroneous, not only because, as a matter of fact, the pauper has not profited the community, but the employer who has paid him too little, but also because in the matter of relief, the measure of debit and credit cannot be thus reckoned. Poor law relief is regulated by the State, in the interests of the whole population. It is mainly the concern of the State, which has delegated it to local authorities on the ground of convenience. But convenience dictates the connexion of the duty of relief with the place of residence; any other arrangement leads to fruitless expense and useless complications, both by the removal of a pauper from the particular place where he is residing, and by litigation inevitably arising from the association of the duty of relief with the legal question of his domicile.

In England the final step of making relief depend on the place of residence has not yet been formally taken, since poor law relief is still connected with the laws of settlement and removal. But as a matter of fact, even at the present time, relief at the place of residence is the rule, and removal to the place of settlement the rare exception. And

as we have already explained in our account of the development of the laws of settlement and removal (p. 112), the legal change which will make relief exclusively dependent on residence will not long be deferred, and indeed would have been already carried out if the difficulty with regard to Ireland had not interfered.

As regards Germany, the system of giving relief at the place of residence, which must be regarded as the logical consequence of the law allowing the free migration of labour, can only be carried into practice if uniformity in poor law administration of different districts is established and maintained. As long as this condition is not fulfilled, the danger with regard to the requirement of relief at the place of residence is that the pauper either goes off voluntarily to the place where he is likely to get the most liberal relief, or is obliged to do so in consequence of the inadequate fashion in which he is relieved in the district in which he lives. As long as there is no uniformity in the poor law system, it is to be apprehended that to make relief depend on residence would result in the transfer of the burden of relief in an arbitrary fashion, and that the best administered districts would in this way suffer unfairly.

Undoubtedly uniformity of system is the first condition of making relief depend on residence. A second must be added, namely, that the respective unions charged with the duty of relief shall be large enough to bear the burden, so that casual differences in the amount of pauperism will be equalized, and further that the available funds shall be sufficient to make it possible to discharge the duty of relief even when the pressure of hard times is greatest. The proper constitution of the poor law district is a question of the greatest importance, but also of the greatest difficulty. We have seen how slowly development in this matter has progressed in England, and how many difficulties were involved in forming districts which on the one hand are large enough to supply adequate relief, and on the other hand are not too large for the guardians to have personal knowledge of the circumstances of the applicants, and sufficient interest in economical administration. The general tendency in England is towards the establishment of larger and more convenient districts.

We often hear it said that the consequence of relief at the place of residence must be a transfer of the cost to the funds of the State, and that the State must therefore eventually undertake the administration of relief. But though the tendency in England is towards giving relief at the place of residence, there is an equally decided tendency against throwing the cost on the State. In England, more than anywhere else, people are convinced of the danger which would result from the transfer of the poor law administration to the State; and every proposal to charge particular expenses connected with the poor law upon the consolidated fund has been received with mistrust, lest the interest of the local bodies in keeping down expenses should be weakened. In course of time, however, people have come to the opinion that there is a middle course between poor law relief by the

State, which is still objected to, and the imposition of the entire cost of relief on the particular district, which may perhaps not be able to bear it without difficulty.

This plan, which avoids one evil without falling into the other, is twofold. In the first place, in particular branches of the poor law there is a contribution on the part of the State towards the charges to be borne by the district. This has been carried out as regards the education of pauper children by the payment of schoolmasters : as regards the sick, by payment of medical officers, and as regards the insane, by defraying the expenses for pauper lunatics. We have shown in detail, at page 146, that in the case of the expenses partly charged on the State funds, care has been specially taken to make the administration as efficient as possible, and that there is no danger that local bodies will be less economical in administration because they receive a contribution from the State.

Secondly, the cost of pauper institutions or particular branches of relief has been divided between the respective unions and a larger district. This has been done in the case of pauper lunatics, as the counties bear the cost of establishing the asylums and the general costs of administration ; while those for the maintenance of the inmates fall on the particular unions. It has also been done in the metropolis in the case of the maintenance of poor law institutions, and in a greater degree, because the larger combination, namely, the entire metropolis, bears not only the costs of the buildings, but also those of maintaining the inmates. These expenses, which first of all have to be provided from the districts responsible for the relief, are repaid up to a specified limit. The administration of the institutions thus remains under the control of the smaller district, a proof that the coincidence of the district of relief administration with that of rating is not so absolutely essential as is generally supposed. Such apportionment of expense between the respective districts and the greater combination appears very advantageous. It gives the guardians an interest in seeing that, on the one hand, applications for admission are not too freely granted, and that, on the other hand, the management is economical, in order that the prescribed scale of contribution may be exceeded as little as possible. This principle has hitherto only been carried out in the metropolis, where it has answered exceedingly well, and has done a great deal in reducing the inequalities of the poor rates, but it probably will, before long, be extended to the rest of the country.

The transfer to larger combined districts of the costs, and also, as a general rule, of the administration, of poor law institutions appears thoroughly justified, not only because there is in this way a more equitable adjustment of the rating of the respective districts, but also because it affords means for the erection of large and suitable establishments with better management than can be secured in the case of small ones. Their administration allows little room for the development of individual activity, the chief object to be secured is systematic direction and skilled technical management ; and the

interest of all the contributories in securing this is sufficiently provided for by charging part of the expenditure upon the respective districts.

2. With regard to the machinery of poor law administration we find in England two points which are worthy of notice and imitation, namely, the establishment of the Central Board, and the appointment of paid officials by the side of those whose labours are honorary.

The constitution and functions of the Central Board have been described above (p. 164) in detail, because it seems to me that the reform of the German poor law system must begin at this point. At present there is no centralization of the relief system in Germany. The German Department for Settlement has merely the function of pronouncing judgment in disputes between different poor law districts as to the duty of relief. The Department ought to be extended so as to fulfil the duties of the English Local Government Board. In 1834 the poor law reform began with the establishment of a Central Board, and the great improvements in poor law administration, as we have repeatedly pointed out, are scarcely less due to the excellent action of the Central Board than to statutory enactments. It deserves special notice that a country which in general allows so much freedom to local authorities has in this particular matter considered it necessary to subject the guardians to the strict control of a Central Board. The relief of the destitute takes place in the interests of the public, and if the State, from motives of expediency, delegates this duty to local bodies, the State must supervise its execution, and see that it is carried out in the interest of the country at large, and not merely to the advantage of the particular district. Uniformity of the relief system is the necessary preliminary to a large number of reforms, and the constitution of a Central Department with extensive powers is the preliminary to such uniformity. The establishment of a Central Poor Law Department in Germany must be the first step towards reform.

To what extent volunteer agents should be supplemented by paid officials depends upon whether a sufficient supply of volunteers capable of efficient administration is obtainable. Even where this is the case, there is substantial advantage in placing a permanent and professional element side by side with a changing body of honorary workers. In England the paid officials, who are appointed by the local bodies, but are approved and are liable to dismissal by the Central Board, serve to connect the central and local authorities in a fashion which is advantageous to the interests of both.

3. If we examine the particular kinds of relief in England, we find much which may serve as a model for Germany.

With regard to the sick poor we may mention the erection of the new infirmaries and the establishment of the dispensary system in the metropolis, as well as the system of training nurses. Of no less interest is the experience which has been obtained as regards the education of pauper children.

The question whether it is desirable to introduce the English workhouse can here be only touched upon. In the course of this treatise I have already shown the dark and the bright sides of the workhouse, and it is my object rather to afford material for deciding the question than to pronounce a judgment upon it. It is necessary for the solution of the problem to ascertain what is the extent of destitution, and in what degree the population fulfils or neglects the duty of making provision for the future. English opinion, however, has become more and more adverse to the use of the workhouse as a place for the reception of all classes of paupers—the able-bodied, as well as the children and the sick. Whether the number of people who claim public relief because they have neglected to make provision for age and infirmity is sufficiently large to make it desirable to erect costly workhouses for them, or whether it is not wiser to subject the grant of relief to other specific restrictions, and in this way to make people provident, may be left undecided. Personally, I am of opinion that the simplest way of attaining this object is to compel the destitute person to go into the workhouse and to be subject to the restrictions which it involves.

As regards the class of the able-bodied, we have first of all to determine the question whether public relief should be afforded to them. I think that this question must be answered in the affirmative. The relief of such able-bodied persons as become destitute appears to me to be required in the interests of public safety, in order to prevent their attempting to procure their living unlawfully, and endangering public order as well as the persons and property of the citizens. And it appears to me to be also required, in the interests of the community, for the sake of utilizing labour. If the public relief of the able-bodied is introduced, their labour must be fully employed in return for the relief afforded. If an evil effect on the social life of the nation is to be avoided, this relief must be subject to the condition of shutting up the paupers within the four walls of an institution, and thus limiting their personal freedom. Whether such institution should be a workhouse or a pauper colony is a further question which can only be answered in view of local circumstances; and it is doubtful whether a uniform rule could be laid down for the great cities and for the rural districts.

But the relief of the able-bodied cannot be carried on without regulations which are, to a certain extent, penal. There must be a connection between pauper relief and the penalties against beggars and vagrants. If the able-bodied person who has become destitute applies for public relief in the prescribed form, his freedom should be restricted until he has worked off the cost of relief by his labour. This limitation of freedom, however, is not a penalty, but has rather the equitable character of supplying an equivalent for the help claimed. If, however, the applicant does not seize the opportunity of procuring the necessary relief, but endeavours to maintain himself by begging, vagrancy, &c., the State interposes with penalties. In this case the loss of freedom (by imprisonment with hard labour) is

distinguished from the former by being of a really penal character. This is, in my opinion, the right connection between the poor law system and the penalties against begging, and it affords the best solution of the problem of a "right to work." In this sense England has, as a matter of fact, given in casual wards a right to work. If the treatment of the casual paupers cannot be regarded as perfect, we may well learn much from English experience even in this matter.

4. One of the chief characteristics of the English poor law system is that through the strict and uniform definition of the sphere of public relief the province of private charity is distinctly marked.

In Germany a boundary between the two kinds of relief has hitherto been lacking. Its absence not only hinders the establishment of a reasonable poor law system, but prevents the suitable development of private charity. Instead of a uniform co-operation between the two, there is in Germany much uncertainty as to the functions and objects of private charity in contradistinction to the grant of public relief. In one place public relief occupies the place of non-existent or unorganized private charity, and takes over functions for which it has no right to levy compulsory contributions; for although there is in Germany no special poor rate, yet ordinarily the costs of public relief are defrayed compulsorily. In another place private charity interferes with the poor law system in a fashion wanting in common sense, and does harm by obliterating the distinction between public relief in the interests of the community, and private charity in the interests of the individual.

The existence of a well-defined boundary between public relief and private charity is not only essential for the proper administration of the poor law, but is also calculated to effect the much-desired organization of private charity. In some districts in England both objects are already attained. The London Charity Organization Society, whose operations are described in detail in Appendix I., is one of those institutions which may be recommended for imitation in Germany. No doubt the Society's success is partly due to the existence of a uniform system of public relief, while with us uniformity is still lacking. On the other side, we are fortunate in already having in Germany an institution by which the organization of private charity may be carried out, namely, The Ladies' National Association (*"Vaterländische Frauenverein"*), under the patronage of Her Majesty the Empress and Queen.

APPENDIX I.

PRIVATE RELIEF AND THE CHARITY ORGANIZATION SOCIETY, AS SUPPLEMENTARY TO THE POOR LAW SYSTEM.

IN order to form a correct judgment of a Relief System, it is necessary to see how far the public provision for the poor is supplemented by private charity. We must not only consider the amount expended by private benevolence, but also the line of demarcation between public relief and private charity; it is necessary to see whether the latter aims at special objects, or provides for special classes of the destitute, so that poor law relief may be limited to a more restricted circle.

A boundary line of this kind between the two classes of relief can either be drawn on the principle that the main care of the destitute is left to private charity, and that it is only with regard to cases beyond its province that the State has to deal, or on the principle that the State makes itself generally responsible for the care of the poor, and then sharply defines the extent and scope of public relief, leaving to private charity all cases that do not come within this province. The first is the plan adopted in France, the second that adopted in England.

Since the year 1601, the relief of the poor has in England been a public duty, to be carried out by local bodies from funds compulsorily raised. At the same time the class of persons entitled to public relief has been more and more strictly limited to such as are completely destitute. Those who are not destitute, though they may need help in order to maintain their independence, are outside the range of the poor law. Moreover, since the Act of 1834 the relief granted has been expressly limited to the assistance demanded by the actual need, without regard to the past or future necessities of the pauper. Poor law relief is to be given alike to the worthy and the unworthy; and if we except the case of pauper children, whose treatment is governed by other considerations, its object is only to satisfy the actual need, and not to cure the evil by which that need has been produced.

By this limitation of poor law relief more scope is left for the development of private charity, which deals with the great question of preventive measures against pauperism, and relieves persons who have fallen into distress through no fault of their own, or who require more assistance than can be given under the rigid rules of the poor law. Private charity has thus the privilege of rescuing the poor from the fetters of pauperism, and restoring them to independence.

In the above description of the English poor law it has been shown that the method by which the duty of public relief is regulated affords perfect security that relief shall be given to the destitute, and thus there is a general conviction that real want is provided for. We have also pointed out that this general conviction affords the best foundation for a beneficial exercise of

private charity, which may have special regard to the circumstances and character of the destitute person, in the knowledge that the bare necessities of life would in any case be supplied by the poor law. In this way the boundary line between poor law relief and private charity is sharply defined.¹ Poor law relief is given on the ground of destitution, in the interests of the public; but private charity, on the other hand, out of consideration for the particular individual. Poor law relief is based on the fact that the individual is one of the community; but private charity on the personal relation in which the donor stands to the recipient, or in which the donor believes that he ought to place himself, on the ground of the recipient's qualities or circumstances.

If England possesses an advantage over most other countries in the fact that the province of private charity is definitely restricted, it has also taken a further step by the establishment of a reasonable system of benevolence. It has an organization of private charity.

While it is of the greatest importance that private charity and Poor Law relief should work together, it is equally essential that private charity should be so organized that, on the one hand, those in need may know where to find help, and that, on the other hand, voluntary charity should be directed into those channels in which there are necessity and scope for its development. Some centralization of private charity is necessary in order to avoid its being lavished on particular places, or in particular directions, in a fashion which is not conducive to the public good, while elsewhere there are voids which remain unfilled. It must be made possible to obtain information as to the object and the working of existing benevolent institutions, in order to be able to form a judgment of the usefulness or necessity of establishing others. This is not only important as regards benevolent societies and institutions, but also as regards the manner in which the individual can best carry out his desire of doing substantial good. So long as there is no such centralization, it is difficult for the individual to be certain whether he is helping a real case of need, or whether he would not do better merely to refer the applicant to already existing institutions, which would satisfactorily deal with the case, and would possibly afford more lasting and substantial help than he himself could supply.

This kind of centralization and organization of private charity is a necessity for England, with its numerous large and rich institutions. An exact statement of their number, and of the yearly total of their receipts, cannot be obtained, but the following facts may give some notion on the subject. In the year 1818, at the instance of Lord Brougham, a special committee of enquiry was established to report upon the existing institutions, and particularly on the manner in which their income was expended. The main question was whether the legislature ought to give increased powers of interference with the administrations of those institutions which spent their income improperly, or for objects no longer useful. Public opinion in England has since constantly occupied itself with this question; and in the years 1853, 1855, 1860, 1862, 1869, 1870, and 1872 this has led to the interposition of the legislature.²

¹ See the minute of the Poor Law Board of Nov. 20, 1869, already quoted, 22nd Report of the Poor Law Board, Appendix, p. 9.

² The original Act on the subject is the so-called 'Statute of Charitable Uses' of the year 1603 (43 Eliz. c. 4). The charities to which real estate can be permanently appropriated consist of all institutions for objects of religion, for the maintenance of the poor and sick, for the support of the infirm, and for learning and education. Judicial decisions gave this Act a very wide extension, and favoured the institutions in every way. In 1736, by the so-called Statute of Mortmain (9 George II. c. 36), there was some restriction of charitable endow-

This committee, which pursued its labours from 1818 to 1837, produced a most comprehensive report, of forty-four volumes, on not less than 29,000 endowments. The actual number of existing endowments is, however, estimated at a still higher figure.

As to the amount of the income of the Metropolitan charities, the estimates vary from three to seven million pounds.¹ It must, however, be remembered that these endowments are for multifarious objects, mainly religious and educational, and are only in part devoted to the relief of the poor.

The distribution of endowments throughout the country is very unequal. In London they are very large. From Howe's 'Classified Dictionary of the Metropolitan Charities' we take the following figures for 1883-4, which, however, are expressly stated to be incomplete:²—

46 Charities for blind, deaf, dumb, idiots and incur-	£
ables, with an annual income of	160,451
17 General hospitals)	
73 Special hospitals {	601,433
158 Almshouses	435,710
Dispensaries and Convalescent homes	95,236
General Charities	323,021

These are very respectable figures, which must be kept in view in the consideration of the relief question, and to them must be added the enormous sums, of incalculable amount, which are dispensed in relief privately by individuals. It is unquestionable that irrespective of and in addition to the State system of relief, which has been in force for centuries, an immense amount of private charity is devoted to the help of the poor.

The work of organizing charitable relief is, however, of modern institution and dates from the year 1869, when the London Charity Organization Society

ments, but this had practically not much effect. The abuses which were brought to light in the cases of many institutions which devoted part of their extensive means to perfectly senseless objects led to the so-called Charitable Trust Acts, among which that of 1853 (16 & 17 Vict. c. 137), is of special importance. This Act established a special Board, the Charity Commission for England and Wales, which has the power at any time to make enquiries as to the object, the administration and the result of endowed institutions, and thereupon to frame schemes for the better administration of the charity to be submitted for Parliamentary approval. It has still greater powers with regard to endowments of less than £50 annually, and to those which are devoted to education. Lately, the fashion in which the old City Guilds expend their money, originally devoted to public objects, has attracted public attention in an increasing measure, and has led to the appointment of a special City Companies' Commission. This Commission has published five volumes of interesting and detailed reports. Sir Arthur Hobhouse, who has taken a prominent part in this movement, has given a sketch of the measures adopted for the reform of existing institutions in his work, 'The Dead Hand, Addresses on Endowments.' London, 1880.

¹ See speech of William Forsyth, at the Social Science Congress at Aberdeen, 1877. The considerable differences in the estimated income are partly attributable to the fact that many institutions, especially hospitals, annually raise considerable sums by subscription, in addition to their endowments, and that these two sources of income are often not distinguished in the accounts. Accordingly, some writers specify as income only the endowment, while others include the subscriptions. The sums given can therefore only be regarded as approximate.

² Another useful book is Herbert Fry's 'Guide to the London Charities,' in which are given in alphabetical order, the institutions, the date of their foundation, their object, the chief officials, the address of the office, the mode of application for assistance, and finally the annual income, as far as known, and the number of cases relieved in the previous year.

began its useful labours. In our account of the historical development of the English poor law system we have described (see p. 89) the condition of affairs which existed before the formation of this Society, and which afforded it a field for its successful extension. By practical experience, as well as by theoretical doctrines, and last but not least by Mr. Goschen's advocacy of reasonable views as to poor law relief, public opinion had become convinced of the necessity for organizing private charity. We have already referred to the service which the late Prince Leopold, Duke of Albany, rendered to this movement as President of the Charity Organization Society, and we shall now give some details as to the work of this Society, and of somewhat similar societies, which at the present time is being performed in eighteen of the larger towns in England, and two in Scotland.

The London Charity Organization Society consists of a directing Council, and of District Committees which carry out locally the objects of the Society in accordance with the principles which the Council lays down. Each of these committees has one or more representatives in the Council, which also includes a number of distinguished persons, such as the Bishop of London, Members of Parliament, representatives of charitable institutions, and others. The district committees are in theory composed of representatives of the local charitable institutions, and of private people who are interested in charitable work and are ready to devote their time to it. The parochial clergy, in particular, are in many cases members of the committees. The Council, which has a chairman, appointed annually, and a secretary, not only exercises a general control, but also distributes certain funds among the district committees. But the Central Council and the District Committee have separate accounts and separate subscription lists.

The operations of the London Charity Organization Society may be classified under the three following heads:—¹

1. The Society wishes to bring into co-operation the existing charitable institutions. With this object it has compiled, under the title of 'The Charities' Register and Digest,' a detailed and classified register of the existing charities. By this means it is easy to discover the institutions suitable for particular cases requiring help. Particulars are given with regard to each institution as to the mode of application, as to the administration, the income, and the number of persons relieved in the year. In this way may be ascertained what assistance is available for any case. The district committees endeavour as far as possible to obtain the relief required from existing institutions. The Society also furnishes enquirers with information as to charitable societies.

2. The Society collects information as to new charitable schemes, subjects them to a searching examination, and recommends such as it finds useful.² It is thus a centre for criticism of all charitable effort. This function is especially fulfilled by the Society's monthly organ, 'The Charity Organization Review.'

In illustration of this kind of action of the Society we may refer to the

¹ Particulars of the Society are given in a publication called 'Charity Organization Papers' (London, Longman & Co., 1883), which contains much instructive information. This pamphlet may be also procured at the office of the Society, 15, Buckingham Street, Adelphi. See also the addresses of E. L. O'Malley, at the Social Science Congress at Norwich, 1873, 'Transactions,' pp. 584-605; and by C. B. P. Bosanquet, at the Social Science Congress at Glasgow, 1874, 'Transactions,' pp. 878-898.

² The Charity Organization Society fulfils in this way a task which William Forsyth had indicated in the speech already quoted. "Organizing the humane and compassionate sentiments of the public and placing them under proper guidance."

movement, in the winter of 1884-5, in favour of the provision of dinners for poor school-children. The consideration that a large number of poor children are insufficiently fed at home, and therefore are not in a condition to derive full advantage from the school to which the Education Act compels them to go, induced some benevolent persons to provide "penny dinners" in the poorer districts. At first public opinion was in favour of this movement. In a large number of districts committees were formed to make arrangements for the purpose. The line was not drawn at penny dinners, but the price was reduced to a halfpenny, and in some places the dinner was provided without any payment at all. The Charity Organization Society, which carefully described the movement in the 'Review,' and entered into its details, did not approve of the movement, and warned the public of the dangers involved. In several meetings convened for the discussion of the question, as well as in articles published in the daily press, it was sought to bring before the public the consequences of the scheme when once developed.¹ From the penny dinners sprang (as was said) halfpenny dinners, and from them free dinners, and if parents were thus relieved from feeding their children, the next thing would be to provide clothes for children whose parents sent them to school in rags, and so on. The demands on private charity would steadily increase, and the parents' sense of responsibility for the care of their children would be gradually weakened. The attempt to provide school-children with a wholesome meal near the school certainly deserved approval, but if parental responsibility was not to be lessened, and if improvident marriages were not to be encouraged, it would be necessary rigidly to adhere to the principle that the meals should not be provided under cost price, but should be self-supporting.

This is merely given as an illustration of the attention which the Charity Organization Society pays to charitable projects, with the view of hindering such as are foolish or likely to be mischievous to the community. It would be easy to multiply instances of the same kind.²

But, important as are these departments of the Society's work, they are insignificant in comparison with its chief function, now to be noticed.

3. The Society has to organize private charity, to supply to the benevolent the means of ascertaining the circumstances and character of those in need, and to afford the necessary assistance to any case deserving of private charity.

With regard to the question, What cases are to be relieved by private charity, and what are to be left to the poor law, the Society lays down fixed principles, of which the most important are the following:—

In the Charity Organization Papers we are told that in England there is a system of public relief which applies to all destitute persons. Private charity may therefore, without fear of evil consequences, be restricted to curable cases. It should only be exercised where temporary help may be of per-

¹ See *Pall Mall Gazette* of 27th Dec., 1884, 'Free Dinners and after,' by C. S. Loch, Secretary to the Charity Organization Society, and leading article in the *Times* of 20th Jan., 1885; also the report in the *Times* of 27th Jan., 1885, of a meeting convoked by the Charity Organization Society; also the 'Charity Organization Reporter,' 1884, pp. 357-8, on 'Self-supporting Dinners.' In this last article it is said that "it cannot be well to bolster up a self-supporting system by charity. Payment imposes an obligation salutary to the parents, and it ensures extension not on the altogether hopeless lines of almsgiving, but on the principle of supplying by new methods a new demand."

² The Charity Organization Society has published a thoroughly practical index, with a short summary of its conclusions as to the matters of permanent interest which have been brought before it. 'Charity Organization Paper,' No. 12, pp. 77-201.

manent utility; where there is a definite prospect of making the recipient independent for the future. Everybody can have recourse to poor law relief in order to save himself and his family from the worst consequences of destitution. With regard to individual cases, it has to be considered whether they should be left to the poor law, or whether they may be singled out as suitable objects for private charity, which is of course more pleasant to the recipient. In these eligible cases the relief is to be "adequate in kind and amount, having self-dependence and recovery from distress as its end." As a general rule, charitable relief is only to be afforded where the applicant possesses such good qualities as to offer some security that help in temporary distress may have a lasting effect. Cases in which destitution is chronic, or is due to gross misconduct, are to be left to the poor law. The poor law has merely to relieve distress,¹ while the function of private charity is to prevent as well as to remove it.²

It is thus shown that the province of private charity is clearly distinct from that of the poor law. In organizing private charity it is therefore of the greatest importance to secure the co-operation of the Guardians of the Poor.

The organization takes place in the following fashion. The District Committees of the Society are arranged by the Central Council so as to act as far as possible for areas corresponding with the poor law unions and parishes of the metropolis. There are at present 39 District Committees. It is desired, whenever possible, to obtain the election of members of the District Committees as Guardians, in order to establish relations with the administration of poor law relief. This has been effected in certain districts, and in these it becomes possible to arrange that such cases brought before the guardians as are fit objects of private charity should be referred to the District Committee, and that such cases as on investigation by the District Committee are recognized as suitable for parochial relief, should be referred to the Guardians.

This co-operation of the District Committees with the Boards of Guardians, wherever established, results in a reasonable division of labour without waste of strength, and answers admirably. For example, in the last half-year, the Board of Guardians of the Whitechapel Union has referred more than 100 persons, after relieving them temporarily, to the District Committee, from whom nearly all have received suitable help, of a kind which could not, according to the rigid rules of the Whitechapel Union, have been afforded under the poor law.

The co-operation of the Charity Organization Society with the guardians is, to a large extent, effected through the relieving officers. The relieving officer is asked to inform the District Committee of all cases which appear suitable for private charity; on the other hand, the relieving officer is made acquainted with each case applying to the District Committee. In this way it is possible to prevent relief from being given simultaneously to one and the same person, both from the poor-law and from private charity, without the knowledge of the administrators of each class of relief. Persons assisted by the guardians do not, unless their cases are exceptional, receive help from private charity.

With the District Committees are associated, as far as possible, District and other Visitors, who are mostly women. They are asked from time to time to obtain the necessary information on the spot as to applications to the Charity Organization Society, and to assist in other ways. Searching

¹ "The poor law is a stern alleviative measure. The guardians are not a charitable association, and it is not their duty, nor is it in their power, either to avert impending distress or to alleviate it if it falls short of what can fairly be called destitution."

² "Charity has to prevent, to remedy, and not merely to alleviate distress."

enquiries, by which full details are obtained as to the cause of poverty, are absolutely necessary, in order to distinguish charitable from poor law cases, and to settle the proper means of relief to the former. Such enquiries are for the most part made by the paid officers of the Society.

For this reason, among others, the Charity Organization Society has laid the greatest stress on the importance of educating and training district visitors, and has in this matter received the special support of Miss Octavia Hill,¹ a lady who has displayed extraordinary capacity for organization and admirable devotion to the work which she has undertaken in various branches of philanthropy. In the poorer districts, where efficient district visitors are seldom numerous, it has been necessary to attract to the Committee visitors living in other districts, with the result of some inconvenience in the matter of distance.

The agent or visitor of the Committee has to fill up a form as to the case under enquiry. The following particulars have to be ascertained: Age? Family? If children, at what school? Occupation? Where now or last employed? At what wages? Other sources of income? If out of employment, reason for leaving last place? Since when unemployed, and how long unemployed in the last year? How many rooms does he occupy? At what rent? Arrears of rent? Pawntickets? Other debts? Any relief already obtained from private individuals or charitable institutions, or from the Guardians? Can assistance be obtained from these or other sources (relations, trade unions, benefit societies, &c.)? Present and previous residence? What does he think would be the best way of helping him?

Each answer must show from whom the information is received. In order to obtain it, the visitor is to have recourse to the Relieving Officer, the present and previous employer, the clergyman, and if necessary the school-master.

Let us examine the action of a District Committee in detail. The best way of giving an accurate notion of its proceedings will be to confine ourselves to an account of what has taken place at the meetings of a district committee at which we have been present.²

In the Kensington District Committee there are seven members who are also guardians, while most of the members also take part in the administration of other charities. The Chairman of the Kensington Board of Guardians and the Chaplain of the Workhouse are also members of the District Committee. Minutes are kept of the proceedings of the Committee, which meets three times a week. For the entry of the decisions, there is in use at nearly every District Committee an "Application and Decision Book," which shows in what manner each case is dealt with.

Some cases are sent by the clergy and some by private persons; some apply direct. In every instance the District Committee has to decide whether the case is suitable for charitable assistance, and if so how help can be best afforded. In this way the District Committee acts as a medium between those in need of relief and those willing to give it.

Each enquiry is placed in the hands either of a member of the Committee or of a paid officer, according to the nature of the investigation which seems

¹ See Miss Hill's article, 'The Work of Volunteers in the Organization of Charity,' in *Macmillan's Magazine* of October, 1872. Also her Report in the Third Annual Report of the L. G. B., Appendix, p. 126, as to her 'System of combining Official and Volunteer Agencies,' introduced in the parish of St. Marylebone under her direction. See also 'Homes of the London Poor,' and 'Our Common Land,' by Octavia Hill. Macmillan & Co.

² I avail myself of this opportunity of expressing my gratitude to Mr. F. J. S. Edgcombe, Hon. Secretary of the Kensington District Committee, for the kindness with which he has afforded me an insight into its working.

necessary. The enquirer is instructed to communicate with the local charities, and to submit a written report to the Decision Committee. Members of several local charities are frequently present at the Committee, and are able to answer any further questions. For instance, it is frequently asked, What is the condition of the applicant's house? What impression is made by the children? Whether the applicant is given to drink, and so on. If any doubt arises as to the steps to be taken, a member of the District Committee is deputed to make further enquiries, and the final decision is postponed.

Before a decision is given, the following points have to be considered:—

1. Is there real need of assistance? If not, the application is rejected and the case is entered in the "Decision Book" as "not requiring relief."

2. What is the cause of distress? If it arises from such misconduct on the part of the applicant as makes it impossible to render effectual assistance, the application is likewise rejected, and the case is entered as "undeserving."

3. What would be the effect of charitable relief? If it is not to be expected that temporary relief would be of permanent service, the case is regarded as unsuitable for charity, and is entered as "ineligible."

4. If relief were given, would it have an injurious effect on the classes of the population, especially on friends and neighbours of the applicant, who might be in a similar position? If so, relief by the Charity Organization Society is refused; the case is regarded as one for the poor law, and is perhaps recommended for the consideration of the guardians.

It is only when all these points have been satisfactorily disposed of, and it has been decided that relief ought to be given, that the further question arises, in what shape is it to be granted.

The first thing to determine is, from what funds is it to come. *Cadit questio*, if relief has already been offered by some one on condition that the case proves deserving. Very often too, if it is decided that assistance should be granted, a member of the Committee is found ready to supply it or to procure it from some charitable institution with which he is concerned. Frequently the Committee can, by its recommendation, obtain what is necessary for the case from such a source. If the Committee has the necessary means, and if other sources fail, it supplies the relief direct; but in some cases, especially where large sums are required, it publishes particulars of the case in the 'Charity Organization Review,' and invites donations. The funds at the disposal of a District Committee are not generally large; of the subscriptions to the Charity Organization Society, or to particular District Committees, part is devoted to special objects, and is not generally available; and another by no means insignificant proportion is swallowed up by establishment expenses. The Committee more frequently acts as agent for the collection of charitable gifts than as the direct donor of such gifts.¹

As the form of relief must be suited to different cases, it of course varies considerably. Money is sometimes given on loan; help to women is often afforded in the shape of sewing machines, mangles, &c.

As regards the relief of deserted women and widows, the following regulations prescribed by the Council of the Charity Organization Society for the guidance of the District Committees will serve to illustrate the spirit of the principles upon which the Society proceeds.

¹ According to the "manual" of the Society, "It must always be borne in mind that this Society does not profess to be primarily a Relief Society, and it desires to act in that character as seldom as may be. Its own funds are primarily applicable to the purposes of organization, investigation and advising, and it only undertakes relief when no extraneous aid is to be got for a case which requires it. It discharges its own functions best when it brings the sources of private benevolence and of relief organizations to bear upon investigated cases."

1. With regard to women abandoned by their husbands the Council holds that for the following reasons, although the rule may appear a hard one, the cases should be left to the poor law:—

(a) There is often collusion with the husband.

(b) It is desirable, in the interest of the applicant herself, that every effort should be made to bring the husband to justice.¹

(c) Many husbands who would not be ashamed to leave their families to private charity will hesitate to desert them if the result would be that they would have to go into the workhouse.

2. With regard to the relief of widows, we find that the main object of the Charity Organization Society is to instil among the population a sense of the importance of saving and foresight. If the head of the family makes no provision in case of his death, part of the responsibility falls on the wife, and it is doubtful whether the widow ought to be relieved of the consequences by charitable help. Apart from exceptional cases which demand special treatment, it is by some thought proper that such a case should be left to the poor law.

Similar principles regulate the treatment of other cases which frequently occur,² where there is a large family, distress in consequence of want of work, &c. No trace of soft-hearted sentiment is to be found, but everywhere care is taken that the grant of relief shall not be against the interests of the community.

Finally, we may give a few figures as illustrations of the scope of the useful action of the Charity Organization Society.

During 1884, 20,409 cases were dealt with by 39 District Committees, but of these only 9,637, or less than half, were found suitable for charitable relief. More detailed figures may be found in the yearly reports of the District Committees, *e.g.*, in that of the Kensington District Committee for 1883. The number of cases dealt with by that Committee was 1,307, of which 872 were found unsuited for charity, and were classified as:—

Not requiring relief	191
Undeserving	205
Ineligible	476
<hr/>	
Total	872

Other cases were relieved—

By the District Committee from their own funds	269
By private persons	90
By charitable institutions	63
By Guardians, on recommendation	13
<hr/>	
Total	435

It will be seen from these figures that at Kensington the rigid principles as to the boundaries of private charity are not only theoretical, but are carried into practical effect.

¹ If the deserted woman is relieved by charity she is not likely to take any steps against her husband, while if she claims public relief proceedings are taken against him by the guardians if they can find him (5 George IV. c. 83, s. 4).

² It may here be stated that the guardians in case of the destitution of a widow with several children in many unions adopt the plan of not giving relief in money to the widow herself. They leave one child, or perhaps two children, with the mother, whom she has to maintain, while the others are taken into the pauper schools. If the mother is not in a position to keep herself and one child, she is forced in ordinary cases to enter the workhouse.

APPENDIX II.



POOR LAW STATISTICS.

IN the body of this work certain statistical information has occasionally been given, but has designedly been restricted within narrow limits, as we feared that a mere quotation of the figures, without explanation, might easily give rise to errors; and, on the other hand, it seemed desirable to avoid interrupting the course of our narrative by the interpolation of criticisms on statistics. We thought it best, therefore, that the figures and our comments should appear together.

We have, however, relegated both to the Appendix, in order to show that we regard poor law statistics as outside the limits of our work. The task which we undertook was to give an account of the development of the English poor law system, and of its present working. It has not been our design to deal with the condition of the poor, the extent of pauperism, its causes, or its cure. These points, which we consider as not coming within the scope of this treatise, are those as to which information is sought from statistics. Statistics of pauperism can give only a partial answer to the interesting questions of the advantages or disadvantages of the poor law system: the number of paupers may be small because agencies other than the poor law system are dealing with the destitute, or because the express duty of helping those who need help is in effect not adequately carried out. The amount of poor law expenditure may depend on whether the duty of relief is performed with more or with less completeness. Nothing could be more unfair than to judge of a poor law system entirely from statistics, which may indeed be affected by it, but which depend mainly on general conditions of a social and economical character.

So too the variations in the figures from year to year must be regarded with great caution, and considered as only imperfect material for a judgment as to the working and the success of the poor law system. If a country's general condition has improved, and if the working classes have benefited, the pauper statistics will be influenced, whatever may be the poor law system. A reduction in the number of paupers may mean that the population has risen socially, that it has become more saving, and that the duty of laying by for the days of age, illness, and want of employment, is more generally recognized.

It is the same with the social disease of pauperism as with other diseases—bad treatment makes it worse, and increases the danger to the community; proper treatment cures it, or keeps it within narrow limits. But the disease itself must be regarded as the result of manifold causes, the entire removal of which is beyond the power of the physician alone. His endeavour is to

cure those already attacked, and to induce the healthy to take precautions against being infected. In like manner it should be the object of a poor law system to bring back to independence such of the population as are already pauperized, and at the same time to avoid everything that would lessen the incentive to others to maintain their independence, and take precautions against future destitution. A proper system ought itself to convey a warning of the consequences of improvidence. But the amount of attention given by the public to this warning, and the extent to which they are able to profit by it, depend on other considerations. If it were possible to formulate all the different factors of pauperism, to say how often, and to what extent, general circumstances or particular defects and characteristics are its basis, we might then arrive at a solution of the question how far the statistics of pauperism are affected by the poor law system. As this is impossible, the figures only show approximately the extent of the disease which has to be treated, and in the treatment of which it is necessary to have regard not only to such members of the community as are already pauperized, but to such as are independent, so that the latter may be warned¹ against pauperism and its consequences.

It is evidently impossible to judge of the results of relief systems in different countries from a comparison of the statistics of pauperism. Such a comparison assumes that the causes of pauperism in different countries operate in the same way, and to the same extent, an assumption which is contrary to fact. Moreover, in other respects, a basis for comparison is lacking. The scope of public relief in different countries varies both with the different laws and with the extent to which it is supplemented by private charity, and therefore cannot be stated with precision. Moreover, the fundamental notion as

¹ It is often said in England, "If we had no poor law system, people would be more provident, and they would certainly not, as at present, squander a large part of their earnings on drink. The number of the destitute would therefore be smaller." If we ask those who express this view, and who are for the most part warm-hearted and benevolent people, who subscribe to all kinds of charities, whether they would close the pauper hospitals, &c., we are told, "Oh, no! that is quite different, hospitals must be kept up in the interests of the public, so that neglect of illness may not extend the range of its evil effects. Moreover, humanity requires the indulgent treatment of those who are already suffering under the stroke of disease." It is difficult to see why those who have neglected to make provision for the occurrence of illness deserve more indulgence than those who, when their earnings have been sufficient, have not reflected that by adverse circumstances or by their own fault they may suddenly lose their employment. But further, in the case of those who are from any cause unable for the time to earn an independent living, is it not in the interest of the public that they should at any rate be provided with the necessities of life, and therefore should not be driven to procure the means of existence in an unlawful way? It should be remembered that in the latter case they may have to be maintained at the public expense—in prison! No, the very necessary efforts to educate the people to be abstemious and to provide for the days of illness, age, and want of employment, must be carried on independently. What may fairly be demanded from the public system of relief is, that it should be so administered as to be universally regarded as the last resort, only to be thought of in the most extreme need. That this function is fulfilled by the English workhouse system, where, as in the metropolis, it is strictly carried out, cannot be doubted by anybody who knows the feeling of repulsion with which the lower classes regard the workhouse. The best proof is that a thoroughly able-bodied man scarcely ever finds his way into it. If the efforts to wean the population from the prevalent vice of drunkenness have not met with the success that was hoped for, and if there are in the workhouses a large number of persons who would be in an independent position but for the consequences of their previous habits of intemperance, the fact is due to reasons other than the existence of a public relief system.

to what is to be regarded as destitution is very fluctuating. This question depends in part upon the general value of money and the price of necessities, but chiefly upon the standard of living which exists in the particular country. An English artisan is accustomed to conditions of existence differing from those of a workman in the Saxon manufacturing districts. The former would regard as destitution what the latter could live comfortably upon. Destitution is a relative expression, the need and the relief are alike measured by a standard which is not universal.¹ There is no available standard which can be applied to figures relating to the pauperism of different countries. Whoever goes deeply into the subject will come to the conclusion that an international system of poor-law statistics is impracticable.

We have thought it desirable to preface the following statistical statements with these remarks, so that the figures may not be invested with a significance which we do not mean to attach to them.

English poor-law statistics surpass those of all other countries both in their scope and in the time over which they extend. Apart from earlier information, we find since 1834, in the Annual Reports of the Central Board, continuous statistics almost "bewildering in their amount. Besides this main supply, extracts from which are given in the Annual 'Statistical Abstracts for the United Kingdom,' the financial portion of poor-law statistics has since the constitution of the Local Government Board been specially dealt with in the Annual 'Local Taxation Returns.' To the above may be added an enormous amount of information, given from time to time, as to special subjects, and published for the most part separately.

How far the quality of this material corresponds with its quantity is a question on which we must say a few words.²

We will begin with the statistics of pauperism. Up to the year 1848 the plan for ascertaining the number of paupers was to obtain annual returns of the number of persons relieved during the last three months of the poor-law year, which ends at Lady Day. These returns, including part of December, all January and February, and part of March, embraced just the part of the year in which the persons relieved are most numerous. Since January, 1849, the method has been altered by taking the numbers on two specified days of each year, the 1st January and the 1st July. It might be supposed that the number of persons relieved on the 1st January is the greatest, and on the 1st July is the smallest, during the year, and that the mean of the two figures would give the average number of paupers relieved daily throughout the year. The weekly returns, however, show that this not the case; for the number of paupers relieved is generally at its minimum in August; while, on the other hand, the highest number is not on the 1st January,³ but at the end of the month, or even later. This, however, is of no great importance, because the difference in each year is tolerably constant, and therefore does not interfere with the comparison of the statistics of one year with those of another.

More serious, however, are the objections to the whole principle of the

¹ Emile Laurent is right in saying in 'Le Pauperisme et l'Association de Prévoyance' (Paris, 1865), that "l'indulgence est essentiellement un fait de relation et de contraste."

² It has been observed above (p. 195, note 1) that in England there is no Central Bureau for Statistics. Those here given have been compiled in the Statistical Department of the L. G. B.

³ The obvious explanation of the comparatively small number of persons relieved on January 1 is that it often happens that inmates of the workhouse leave it for Christmas to spend the holidays with their relations and friends, but return in the course of the month of January.

return, intensified as they are by the fact that no distinction is made between permanent and temporary cases of relief enumerated on the specified days. With regard to chronic paupers, the return may properly be limited to two days; the mean number will represent with fair accuracy the average daily number of persons permanently in receipt of relief. On the other hand, the assumption that the average number of those temporarily relieved may be deduced from the mean of the figures for the two days named is very questionable. The total number of persons relieved in the course of the year is naturally many times as large as the number of those relieved on a particular day. But the relation between the latter number and the total can only be guessed at. It is influenced by so many fortuitous circumstances, operating in some years so forcibly, that it is impossible to arrive at a fair average proportion.¹

The number of persons temporarily relieved on the 1st January, or the 1st July, may bear quite a different proportion to the total according to the influence of accidental circumstances, such as bad weather or trade crises, in particular years. It should be remembered that a great strike, lasting from the 2nd of January to the end of June, by which many thousands are thrown out of employment, and have to come upon the rates, has not the least influence on the average number of persons relieved daily, as calculated according to the English method. Reckoned on this basis, the percentage of paupers to population, the cost of relief per pauper, and similar calculations, have only a problematical value. It is also to be remembered, that in consequence of the figures for the temporary and the chronic cases being lumped together, the figures in different years, or in different districts, may have an entirely different significance. Suppose that the number of persons relieved amounts in each of two successive years to 100; but that in one year this number is made up of 50 chronic and 50 temporary cases, and, in the other, of 30 chronic and 70 temporary cases. The enormous improvement in the social conditions, which must exercise an influence on the state of pauperism, is in this case not represented in the statistical tables. It is just the same if a difference exists between particular districts with regard to the composition of the total numbers given in the return. Indeed, the difference is more frequent, and more marked in this case. In a rural union the permanent paupers always constitute a greater proportion of the whole than in a large urban union. Consequently, the accuracy of calculations as to the amount of expenditure per pauper in particular districts, or particular year, and of the resulting conclusions, is very doubtful.

The uncertainty as to the relative proportions of permanent and temporary cases relieved naturally affects the value of the information as to the classes of paupers, about which we proceed to make a few observations.

The persons in receipt of relief are divided into two main groups, indoor and outdoor paupers. All those relieved in establishments under the administration of the guardians (workhouses, district schools, infirmaries, sick asylums) are classed as indoor paupers; all others as outdoor paupers. The total of indoor paupers does not coincide with that of persons relieved in

¹ English writers reckon that the total number of persons relieved during the year, including both temporary and permanent cases, is three or four times as large as the number of those relieved on a particular day. This conclusion is founded on a special investigation made by Mr. Purdy, principal of the Statistical Department of the Poor Law Board, in 1857, as to the total number of persons relieved during that year. The result showed that this total was $3\frac{1}{2}$ times that of the persons relieved on January 1. See also Pashley, *ut supra*, p. 10. It will thus be seen how hard it is to ascertain exactly the average number of individuals relieved, on account of the difficulty of distinguishing those repeatedly relieved in the course of the year.

the establishments, because all those placed in establishments not under the administration of the guardians are classed as outdoor paupers.

This fact is of special significance in the case of the pauper lunatics, the greater number of whom, as above stated, are not in the workhouses but in county and borough asylums under separate administration. This division, in the statistics, of the same class of paupers, according as they are in establishments under or not under the control of the guardians, is not only unreasonable in itself, but is eminently calculated to lead to erroneous conclusions as to the respective proportions of indoor and outdoor paupers. It is particularly to be noticed that, as above stated, the number of pauper lunatics has enormously increased in the last ten years, and that this increase has had a special effect on the number of lunatics in county or borough asylums. Of late years the statistics on this point have been improved by a separate statement of the lunatics, insane paupers and idiots, in enumerating both the indoor and the outdoor paupers. Unfortunately this improvement only applies to the figures as to the number of indoor and outdoor paupers, and the percentages to population, &c., have not been similarly dealt with.

Besides the separate specification of lunatics, a further classification with regard to indoor and outdoor paupers has been made, according as they are or are not able-bodied. But here, too, there are important drawbacks to the use of the figures. In the first place there is no agreement as to what persons are to be reckoned as able-bodied.¹ In some unions the term "able-bodied" is restricted to those paupers who are at the time actually capable of working. But most unions consider as "able-bodied" all paupers between sixteen and seventy years of age whose capacity for work has not been permanently destroyed by infirmity or disease. Thus on the one hand old persons over seventy, even if able to work, are classed as "not able-bodied," and on the other hand those who at the time of relief are temporarily incapacitated—and these include the whole class of unmarried women who lie-in at the workhouse—are reckoned as "able-bodied." This obscurity as to what is meant by "able-bodied" stands in the way of a comparison between the number of the "able-bodied" relieved in different unions or in different years. There is no guarantee that even in a particular union the term "able-bodied" is always interpreted alike. It is quite possible that in the course of years a union may alter its classification in this respect.

A further point is to be noticed in considering the numbers of the "able-bodied." If relief is granted to the head of a family, not only he but his wife and children are included in the lists of paupers, and they are entered in the same column as himself. Thus if a man who is not able-bodied, but has a perfectly able-bodied wife, receives relief, the wife is also entered as "not able-bodied." The fact that in the English poor-law statistics the wife and family are not separately treated deserves notice, for it has an important effect upon the collective returns. If a man having a wife and six children under sixteen years of age dependent upon him, receives outdoor relief,²—no matter what its amount—in consequence of illness, no less than eight persons

¹ This is officially admitted. See the 22nd Annual Report of the P. L. B., p. xviii., also Mr. Longley's report, already cited (3rd Ann. Report of the L. G. B., App. p. 174), in which he urges that the L. G. B. should issue regulations providing for a uniform classification of paupers. [As to the term "able-bodied," however, see Circular of 21st December, 1844, quoted in Glen's P. L. O., p. 267.—TR.]

² This failure of the returns to distinguish between the head of the family and those relieved with him is of special importance as regards outdoor paupers. It is less so in the case of indoor paupers, since all those admitted to the workhouse become a charge on the rates.

appear in the returns, just as if eight independent unmarried persons had received relief.¹

The indoor and outdoor paupers are subdivided into able-bodied, not able-bodied, and lunatics, and they are now further classified as men, women, and children under sixteen. Except this last subdivision, there is no classification with regard to age.

This is the main information given in the English statistics of paupers.²

We proceed to give in Table I. for each year since 1849 (the figures of the earlier years are useless for comparison in consequence of the alteration above-mentioned in the principle of the return) the average number of persons relieved in England and Wales, classified as outdoor and indoor paupers, with the estimated population, and the average price of wheat.

With regard to the statements of population, it must be remembered that the census in England is decennial, and that consequently only the figures for 1851, 1861, 1871, and 1881 are exact, while those for the intermediate years are based upon the estimated additions to the population. It should further be mentioned that the returns of paupers have not been all compiled in the same way. Where the new poor law has been in force the figures are based on the half-yearly statements furnished by the Boards of Guardians. But until recently there were a number of extra-parochial places not under the Acts, and also a considerable number of other places which, in consequence of older Acts, only gradually repealed, were exempted from the operation of the new poor law and from the control of the Central Board. (See above, p. 122, note 1.) The pauper statistics for these places depend on estimates based on other returns. As the number of these exemptions has annually diminished, the figures have become more exact. The present statistics are based entirely upon the actual returns, no regard being paid to the now insignificant number of exempted districts (their population is only 2320), which send no accounts of paupers to the Central

¹ But if relief is given on account of the sickness of a wife or child, only the wife or child is entered, with the head of the family, in the Outdoor Relief List. See instructions on the form of that list appended to the General Order of 14 January, 1867.—TR.

² It should be added that the number of vagrants is also given separately. Only those are classed as vagrants, however, who receive relief as Casual Paupers. In our account of the Casual Paupers we have shown how little their actual number agrees with that of vagrants generally. The vagrants taken up by the police are entirely excluded. The returns made by the police as to the number of vagrants are consequently quite different from the figures given in the Pauper Returns. In accordance with the instructions, the police returns include all those who are known to the police as professional tramps, or who, in the night of the first Monday–Tuesday in April of each year, are without visible means of subsistence and without a settled place of abode. Besides the inmates of the casual wards, all those are included who lodge at their own expense in a common-lodging house or spend the night in the open air. See the 22nd Annual Report of the P. L. B., p. xxx., which gives the following returns of vagrants as enumerated :

By the Police.		By the Guardians.	
On April 1, 1867 . .	32,528	On January 1, 1867 . .	5,627
„ „ 1868 . .	36,179	„ „ 1868 . .	6,129

The number of vagrants as returned by the Guardians has, however, fallen in consequence of the more stringent treatment applied to casual paupers under recent Acts. On January 1, 1883, it was 4,552.

Board. In instituting comparisons with the figures of the earlier years, it must also be borne in mind that there is no means of judging how far the estimates are accurate.

We proceed to deal with the figures in Table I. (pp. 286, 287).

The gross total of paupers has largely decreased from 1849 to 1877, not only in proportion to the population, but absolutely. Since 1877 there has been some increase in the actual numbers; but in proportion to population this increase is quite insignificant.¹ On the whole, although there have been various fluctuations during this period, the general tendency is unmistakable. From 1849 to 1860 there was a gradual and progressive diminution from 6·3 to 4·3 per cent. of the population, then up to 1863 a rise of 1 per cent. due to the American Civil War, and the consequent failure of the supply of cotton. The reduction from 1863 to 1871 is very slow. In 1871 the figure is 4·6 compared with 4·3 in 1860. But from 1871 the improvement is rapid; in the course of six years the proportion fell from 4·6 to 2·9; and it is remarkable that the fluctuations of the later years have been unimportant. In the eight years from 1876–1883 the figures vary from a minimum of 2·9 to a maximum of 3·2.

It is outside the scope of this work to enter into a discussion of the possible causes of the improvement illustrated by these figures. We may, however, draw attention to the column showing the prices of wheat. The fluctuations are enormous; the minimum price of 39*s.* 4*d.* in 1852 is followed by four years with a maximum of 75*s.* 4*d.*; within three years there is a drop to 42*s.* 9*d.*, and there are similar fluctuations in the following decade; in 1865 the price is 39*s.* 8*d.*; in 1868, 67*s.* 6½*d.*; in 1870, 46*s.* 2½*d.*

Have these fluctuations had any influence upon the returns of pauperism? To this only one answer can be given, namely, that the influence of the price of wheat is not in the slightest degree visible in the returns. In the three years in which the prices were highest, viz. 1855, 1856, and 1868, the percentages of pauperism were 4·8, 4·9, 4·6. In 1852 and 1865, in which the prices were lowest, the percentages were 5·1 and 4·6; and the very lowest percentage of 2·9 appears in a year (1878) with a high price of wheat (56*s.* 8*d.*). The fluctuations in the two columns seem to be entirely unconnected with each other. Whatever the cause of the improvement in the proportion of paupers, it may be confidently asserted that the prices of wheat have not influenced it.

Proceeding to the classification of paupers, we are met by the remarkable fact that an increase in the number of indoor paupers has gone hand-in-hand with a diminution in the total number of persons relieved. This increase is very important, and has occurred almost exclusively within the last twenty years. In 1866 the number of indoor paupers was rather less than in 1849 (132,776 against 133,513). From that time begins an increase, lasting up to 1881 (183,872 indoor paupers). Since then the number has undergone some, though not much, diminution. The marked increase of indoor paupers is due to the movement, beginning about 1865, in favour of the extension of the workhouse principle. More remarkable, however, is the fact that the number of outdoor paupers has decreased in a much greater degree than that in which the indoor paupers have increased. This decrease begins from 1871, when the total number of outdoor paupers is 880,930, while the two lowest figures previously reached are 570,338 in 1877, and 569,870 in 1878. It should be specially noted that these two years are those in which the general percentage of paupers is lowest (2·9). Owing to the objections, already stated, to the English returns of pauperism, we are not inclined to deduce from these

¹ If the second decimal place is taken into account the proportion of paupers to population in 1883 was 2·96 against 2·94, which was the lowest figure in 1877 and 1878.

TABLE I.

Year ended Lady Day.	Population of England and Wales.	Mean Number of Indoor Paupers.	Mean Number of Outdoor Paupers.	Mean Number of Indoor and Outdoor Paupers.	Ratio per 100 of Population.	Mean Number of Adult Able-bodied Indoor Paupers, excluding Vagrants.	Mean Number of Adult Able-bodied Outdoor Paupers, excluding Vagrants.	Mean Number of Adult Able-bodied (Indoor and Outdoor), excluding Vagrants.	Ratio of Able-bodied to Total Number of Paupers.	Average Price of Wheat per Imperial Quarter.	Year ended Lady Day.
1849	17,356,882	133,513	955,146	1,088,659	6.3	26,558	202,265	228,823	21.0	s. 49 1	1849
1850	17,564,656	123,004	885,696	1,008,700	5.7	24,095	167,815	191,910	19.0	42 7	1850
1851	17,773,324	114,367	826,948	941,315	5.3	20,876	142,248	163,124	17.3	39 11	1851
1852	17,982,849	111,323	804,352	915,675	5.1	18,455	130,705	149,160	16.3	39 4	1852
1853	18,193,206	110,148	776,214	886,362	4.9	17,649	121,926	139,575	15.4	42 0	1853
1854	18,404,368	111,635	752,982	864,617	4.7	18,237	116,954	135,191	15.7	61 7	1854
1855	18,616,310	121,400	776,286	897,686	4.8	20,669	125,962	146,631	16.3	70 0	1855
1856	18,829,000	124,879	792,205	917,084	4.9	21,359	132,869	154,228	16.8	75 4	1856
1857	19,043,412	122,845	762,165	885,010	4.6	19,660	120,415	140,075	15.8	65 3	1857
1858	19,256,516	122,613	786,273	908,886	4.7	19,931	133,838	153,769	16.1	53 10	1858
1859	19,471,291	121,232	744,214	865,446	4.4	18,209	117,575	135,784	15.7	42 9	1859
1860	19,686,701	113,507	731,126	844,633	4.3	16,268	115,852	132,120	15.6	44 9	1860
1861	19,902,713	125,866	758,055	883,921	4.4	20,395	125,380	145,776	16.5	55 10	1861

1862	20,119,314	132,236	784,906	917,142	4'6	22,136	133,166	155,302	16'9	56	7	1862
1863	20,371,013	136,907	942,475	1,079,382	5'3	22,431	199,318	221,749	20'5	52	1	1863
1864	20,625,855	133,761	881,217	1,014,978	4'9	21,026	167,396	188,422	18'6	43	2	1864
1865	20,883,889	131,312	820,586	951,899	4'6	19,819	140,705	160,524	16'4	39	8	1865
1866	21,145,151	132,776	783,376	916,152	4'3	19,363	126,460	145,823	15'9	43	6	1866
1867	21,409,684	137,310	794,236	931,546	4'3	19,740	128,685	148,425	16'0	53	7½	1867
1868	21,667,525	150,040	842,600	992,640	4'6	23,680	143,110	166,790	16'8	67	6½	1868
1869	21,948,713	157,740	860,400	1,018,140	4'6	24,960	145,750	170,710	16'8	58	3	1869
1870	22,223,299	156,800	876,000	1,032,800	4'6	25,200	149,600	174,800	16'9	46	2½	1870
1871	22,501,316	156,430	880,930	1,037,360	4'6	24,700	147,760	172,460	16'6	49	8½	1871
1872	22,788,594	149,200	828,000	977,200	4'3	22,000	128,930	150,930	15'4	57	1	1872
1873	23,096,495	144,338	739,350	883,688	3'8	19,331	105,594	125,925	14'1	57	2	1873
1874	23,408,556	143,707	683,739	827,446	3'5	18,222	93,763	111,985	13'5	60	3	1874
1875	23,724,834	146,800	654,114	800,914	3'4	18,487	89,918	108,405	13'5	50	11	1875
1876	24,045,385	143,084	606,392	749,476	3'1	16,059	79,958	96,017	12'8	45	5	1876
1877	24,370,267	149,611	570,338	719,949	2'9	16,446	72,952	89,398	12'4	48	2	1877
1878	24,699,539	159,219	569,870	729,089	2'9	18,025	74,261	92,286	12'5	56	8	1878
1879	25,033,259	166,852	598,603	765,455	3'0	19,109	85,861	104,970	13'7	43	7	1879
1880	25,371,489	180,817	627,213	808,030	3'2	22,584	93,201	115,785	14'3	45	4½	1880
1881	25,714,288	183,872	607,065	790,937	3'1	22,515	82,485	105,000	13'3	43	7	1881
1882	26,061,736	183,374	604,915	788,289	3'0	22,251	79,957	102,208	13'0	46	2	1882
1883	26,413,861	182,932	599,490	782,422	3'0	21,558	77,592	99,150	12'7	43	0	1883

figures any sweeping conclusions. We may, however, say that they show, negatively, that rigid adherence to the workhouse principle is not manifested in a mere transfer of figures, in an increase of indoor and a decrease of outdoor paupers; but that while this movement is in operation, there is a marked decrease in the total number of paupers. If we compare the years 1873 and 1883, we find that the number of paupers has, in round numbers, diminished by 101,200, and that of indoor paupers has increased by 38,600. In 1873, out of 1000 persons relieved, 837 were outdoor paupers; in 1883 the proportion was 766.¹

And it is to be remarked that this fact would show much more favourably, if the class of pauper lunatics, of whose characteristic treatment in English statistics we have already spoken, were here eliminated. On 1st January, 1873, the number of pauper lunatics classed as indoor paupers was 14,386; on 1st January, 1883, it was 17,049, an increase of 2663. But the number of lunatics classed as outdoor paupers was, on 1st January, 1873, 36,867, and on 1st January, 1883, 49,190, an increase of 12,323.

On the colossal increase of pauper lunatics we have already commented,² and need not here repeat our remarks on the subject.

The number of able-bodied adults has diminished since 1849 by more than one-half; and still more remarkable is the improvement in the proportion which they bear to the total number of paupers. In 1849 this proportion was 21 per cent.; from 1852 to 1862 it varied between 15·6 and 16·9; in 1863, a year already mentioned repeatedly on account of its unfavourable returns, it again rose to 20·5; from 1865 to 1871 the fluctuations were unimportant (15·9–16·9). The main improvement began with 1871. From 1871 to 1877 the decrease was continuous; in the latter year we find the lowest percentage hitherto attained, viz. 12·4. Since then, there has been again an increase; but the present (1883) figure of 12·7 is lower than in any year before 1873. It is clear that in the case of this class of paupers it was mainly by the rigid enforcement of the workhouse test that this improvement was secured,³ as we shall see by considering separately the returns of able-bodied adults, whether entered as indoor or as outdoor paupers.

The number of indoor adult able-bodied paupers decreased from 26,558 in 1849 to 24,700 in 1871, and to 21,558 in 1883; the number of outdoor adult able-bodied paupers in those years fell from 202,265 to 147,760, and then to 77,592. Thus, since 1871, the last class has nearly diminished by one-half, and that of indoor able-bodied paupers by about one-eighth. The refusal of relief outside the workhouse has thus had the effect of lessening not only the number of able-bodied outdoor paupers, but also that of able-bodied indoor paupers.

After considering the main groups into which the English statistics of

¹ The figures for the years 1874–83 are as follows:—826, 817, 809, 792, 782, 782, 776, 768, 767, 766. It will be seen that the improvement is continuous. The proportion seems now to have become constant; the fluctuation in the three years ending with 1883 is infinitesimal (768, 767, 766).

² See especially the figures given on p. 245. Without the inclusion of pauper lunatics the improvement in the general returns of pauperism would be still more striking. From 1871 to 1881 the number of pauper lunatics increased by 18 per cent., while the total number of paupers decreased by 30 per cent.

³ The proportion of adult able-bodied paupers to the total population was in 1873, 5·4; 1874, 4·8; 1875, 4·6; 1876, 4·0; 1877, 3·7; 1878, 3·7; 1879, 4·2; 1880, 4·6; 1881, 4·1; 1882, 3·9; 1883, 3·8, per thousand.

The number of able-bodied men relieved was—

On January 1, 1883 . . .	26,534	} against a total number of {803,719
On July 1, 1883 . . .	18,819	
		persons relieved of {752,791

Thus the adult able-bodied men only constituted 3·3 or 2·5 per cent. of the total number relieved.

TABLE II.—ADULT MEN.

Classified as	A.—In Establishments under the Administration of the Guardians.		B.—Elsewhere.		Total.	
	Jan. 1, 1883.	July 1, 1883.	Jan. 1, 1883.	July 1, 1883.	Jan. 1, 1883.	July 1, 1883.
Able-bodied	10,302	6,240	16,232	12,579	26,534	18,819
Not Able-bodied	54,233	44,597	77,908	74,746	132,141	119,343
Lunatics	6,926	6,763	21,293	21,883	28,219	28,646
Total	71,461	57,600	115,433	109,208	186,894	166,808

TABLE III.—ADULT WOMEN.

Able-bodied	14,565	11,496	64,258	60,370	78,823	71,866
Not Able-bodied	36,595	34,140	191,512	186,217	228,107	220,357
Lunatics	9,277	9,120	27,431	27,939	36,708	37,059
Total	60,437	54,756	283,201	274,526	343,638	329,282

TABLE IV.—CHILDREN UNDER SIXTEEN.

Able-bodied	17,877	14,735	174,394	165,022	192,271	179,757
Not Able-bodied	39,765	38,401	35,416	33,982	75,181	72,383
Lunatics	846	904	466	467	1,312	1,371
Total	58,488	54,040	210,276	199,471	268,764	253,511

pauperism are divided, let us examine rather more in detail the figures for a single year. Taking 1883 as the last year for which returns are available, we proceed to give, not the averages as calculated, but the exact returns for 1st of January and 1st of July. On the 1st of January, 1883, the total number of persons relieved was 803,719; on the 1st of July, 1883 it was 752,791; the number of indoor paupers being 194,672 and 169,453; that of outdoor paupers 609,176 and 583,442 respectively. This does not include the 4552 and 3294 vagrants, as to whom no detailed information is forthcoming. With regard to the other classes, we give in Tables II.-IV. separate statements of the male adults, the female adults, and the children under sixteen years of age. It is necessary to hold in view the fact, already stated, that in the case of women and children their classification as able-bodied or not able-bodied depends upon whether the head of the family comes in one or the other category.

It is only in the case of those independent, *i.e.* of the unmarried or widows, or of orphan or deserted children, that regard is had to the condition of the individual. Consequently no accurate deductions can be made from the classification of women and children as able-bodied, or the reverse.

From Tables II.-IV., it appears that the total number of lunatics¹ was larger on July 1 than on January 1. The hot season has an unfavourable influence on these unfortunate beings, and the constant increase, already noted, in their number, shows itself even in the returns for two successive half-years.

With regard to the other classes of paupers, the numbers for July 1 are throughout considerably lower than those of January 1. This mainly depends on the proportion of persons temporarily destitute, of whom a greater number can provide for themselves in summer than in winter. The difference between the number of paupers in the two days is also greater in the case of the men than in that of the women; also in the class of the able-bodied than in that of the not able-bodied; doubtless the percentage of permanent paupers is larger among women than among men.

Moreover, while among the indoor paupers the number of men is rather greater than that of women, in the case of outdoor paupers there are 2½ times as many women as men. The number of pauper children, excluding lunatics, is only slightly smaller than that of women. It is mostly wives and children of paupers that are thrown upon the rates. It is remarkable that the number of female lunatics largely exceeds that of males, and this proportion holds good for the entire period during which separate returns of lunatics have been furnished.

In the next Table V. (p. 291) we have compiled some figures for the year 1883 as to the local distribution of paupers, grouped according to the eleven divisions of England and Wales. Only the figures for July 1 are taken, as they represent the lowest amount of pauperism. A glance at this table suffices to show the enormous difference which exists between the respective districts. The following grouping, in which the divisions are so arranged that those with the highest figures begin the column, and those with the lowest figures end it, will give some general notion of this difference.

It will be seen that only two divisions (*viz.* the Metropolis and the South-Eastern) appear, with regard to the total figures of pauperism, in the place which they occupy in order of population. All the others have changed their position, the North Midland and Northern much for the better, the West Midland and Welsh much for the worse. Again, in another column the divisions are ranged according to the number of indoor paupers in each; and

¹ In the case of lunatics, as already stated, no significance attaches to their being classed as able-bodied or not able-bodied; the totals alone must be regarded.

it is noteworthy that in this column not a single division occupies the same place as it does with regard to total pauperism. On the other hand, we find a certain amount of agreement between the 4th and the 2nd column; four divisions occupy the same place in each; others almost the same place; while the Metropolis stands alone in showing considerable improvement in the 4th column. This agreement leads to the inference that there is an essential

TABLE V.

DIVISIONS.	Population, Census of 1881.	Total Number of Paupers on July 1, 1883.	Indoor Paupers.		Outdoor Paupers.	
			Total.	Adult Able-bodied, excluding Vagrants.	Total.	Adult Able-bodied, excluding Vagrants.
Metropolis .	3,816,483	95,585	49,955	4,216	45,630	5,576
South-Eastern	2,487,076	75,415	17,292	1,993	58,123	7,801
South Midland	1,596,259	55,541	8,907	920	46,634	5,334
Eastern . .	1,343,524	49,065	8,527	1,125	40,538	5,077
South-Western	1,856,878	80,322	10,469	1,112	69,853	6,537
West Midland	3,029,319	96,565	18,334	2,248	78,231	9,775
North Midland	1,637,865	42,934	6,837	827	36,097	3,923
North-Western	4,108,184	84,247	24,853	2,288	59,394	8,987
York . . .	2,894,759	71,139	11,622	1,585	59,317	8,789
Northern . .	1,624,213	38,531	6,369	776	32,162	4,648
Welsh. . .	1,577,559	63,447	6,088	646	57,359	6,502
Total .	25,972,119	752,791	169,453	17,736	583,338	72,949

TABLE VI.—ARRANGEMENT OF DIVISIONS.

1. According to Population.	2. According to Total Number of Paupers.	3. According to Number of Indoor Paupers.	4. According to the Number of Adult Able-bodied Paupers.
North-Western.	West Midland.	Metropolis.	West Midland.
Metropolis.	Metropolis.	North-Western.	North-Western.
West Midland.	North-Western.	West Midland.	York.
York.	South-Western.	South-Eastern.	South-Eastern.
South-Eastern.	South-Eastern.	York.	Metropolis.
South-Western.	York.	South-Western.	South-Western.
North Midland.	Welsh.	South Midland.	Welsh.
Northern.	South Midland.	Eastern.	South Midland.
South Midland.	Eastern.	North Midland.	Eastern.
Welsh.	North Midland.	Northern.	Northern.
Eastern.	Northern.	Welsh.	North Midland.

connection between the extent to which the able-bodied receive relief and the amount of general pauperism in a division; and the inference is justified by the fact that English experience shows that where the number of able-bodied paupers is large, this is because the principles of the poor law are not strictly observed, while, on the other hand, lax administration produces high figures of general pauperism. Unfortunately the English poor law statistics are not

a satisfactory basis for positive conclusions; still, what does appear on the surface is worthy of consideration.

We have now run through the results deducible from the returns of paupers. For particular years, however, especially during the period when Mr. Goschen was President of the Central Board, we have occasionally found some further information; and we may mention two additional points.

As to the number of paupers requiring medical attendance, particulars have been repeatedly published.¹ In 1865 the House of Commons ordered a special return of the number of sick persons receiving outdoor relief in the Metropolis. It appeared that, out of a total of 70,889 outdoor paupers, 10,348, or 13·8 per cent., were sick persons. In December, 1869, a similar return for all England showed that the proportion of the sick to the total of the outdoor paupers was 12·8 per cent. There have also been several returns as to indoor sick paupers. According to a return made in 1865, the percentage of the inmates of Metropolitan workhouses who were under medical treatment, was 48. A return of the 18th of January, 1869, also relating only to the Metropolis, showed that 39 per cent. of the workhouse inmates were sick or in need of regular medical attendance. The figures for provincial workhouses are different. The report made by Dr. Smith as to 48 of such workhouses in 1860, showed that in these the proportion of sick was 30 per cent. A later return of the 1st of January, 1868, gave 28·2 per cent.; another, of the 18th of December, 1869, 29·7 per cent. It should be observed, however, that, as officially admitted, the definition of "sick persons" has not invariably been the same, as in some cases the old and infirm, even if not suffering from a disease requiring medical care, have been reckoned as "sick persons." One thing, however, appears to be clear, namely, that in London the proportion of sick inmates is much greater than elsewhere. This is, however, due to the fact already mentioned, that in the provinces the number of children in workhouses is relatively much greater than in London, where they are generally placed in district or separate schools. Consequently in the Metropolis the old people who most require medical care form a greater percentage.

Further, there are returns for several years showing the causes of destitution of the outdoor paupers. Of these we give an abstract. The figures relating to 1869 and 1870 are for the 1st of January, those relating to 1872 are for the 1st of July. Those for 1869 and 1870 are for the Metropolis only; those for 1872 for the whole country.²

The following is the classification of outdoor paupers, according to the causes of destitution.

TABLE VII.

Causes of Destitution.	Jan. 1, 1869.	Jan. 1, 1870.	July 1, 1872.	
	Metropolis.		Metropolis.	Provinces.
	per cent.	per cent.	per cent.	per cent.
1. Old age or permanent disability	31·2	31·0	41·9	55·1
2. Death, absence, or desertion of husband or father	36·4	34·2	43·1	33·2
3. Temporary sickness or want of work	31·5	34·0	14·4	11·0
4. Single women	0·9	0·8	0·6	0·7

¹ See 22nd Annual Report of the Poor Law Board, p. xxxiii.

² See Parliamentary Papers, 1870, vol. 58, p. 595; vol. 59, p. 503; and 2nd Report of L. G. B., App. p. 236.

The variations in these returns are of especial interest. In the first two columns there is no great difference, though the second class has somewhat diminished in 1870, while the third class has somewhat increased. But the third column differs considerably from the previous ones. The third class has fallen by more than one-half, while the first and second have risen to a corresponding extent. The fourth class is too small to be taken into consideration. The variations in the third class are partly to be explained by the fact that the returns for 1872 relate to the summer (July 1st) while those for 1869 and 1870 relate to the winter. Naturally, the number of cases of destitution on account of temporary illness or want of work is smaller in summer than in winter. It must be remembered that, as we have seen, the marked improvement in the returns of pauperism dates from the year 1871. But the rigid adherence to the workhouse principle since 1860 must have had a considerable effect in reducing the number of outdoor paupers whose destitution has arisen from temporary illness or from want of work.

Finally, there is much interest in the differences observable between the third and fourth columns.¹ In the Metropolis the percentage of paupers destitute owing to age or disability is smaller by 13·2 than in the Provinces, and correspondingly the percentage in the second class is 9·9 greater. As the returns are unfortunately confined to outdoor paupers, and no classification of the kind is available in the case of indoor paupers, it is impossible to decide whether this difference between the Metropolis and the Provinces arises from the fact that in the Provinces the number of those destitute owing to age, &c., is actually larger, or whether a smaller proportion of this class receives relief in the workhouses, and consequently a larger proportion consists of outdoor paupers. Probably both causes affect the figures. It has also been observed that a large number of people who were not born in London, but have lived there during most of their lives, gravitate towards their birthplace when old and incapable of work. On the other hand, the restrictions on outdoor relief are carried out more rigidly in the Metropolis than elsewhere.

Some other points included in the returns for 1869-70 may also be mentioned. Class 2 (death, or absence of husband or father) includes most of the widows with children. These constituted, in 1869, 29·6 per cent., and in 1870, 28 per cent. of all the outdoor paupers. The deserted married women with children are a smaller percentage, viz. 3·2 and 3·0 respectively.

The third class (temporary sickness or want of work) has the following subdivisions. The causes of the destitution of the 31·5 or 34·0 per cent. of outdoor paupers belonging to this class are classified as—

- (a) Own sickness 3·3 and 3·3
- (b) Want of work 3·1 „ 3·8
- (c) Sickness or funeral of a member of the family 1·0 „ 1·0
- (d) Wives and families dependent on persons pauperised by (a) (b) or (c) above . 24·1 „ 25·9

Thus the main part of this class consists of those dependent on others.

¹ The following figures as to the classification of outdoor paupers on July 1, 1872, may also be of interest:—

Outdoor Paupers.	In the Metropolis.	In the Provinces.
	per cent.	per cent.
Men	11·4	18·2
Women	45·8	46·8
Children under 16	42·8	35·1

The number of men relieved outside the workhouse on account of want of work amounted in 1869 and 1870, before the improvements in poor law administration were carried out, only to 3·1 and 3·8 per cent. On July 1, 1872, this proportion was 0·4 per cent., and on January 1, 1873, being the winter half-year, to only 0·2 per cent. of all the outdoor paupers. Unfortunately, there are no more recent returns, but it seems probable that in the Metropolis the figures have rather diminished than increased.

In conclusion, we may give a statistical abstract with regard to the paupers of a single Union, that of Whitechapel, which has been repeatedly mentioned in these pages. It should be observed that this Union contained a population of 71,363 according to the census of 1881, and that its rateable value at Lady Day, 1882, was £371,510. The number of persons relieved was—

On July 1, 1883	1,610
On July 1, 1884	1,586

Table VIII. gives details as to the classification of these persons.

It will be seen that the lunatics occupy a prominent position in this Table, if we add those classed as outdoor paupers to the imbeciles classed as indoor paupers. After them, children, women, and men unable to work come in order. The number of able-bodied paupers is very small, and has considerably fallen in 1884.

TABLE VIII.

I.—Indoor Paupers.	July 1, 1883.	July 1, 1884.
Able-bodied men	27	30
„ „ women	42	37
Men not able-bodied	295	312
Women not able-bodied	378	391
Children relieved with their parents {legitimate	22	50
„ „ „ {illegitimate	4	5
Orphans and deserted children	338	293
Imbeciles in infirmaries, &c.	141	136
Casual paupers	10	37
Total	1257	1291
II.—Outdoor Paupers.	July 1, 1883.	July 1, 1884.
Able-bodied-men	18	3
„ „ widows	5	2
Other able-bodied women	9	2
Men not able-bodied	1	2
Women not able-bodied	29	30
Children of widows . . . . .	..	2
Other children	18	3
Children boarded out	57	50
Lunatics in asylums	216	211
Total	353	295

We now come to the financial part of the English poor law statistics.

As to the headings under which the expenditure is tabulated (see Table X., p. 298), it will be well to make some explanatory remarks.¹

The following are the items:—

(a). In-maintenance.—This comprises all the expenses incurred for the maintenance of paupers in workhouses or other establishments (District Schools, Infirmarys, Sick Asylums, &c.) under the management of the guardians, exclusive of the remuneration of the officers (see *e*), and of the cost of repairs, and furniture of the workhouse.

(b). Out-relief includes the cost of relief, in money or in kind, given outside the workhouse, as well as the payment of school fees and the expenses for boarded-out children. It is much to be regretted that this latter expenditure has not hitherto been stated separately; the result is to make it impossible to ascertain the total cost of providing for pauper children, since it is partly given under the heading of In-maintenance, and partly under that of Out-relief.

(c). Maintenance of lunatic paupers—in public or private asylums. This heading, unlike that of In-maintenance, includes not only the cost of maintaining the inmates, but also the sums expended for salaries of officials, and for furniture and repairs of the asylums.² This incongruity obviates the possibility of making exact calculations, especially with regard to the sum expended per head. As the expenditure on the lunatics in workhouses appears in the column for in-maintenance, no general estimate of the cost of pauper lunatics can be made.

(d). Workhouse loans paid with interest.—The provisions as to the issue and repayment of these loans, for the erection of workhouses, are given above at p. 143.

(e). Salaries and rations of officers.—This heading, as above stated, does not include the salaries of the staff of lunatic asylums.³

(f). Other expenses connected with relief.—These are mainly for workhouse repairs, and furniture and buildings, so far as they are not paid out of loans. There are also the rates and taxes, the cost of materials for putting the paupers to work, the office expenses of the guardians, &c. It is very necessary, that in order to afford a clear notion of poor law expenditure, detailed particulars should be given of the charges under this heading, which have now risen to a great height.

We proceed to give in Table IX. (p. 296) the annual account of poor law expenditure from 1834 (the date of the new poor law), with the amount per head of the population.

The poor law expenditure during these fifty years reaches the imposing figure of £309,982,521.

The fluctuations of expenditure are as follows:—From 1834 to 1837 a considerable fall; then a rise up to 1843, when the expenditure reached the amount of £5,208,027. If we except the year 1848, when in consequence of the bad harvest there was a great rise, it remained at this height till 1854, when it was practically the same as in 1843. From 1854 to 1860 there was no important alteration; the figures rose and fell by turns. But from 1860 there was an almost unbroken rise up to 1872, when the amount was £8,007,403; then there was a fall up to 1877 (£7,400,034), and then again a

¹ Information on the subject will be found in the 22nd Annual Report of the P. L. B., p. xix., and in the 7th Annual Report of the L. G. B., p. x.

² [It should be observed, however, that these charges do not fall directly on the poor rate, though they are no doubt in some degree represented in the payments made by the Guardians for each pauper lunatic.—Tr.]

³ [Such salaries are not paid from the poor rate.—Tr.]

fresh but slow movement in the upward direction. The amount in 1883 (£8,353,292) was more than double that of 1837 (£4,044,741).

TABLE IX.

Years.	Amount expended for Relief of the Poor.	Rate per Head on the estimated Population.		Years.	Amount expended for Relief of the Poor.	Rate per Head on the estimated Population.	
	£	s.	d.		£	s.	d.
1834	6,317,255	8	9½	1859	5,558,689	5	8½
1835	5,526,418	7	7	1860	5,454,964	5	6½
1836	4,717,630	6	4¾	1861	5,778,943	5	9¾
1837	4,044,741	5	5	1862	6,077,525	6	0½
1838	4,123,604	5	5¼	1863	6,527,036	6	5
1839	4,406,907	5	8¾	1864	6,423,381	6	2¾
1840	4,576,965	5	10½	1865	6,264,966	6	0
1841	4,760,929	6	0½	1866	6,439,517	6	1
1842	4,911,498	6	1¾	1867	6,959,840	6	6
1843	5,208,027	6	5½	1868	7,498,059	6	11
1844	4,976,093	6	1	1869	7,673,100	7	0
1845	5,039,703	6	1½	1870	7,644,307	6	10½
1846	4,954,204	5	11	1871	7,886,724	7	0
1847	5,298,787	6	3	1872	8,007,403	7	0¼
1848	6,180,764	7	2½	1873	7,692,169	6	8
1849	5,792,963	6	8	1874	7,664,957	6	6½
1850	5,395,022	6	1¾	1875	7,488,481	6	3¾
1851	4,962,704	5	7	1876	7,335,858	6	1½
1852	4,897,685	5	5¼	1877	7,400,034	6	1
1853	4,939,064	5	5½	1878	7,688,650	6	2¾
1854	5,282,853	5	9	1879	7,829,819	6	3
1855	5,890,041	6	4	1880	8,015,010	6	3¾
1856	6,004,244	6	4½	1881	8,102,136	6	3½
1857	5,898,756	6	2¼	1882	8,232,472	6	3¾
1858	5,878,542	6	1¼	1883	8,353,292	6	4

At first sight the result appears unfavourable, especially when compared with the steady decrease in the number of paupers.

The total expenditure, reckoned on the number of persons relieved, shows a large increase in the cost per pauper. Between 1873 and 1883 alone, there is an increase per head from £8 14s. 1d. to £10 13s. 6d. But if we examine the particular charges, we shall have no difficulty in finding the explanation of the rise which has taken place, especially since 1860.

If we compare the increased expenditure with the increased population, the picture is far less gloomy. The charge per head of the population was rather less in 1883 (6s. 4d.) than in 1836 (6s. 4¾d.). From this point of view the expenditure appears less fluctuating; since 1834 the charge has (again excepting 1848) only twice exceeded 7s. per head (viz. 7s. 7d. in 1835, 7s. 0¼d. in 1872); the lowest figure was in 1837, viz. 5s. 5d.

It is perhaps fairer, having regard to the way in which the English poor rate is levied, to reckon the charge, not per head of the population, but on the ratable value. We may, at any rate, give the figures for recent years. The poor rates, so far as they are devoted to poor law purposes,¹

¹ It has been already pointed out (p. 153, note 2) that a large number of other charges, besides the relief of the poor, are defrayed from the poor rate. Of course we have here only taken into consideration that part of the poor rate

have been of the following amounts for each pound of ratable value (see above, p. 155):—

Year.		Year.	
	s. d.		s. d.
1870	1 5·6	1877	1 2·3
1871	1 5·6	1878	1 2·4
1872	1 5·6	1879	1 2·3
1873	1 4·4	1880	1 2·4
1874	1 4·4	1881	1 2·3
1875	1 3·5	1882	1 2·1
1876	1 2·8	1883	1 2·2

Thus, if we take into account the rise in the ratable value of property, the poor rate has fallen considerably.¹ The present poor law expenditure represents a charge of about 6 per cent. on the ratable value.

We proceed to examine that expenditure rather more in detail. In Table X. (p. 298) we give the separate items of expenditure from the year 1857, from which year particulars have been given in the present form in the Annual Reports of the Central Board.

Here we see at once that, in contrast to the increase in all other items, there has been a diminution, beginning with the year 1871, in the charge for out-relief. In the short period from 1871 to 1883 this diminution amounts to £1,074,033, against an increase of £534,727 in the total expenditure. The reduction of the charge for out-relief quite coincides with the diminution above mentioned in the number of outdoor paupers.²

This fact shows conclusively that the increase of the expenditure is not due to the amount of relief afforded to paupers, but to other causes. The rise in the charge for in-maintenance, naturally resulting from the larger number of indoor paupers, gives no sufficient explanation of the general increase in expenditure, because the rise in the item for in-maintenance is for the most part balanced by the fall in that of out-relief even in the period between 1871 and 1883.

The general rise in expenditure is mainly exhibited in the four succeeding columns. Most prominent of all is the continuous annual rise in the charges for pauper lunatics, which have doubled in the 15 years from 1857 to 1872, and are now almost three times as large as at the beginning of that period.

which is appropriated to poor law purposes. Of the poor rate raised in January, 1883, only 54 per cent. was for poor law purposes and 46 per cent. for other objects. The amount of the other charges is steadily increasing.

¹ The ratable value has risen from £109,447,111 in 1872, to £141,407,686 in 1882. In the Metropolis the rise in the same period was from £20,053,137 to £27,973,978.

² The cost per head of outdoor paupers remains about the same. It amounted in 1873, for the year, to £4 12s. 5½d., then rose up to 1878 to £4 18s. 3¼d., and has since fallen again. The lowest figure touched was in 1880, viz. £4 12s. 2¼d. It is now £4 13s. 2½d. Too much importance, however, must not be attached to these figures, both on account of the uncertainty as to the relative numbers of permanent and of temporary paupers in particular years, as well as of the uncertainty as to the character of the charges included under the head of Out-relief. It should be remembered that the charge for school fees, which in the single half-year ended Michaelmas, 1884, was no less than £16,982, is only of recent introduction. So too the charge for boarded-out children is of comparatively recent date. In that half-year it was £13,823 (see Parliamentary Papers, 1885, No. 77, c. 1).

TABLE X.—STATEMENT of the SIX PRINCIPAL ITEMS which constitute RELIEF to the POOR; 27 YEARS ended with LADY-DAY, 1883.

Parochial Year.	AMOUNT EXPENDED IN RELIEF OF THE POOR.							Adjusted Total, after allowing for Sums received from or paid to Metropolitan Common Poor Fund.
	In-maintenance.	Out-relief.	Maintenance of Lunatic Paupers.	Workhouse Loans paid with Interest.	Salaries and Rations of Officers.	Other.	Total.	
1857	£ 1,088,558	£ 3,152,278	£ 377,659	£ 217,196	£ 637,629	£ 425,437	£ 5,898,757	£
1858	1,067,803	3,117,274	397,826	202,605	638,441	454,593	5,878,542	..
1859	954,509	2,923,199	413,357	194,579	638,206	434,839	5,558,689	..
1860	912,360	2,862,753	419,565	182,224	644,799	433,263	5,454,964	..
1861	1,033,689	3,012,251	443,892	188,441	660,370	440,300	5,778,943	..
1862	1,133,286	3,155,820	482,425	183,477	668,447	454,466	6,077,921	..
1863	1,127,142	3,574,136	501,368	176,165	679,480	468,745	6,527,036	..
1864	2,095,814	3,466,392	524,166	177,247	696,098	463,664	6,423,381	..
1865	1,111,478	3,258,813	535,115	175,242	706,529	477,789	6,264,966	..
1866	1,188,784	3,196,685	566,482	180,746	730,704*	576,116	6,439,517	..
1867	1,375,627	3,358,351	607,292	186,317	747,650	684,603	6,959,840	..
1868	1,517,496	3,620,284	656,792	207,998	770,539	724,951	7,498,060	..
1869	1,546,580	3,677,379	710,941	204,601	805,136	717,967	7,662,604	7,673,100
1870	1,502,807	3,633,051	722,613	252,215	818,153	723,972	7,652,841	7,644,307
1871	1,524,695	3,663,970	746,113	291,284	838,268	810,013	7,874,343	7,886,724
1872	1,515,790	3,583,571	742,483	278,566	871,402	945,867	7,937,679	8,007,403
1873	1,549,403	3,279,122	780,927	272,698	893,218	914,957	7,690,325	7,692,169
1874	1,649,333	3,110,896	830,454	271,808	909,231	891,815	7,663,537	7,664,957
1875	1,577,596	2,958,670	859,073	267,337	929,723	896,196	7,488,595	7,488,481
1876	1,534,224	2,760,804	883,267	275,067	942,581	940,878	7,336,821	7,335,858
1877	1,613,757	2,916,465	911,426	285,086	972,217	1,001,746	7,400,697	7,400,034
1878	1,727,340	2,621,786	957,119	287,934	997,308	1,119,638	7,711,125	7,688,650
1879	1,720,947	2,641,558	986,050	296,533	1,023,197	1,153,308	7,821,593	7,829,819
1880	1,757,749	2,710,778	994,204	319,426	1,053,218	1,181,511	8,016,886	8,015,010
1881	1,838,641	2,660,022	1,033,780	338,419	1,069,188	1,135,286	8,075,336	8,102,136
1882	1,831,595	2,626,375	1,059,460	351,203	1,087,641	1,296,523	8,252,797	8,232,472
1883	1,869,505	2,589,937	1,098,322	430,185	1,117,705	1,303,416	8,409,070	8,353,292

* Superannuations are included in this column in 1866 and thenceforth.

The marked increase of pauper lunatics, whose annual cost to the rates is on an average £25 a-piece,¹ has to be kept in view when we deal with English poor law statistics.

The other item which has also very largely increased is that of "Other Charges." As these are not particularised, it is impossible to criticise their augmentation. It is probably mainly due to the expenditure on buildings and repairs, which during this period has quite changed in character, and which has only partly been defrayed by loan.

As to the item of Loans, there is also a substantial increase, although the total is much lower than those of the two charges already mentioned. The expenditure for "Workhouse Loans paid with interest" almost doubled between 1857 and 1883, and amounted in the latter year to £430,185. No important conclusions, however, can be drawn from these figures.

The total amount of loans raised for poor law purposes cannot be ascertained from the published tables. The Annual Abstracts only give the amount of new loans during the year, the expenditure out of moneys borrowed, and the amount of the loans outstanding at the end of the year. But all the loans raised by guardians are lumped together, whether they are exclusively for poor law purposes or for other objects. On the other hand, the loans for the building of County or Borough Asylums are not distinguished among the loans of counties and towns; and those raised by managers of District Schools, District Asylums, and the Metropolitan Asylums Board are recorded in yet another place. There is thus no possibility of stating the exact amount of the poor law expenditure which is raised by way of loan, and with which, therefore, a future generation is burthened.²

It would on the whole be better not to place among the general poor law charges of the year the items for repayment and interest of loans which relate to the expenditure of a previous generation. According to the present plan, the particular year is burthened with a share of expenditure which does not belong to it. On the other hand, in the case of new loans, the full amount of the expenditure during the year for poor law purposes may not appear in the accounts. Further, against the amount of loans ought to be set the value which by their means has been imparted to the property of the bodies by whom they were raised. The English statistics are quite incomplete in this respect. No heed is paid to the fact that of the expenditure for interest and repayment of loans, a portion is represented by permanent value. The numerous establishments which have been erected, especially in the course of the last ten years, with their sites and premises, constitute an amount of property of which the accounts afford no means of estimating the value. It must be left undecided whether this property does not represent a value far in excess of the amount of the loans outstanding, and consequently whether the statement of poor law expenses ought not to be materially reduced. Also, whether a particular year is not more burthened by the repayment of loans previously raised than it is relieved by its expenditure from new loans being thrown on future years.³

¹ The average cost per head of pauper lunatics has somewhat fallen in recent years; in 1873 it was £26.

² [In the course of the last three years considerable improvements have been made in the poor law statistics; and loans for poor law purposes, and for County and Borough Asylums, are now stated separately. See 15th Annual Report of the L. G. B., p. cxxxv., and Appendix, p. 227; and 16th Report, p. clix., and Appendix, p. 425. The criticism in the above paragraph, therefore, is not applicable to the statistics now issued.—TR.]

³ In a Return printed in the Parliamentary Papers for 1876, vol. 63, p. III, the total amount of the expenditure by guardians since January 1, 1868, for the

With regard to 1883, the following figures have a bearing on these questions. During that year new loans, amounting together to £464,886, were taken up by the guardians, and out of the means thus supplied expenditure was incurred to the amount of £390,639, while the repayment and interest of previous loans demanded £430,185. Thus for that year the amount of the expenditure in consequence of debt previously incurred, is greater than that provided for by the receipts for new loans. The total amount of outstanding loans was £4,529,936. To this must be added £1,312,076 borrowed by the managers of the District Schools, the District Asylums, and the Metropolitan Asylums Board; so that the gross amount with which the poor law authorities have burthened the future is no less than £5,842,012.¹

We have still to notice the item of Salaries and Rations of Officers, which has nearly doubled itself between 1857 and 1883. It should be observed in the first place that the number of paid officers has largely increased during that period. This is especially so in the case of three classes, relieving officers, medical officers, and nurses. We have already pointed out that it is considered necessary for efficient administration that the districts of the relieving officers and medical officers should be made smaller; and the natural increase of the population has also to be held in view. As regards both classes it has been found requisite, in order to secure good officers, to increase the salaries, and with the same object the payment of pensions on retirement has been in operation since 1864.² These changes account for some of the increase in this item since 1865. As regards the class of nurses, we have pointed out in our account of medical relief that the extended employment of paid nurses is a modern innovation.

We may here point out that the improvement in the treatment of the sick has had an important influence on the increase of the charges. We learn from the latest returns of expenditure on medical relief that between 1843 and

erection of pauper establishments is given as £2,146,782 17s. 3d. Of this amount the sum of £1,717,440 4s. 8d. is from outstanding loans, while £263,845 8s. 7d. of loan had been paid off by annual instalments. In the years 1878-82 the following sums were expended on the erection of poor law establishments:—

	£	s.	d.
1878	576,412	0	0
1879	769,230	5	5
1880	466,281	2	4
1881	309,882	11	8
1882	768,279	1	10½
1883	444,944	11	8
Total	£3,335,729	12	11½

The following special information as to the Whitechapel Union, as to the pauperism of which we have already given some particulars, will be found interesting. The total amount obtained by that Union from 1851 to Michaelmas, 1884, by way of loan, and devoted to the erection of workhouse establishments and their sites, was £116,700. Of this sum, £38,200, or a third of the total, was during the period since 1870. Of the loans, £87,630 19s. 10d. has been repaid, so that the outstanding debt is £29,069 0s. 2d. Thus, of the loans effected during the last 33 years, three-fourths have been repaid and only one-fourth is outstanding.

¹ See above, pp. 144 and 145, especially note 1 on p. 145. The gross amount of the debt of local authorities in England, which increased from 1875 to 1882 by 63 per cent., amounts to £151,704,680, while the National Debt is £763,045,940.

² 27 & 28 Vict. c. 42. See above, p. 162.

1883 it has almost doubled itself. In 1843 it was £160,726, and progressed to £230,777 in 1850; then, up to 1860, there was only a slight upward tendency. In 1860 it was £236,339; thenceforward there was a rapid augmentation; in 1871 it was £290,249; and finally, in 1883, it was £317,233.

In conclusion, we may give some special particulars of the poor law expenditure of the Whitechapel Union, which amounted in 1884 to £34,359. This was over £9000 less than in 1870 (£43,736), and nearly £8000 less than in 1871 (£42,084). In this Union there has been an improvement, not only as regards the number of paupers, but also as regards the amount of expenditure upon them.

The expenditure for 1884 is apportioned as follows:—

	Per cent. of entire Expenditure.
In-maintenance	25·6
Out-relief	2·3
Maintenance of lunatics in asylums	12·4
Salaries and rations of officers.	15·3
Other expenses of relief	16·4
Metropolitan Asylums District	16·2
Forest Gate School District	9·5
Hospitals and denominational schools	2·3

Besides the five chief items of expenditure, two are here given, with regard to the sick and the children, which in the general tables are included for the most part in that of "In-maintenance," but partly also in that of "Out-relief." The smallness of the percentage of out-relief is very striking, the Whitechapel Union being, as the table already given shows, distinguished for the paucity of its out-paupers. Per head of population, the expenditure in 1883 was 9s. 7½d.; the poor rate was 1s. 10½d. in the £ of ratable value; being thus considerably more than the average throughout England, viz. 1s. 2½d.

The difference of poor law expenditure in the various parts of the kingdom deserves a few observations. The following Table XI. (p. 302) gives the total expenditure for 1883 in each of the eleven divisions of England and Wales, and the proportion spent on out-relief. For comparison, we have added the present ratable value; also the total poor rate raised, and the amount of the guardians' outstanding loans.

For the reasons already given, no extensive conclusions can be drawn from the two last columns in the table. The figures as to loans are imperfect, owing to the omission of those taken up by authorities other than guardians (especially for Lunatic Asylums, District Schools, and in the Metropolis, for the Metropolitan Asylums Board); while those as to the poor rate include the sums levied for purposes unconnected with the relief of the poor;¹ and on the other hand, the sources of receipts in aid of poor rates are not here stated. As to such sources, we have spoken on p. 144. Besides the loans raised, the Treasury subventions, as well as various other receipts not particularized, have to be taken into account.²

The following Table of the eleven divisions, already mentioned, is arranged

¹ The other expenditure out of the poor rate amounted in 1882-3 to £5,662,504, so that a balance of £8,429,015 remained for purposes of relief.

² The Treasury subventions amounted in 1882-3 to £647,508; the "other receipts," to £439,480. With regard to the "other receipts," which mainly arise from the produce of the labour of inmates of poor law establishments, from payments in support of relatives, for repayment of relief afforded, &c., see 8th Annual Report of L. G. B., p. lxxi.

TABLE XI.

Divisions.	Ratable Value of the Property liable to contribute to the Poor Rate.	Expenditure for the Relief of the Poor.		Amount of Poor Rate levied during 1882-83.	Loans Outstanding on the 25th March, 1883.
		Total.	Out-relief (Percentage).		
I. The Metropolis	£ 27,973,978	£ 2,172,294	25·3	£ 2,784,280	£ 1,862,485
II. South-Eastern	14,161,191	856,893	54·4	1,548,943	348,470
III. South Midland	9,348,798	553,333	68·7	1,017,938	123,434
IV. Eastern	7,009,292	471,983	66·0	732,216	119,422
V. South-Western	9,532,909	653,237	77·1	1,120,973	52,619
VI. West Midland	14,653,947	825,549	61·2	1,502,042	339,957
VII. North Midland	9,125,375	421,548	70·7	771,677	121,084
VIII. North-Western	20,523,823	905,235	46·6	1,800,271	691,355
IX. York	13,708,783	652,377	66·8	1,337,157	508,808
X. Northern	8,499,950	335,691	68·6	626,817	221,596
XI. Welsh	6,869,640	505,352	82·3	849,205	140,706
Total of England	141,407,686	8,353,292	58·1	14,091,519	4,529,936

so that in each column the division with the highest figure is at the top, and that with the lowest figure is at the bottom :—

TABLE XII.—ORDER OF THE DIVISIONS.

According to Ratable Value.	According to Total Expenditure on Relief.	According to Amount of Rates levied.	According to Amount of Outstanding Loans.
Metropolis. North-Western. West Midland. South-Eastern. York. South-Western. South Midland. North Midland. Northern. Eastern. Welsh.	Metropolis. North-Western. South-Eastern. West Midland. South-Western. York. South Midland. Welsh. Eastern. North Midland. Northern.	Metropolis. North-Western. South-Eastern. West Midland. York. South-Western. South Midland. Welsh. North Midland. Eastern. Northern.	Metropolis. North-Western. West Midland. South-Eastern. York. South-Western. South Midland. North Midland. Northern. Eastern. Welsh.

This result is remarkable on account of the slightness of the variations in the order of the divisions in the respective columns, especially when we remember the differences found to exist in the table, arranged after the same fashion on p. 291, with regard to the classes of persons relieved. In the first two columns, which are specially interesting, there are, however, several transpositions of divisions, but that of Wales is the only one of which the place is changed materially, and for the worse. It is worth notice that according to column 3 of Table XI., Wales stands the highest in the proportion of out-relief granted. This seems to show the intimate relation between the total expenditure and the extent to which relief is given outside the workhouse.

The third column agrees almost absolutely with the second; the height of the poor rates is practically regulated by the expenditure. Finally, the fourth column is identical with the first; the amount of local debt corresponds with that of the ratable value.

Not much is to be inferred, however, from this arrangement of the divisions. It must certainly not be supposed, because there are no great differences in the relative positions of the divisions, that therefore individual unions are equally burthened. The size of the divisions is such as to average the differences between particular unions.

As to the inequalities of charges upon individual unions, the Metropolitan division is the only one for which full particulars are supplied.¹ We find that while in the year 1883-4 the average poor rate for the Metropolis amounted to 1s. 6 $\frac{3}{4}$ d. in the £ of ratable value, this amount rose to 2s. 4 $\frac{1}{4}$ d. in Fulham, to 2s. 4 $\frac{3}{4}$ d. in Holborn, to 2s. 8 $\frac{1}{4}$ d. in St. George-in-the-East, and to 2s. 10 $\frac{1}{4}$ d. in Woolwich; while it fell to 1s. 1 $\frac{3}{4}$ d. in Hampstead, 1s. 1d. in St. George, Hanover Square, and 7 $\frac{3}{4}$ d. in Paddington. It was thus 4 $\frac{1}{2}$ times as large in Woolwich as in Paddington, though it is to be

¹ The poor law charges for the Metropolis have constantly risen to a very large extent. This rise amounts, merely in the period between 1875 and 1883 to 36·7 per cent., though during that time the percentage of paupers to population has fallen from 3·21 to 2·62. The number of indoor paupers has increased, but that of outdoor paupers has materially decreased. The expenditure for out-relief, which in 1875 constituted 37 per cent. of the whole, has now fallen to 25·3 per cent.

remembered that the Common Fund effects much in the way of equalization¹ of poor rates in the Metropolis, which is wanting in the rest of the country. There can therefore be no doubt that similar particulars for the provinces would show still more extensive differences in the poor rates of different unions.

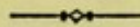
We have thus endeavoured to give the briefest possible statement of the main facts derived from the extensive statistics of the English poor law system. Notwithstanding the amount of material available, there are many important questions to which they afford either no answer, or one of very doubtful accuracy. We have repeatedly taken occasion to point out that many of the statistical returns can only be employed with great caution, and subject to various limitations. The chief points left uncertain are: What proportion of the paupers receive permanent, and what proportion receive temporary relief? And, as regards the latter, For how long is the relief granted? How many of those relieved are persons who had previously supported themselves independently? How many are relieved in consequence of the destitution of others (parents, &c.) on whom they were dependent? Further, data are wanting as to the condition of the paupers; whether single or married; and how many children. Information is lacking as to the age and previous occupation of those relieved. The particulars given as to the cause of destitution are very scanty, apart from the fact that for the most part they only extend over a few years.

As regards this last point, we must admit the difficulty of obtaining trustworthy and useful information. It would be quite enough if detailed particulars during a succession of years were obtained in the case of individual unions taken as fair samples of the whole country.² But with regard to the other points above-mentioned, particulars for the whole country should be always furnished. England, more than any other country, is in a position to supply good poor law statistics, because the system is uniform, the administration is everywhere organized after the same fashion, and, finally, the accounts and book-keeping are upon one prescribed plan. If in the case of the numerous returns made to the Central Board the necessity for providing useful statistical material were kept in view, and the returns were with that object somewhat modified in form, it would be possible, without substantial increase of labour or expense, to obtain much better poor law statistics than are now available.

¹ In 1882 the expenses borne by the entire Metropolis through the Common Poor Fund amounted to 47·7 per cent. of the whole. Our readers will recall the figures given at p. 258 as to the relief afforded to individual Unions by that fund; St. George-in-the-East being repaid 37 per cent. of its poor law expenditure. This may give a notion of the extent of the difference in Metropolitan poor rates before the establishment of the Common Fund.

² In the House of Commons, on March 28, 1884, Mr. Rankin asked the President of the Local Government Board for a return of the causes of destitution and previous employment of the paupers in particular Unions, from which conclusions might be drawn as to the whole country. Unfortunately, however, the request was refused by Sir Charles Dilke, on the ground of the expense of obtaining such a Return. *Hansard, Parl. Deb., iii., vol. 286, p. 1010.*

INDEX.



A.

ABLE-BODIED POOR,

- origin of classification of, 2, 3
- required to work, 4
- early difficulties as to, 15
- ample powers of outdoor relief provided for, by Gilbert's Act, 20
- land to supply work for, 24
- restrictions on outdoor relief for, 93, 94
- one workhouse in metropolis set apart for, 96, 260
- poor relief provided in England, but not in continental states, for, 130
- relieving officer to report whether applicants belong to class of, 197
- restrictions on money grants to, 196
- work to be done by, when in receipt of outdoor relief, 197
- treatment of, in workhouse, 214
- uncertainty as to meaning of term, 283
- statistics of, 283

ADAMSON (E.),

- opinions on poor law administration, 65

ALBANY (DUKE OF),

- president of Charity Organization Society, 92, 273

ALCOCK (T.),

- observations on the effect of the poor law, 17

ALLOWANCE SYSTEM IN AID OF WAGES,

- extensive adoption of, 21
- evil effect of, 31

ALMSGIVING,

- prohibition of, in 1572, 5
- development of poor rate from, 8
- effect of, 247

APPEALS,

- against assessments, 155-157
- against decision of auditor, 141, 171
- number of, to Central Department, 142

APPRENTICES,

Act of Apprenticeship (1562), 4
 provision for putting out poor children as, 7
 apprenticeship a ground of settlement, 11, 117
 apprenticeship not to last beyond age of twenty-one, 18
 provision against abuses on part of parish as regards, 19
 registers of, required, 19
 powers of magistrates as to indentures of, 19
 obligation to receive, imposed 1601, abolished 1844, 49
 regulations as to, 199
 apprenticeship to the sea, 199

ASSESSMENTS (PAROCHIAL),

regulations of, by Act of Elizabeth, 48
 incidence of, on real and personal property, 48
 mode of, defined by Act of 1836, 49, 63
 attempt to secure uniformity in, 62
 inequalities of, felt as hardships, 62
 effect on, of Acts of 1836, 1845, and 1852, 63
 effect on, of Union Assessment Committee Act of 1862, 64
 functions of overseers and Union Assessment Committee as regards valuation lists, 64, 154
 Valuation Act (1869) to secure uniformity of, in metropolis, 77, 153
 of woods, mines, &c., 80
 made uniform throughout England, 80

ASSESSMENT SESSIONS, 77**ASSISTANT AUDITOR, 177****ASSISTANT CLERK TO GUARDIANS, 160****ASSISTANT OVERSEER, 24, 155, 160, 180**
 authority for appointment of, 49**ASSISTANT POOR LAW COMMISSIONERS,**

duties of, 44
 powers transferred to inspectors of Poor Law Board, 54

ASSISTANT RELIEVING OFFICER, 160, 192

police not to be employed as, 250

ASSISTANT SECRETARIES OF LOCAL GOVERNMENT BOARD, 166**ASYLUMS** (*see also under METROPOLIS*).**ASYLUMS FOR HOUSELESS POOR,**

combination authorized for provision of, 50

ASYLUMS FOR PAUPER LUNATICS, 243 *et seq.***AUDIT,**

by visitors under Gilbert's Act, 20
 auditors first appointed, 25
 formation of districts for, 50, 60, 126, 175
 auditor paid by State, 60, 85
 appeals to Central Department against decision of auditor, 61, 141, 171, 177
 duty of auditor in metropolis of settling contributions to, and receipts from Metropolitan Common Poor Fund, 72
 appointment of auditors transferred to Central Department in 1868, 74, 176
 and made obligatory, 79
 stamp duties levied on local authorities in respect of, 85
 details of proceedings at, 140, 176
 extraordinary audits, 141
 numbers and salaries of auditors, 166

AUDIT—*continued.*

by justices prior to 1834, 175

number of districts for, 176

functions of auditors, 176

in metropolis, 256

AUSTRALIA,

emigration to, 201

AYRTON (A. S.),

on poor law administration, 66

B.**BABBAGE,**

Principle of taxation, 131

BAINES (M. T.),

president of Poor Law Board, 57

views of, on incidence of rating and on settlement and removal, 57

bill of, on these matters (abandoned), 57

view of, as to removal of Irish paupers, 58

BAKER (BARWICK),

originator of Poor Law Conferences, 86

BANSTEAD,

cottage homes at, 226

BASE COIN,

penal enactments against payment of, by parish officials, to the poor, 18

BASTARDY LAWS, 19, 83**BEACONSFIELD (EARL OF),**

abortive proposal of, in 1850, to place cost of relief on Consolidated Fund, 57

BEGGARS (*see* VAGRANTS AND HOUSELESS POOR).**BENTHAM (JEREMY),**

observations on Pitt's Poor Bill, 22

"BERKSHIRE SYSTEM" OF "WAY-TICKETS" FOR CASUAL PAUPERS, 254**BEVAN (Rev. J. O.),**

classification of pauper children, 228

BLACKIE (Rev. W. G.),

collisions of benevolence and social law, 91

BLACKLEY (CANON),

scheme of, for National Insurance against sickness and old age, 235

BOARDING-OUT SYSTEM, 97, 222, 223

order of Central Department as to, 98

expenditure on, classed as outdoor relief, 198

BOARD SCHOOLS,

education of pauper children in, 225

BODKIN'S ACT (1847),

(maintenance of irremovable paupers), 56

BOOKS KEPT BY PAID OFFICERS, 140, 161, 189, 191**BOUNDARIES** (*see* UNIONS, PARISHES, and CENTRAL DEPARTMENT).

- BOUSFIELD (W.),**
on medical relief, 233
- BOUVERIE (Mr.),**
on relief of able-bodied, 131
- BRANDING OF ROGUES AND VAGABONDS, 5**
- BRIDGES (Dr. J. H.),** inspector of Central Department,
work of, as regards dispensary system, 97, 237
on district schools, 222
- BRISTOL,**
first workhouse at, 15
- BRYCE (Prof. J.),** 95, 204
- BULLER (C.),** president of Central Department,
views of incidence of rating on parishes and whole union, 57
- BURDEN OF POOR RELIEF AT BEGINNING OF NINETEENTH CENTURY, 22**
- BURN (Dr.),**
History of Poor Law, 5, 13, 18

C.

- CANADA,**
emigration to, 200, 225
- CASES CITED,**
Rex. *v.* Forrest, 33
(power of magistrates to enforce acceptance of office of overseer)
Reg. *v.* Mabbett, 108
(obligation of parent to apply for relief, if he cannot otherwise maintain his child)
Rex. *v.* North Shields, } 109
Rex. *v.* Carlisle, }
(relief of family)
Weldon case (treatment of lunatic), 242
- CASUAL** (*see* HOUSELESS POOR).
- CASUAL POOR ACT, 1882, 81**
- CASUAL WARDS, 136**
regulations as to, 250
in metropolis, 261
- CELL SYSTEM, 96**
- CENTRAL DEPARTMENT,**
establishment of, recommended by Commission of 1833, 28
establishment of, and powers of Poor Law Commissioners (1834), 38 *et seq.*
power of, to issue regulations as to administration of poor law, 38
power of, as regards areas of unions, 39
power of, as to paid officers, 41, 161, 167, 171
legal validity of orders of, 43
issue by, of orders as to duties of guardians and government of workhouse, 46
unpopularity of, and renewal of powers of, 46, 47
principal "general orders" of, 47, 168, 170
establishment of Poor Law Board (1847), 53
renewal of powers of, from time to time, 55
president and one secretary of, allowed to sit in Parliament, 53
to report to Queen and not to Home Secretary, 54

CENTRAL DEPARTMENT—*continued.*

- power of, to appoint inspectors, 54
- power of, to institute inquiries and examine witnesses on oath, 54
- power of, to confirm or reverse auditor's decision, 61, 141, 177
- equitable jurisdiction of, as regards subjects of auditor's disallowances, 61, 141, 171, 177
- operations of, severely criticized in 1861, 66
- committee of 1862 report in favour of making permanent and increasing powers of, 68
- made permanent in 1867, 74
- powers of, under Act of 1867, as regards administration in metropolis, 71-74
- power of, to nominate non-elective guardians in metropolis, 72, 181, 256
- power of, to settle management of districts for special purposes in metropolis, 73
- powers of, under Divided Parishes Acts, 74
- power of, to repeal local act by provisional order, or to vary it, 74
- strengthened power of, to deal with metropolitan unions, and with asylum and school districts, 76
- power of, to suspend payment out of metropolitan common poor fund, 76
- further powers of, as regards metropolis, 77-79
- power of, to deal with unions constituted under local acts, 79
- power of, to unite small parishes for election of guardians, 79
- establishment of Local Government Board* (1871), 80
- Local Government Board a second ministry of interior (for poor law, sanitary, and highway purposes), 81
- constitution and reports of, 81
- power of, to regulate diet and work of houseless poor in casual wards, 81
- powers of, over raising and paying of loans by local authorities, 82, 144
- statistical returns to, by local authorities, 82
- to issue rules of procedure against fathers of illegitimate children, 83
- fresh power of, as to divided parishes and alterations of unions (1876-1882), 83, 84
- power of, to combine unions, for special purposes, 85, 221
- recognition by, of value of poor law conferences, 87
- continuity of policy of, 89
- action of, as to distress at "East-end," 89, 90
- circular of (1869), as to boundary between public relief and private charity, 90
- circulars of (1871 and 1878), as to outdoor relief, 93, 94
- orders of, as to outdoor relief, 93
- order of, as to boarding-out system, 98
- circular of, as to examination of health of children sent to district schools, 98
- action of, as important as legislation, in developing poor law system, 99
- collection by, of information as to foreign systems, 99
- objections of, to "non-resident relief," 120
- appeal to, on contested questions of settlement and removal, 121
- action of, as to divided parishes, 124
- power of, to form audit districts, 126, 175
- little use made by, outside metropolis, of power to combine unions for special purposes, 126
- powers of, to approve or disapprove exceptional action of guardians as to outdoor relief, 134
- inspectors of, 139
- orders of, as to paid officers, 161
- functions of (at present time), 164 *et seq.*
- constitution and position of, 165
- validity and authentication of acts of, 165
- staff of, 166
- power of, as to revision of boundaries, 167
- action of inspectors and auditors of, 170
- power of, to dismiss paid officers without consent of guardians, 171
- to determine complaints against guardians, 171

CENTRAL DEPARTMENT—*continued.*

- action of, in collecting and diffusing information, 172
- extraordinary audits may be required by, 177
- power of, to regulate election of guardians, 181
- power of, to determine validity of objections to election of guardians, 183
- approval by, of relief in shape of emigration, 200
- powers of, as to erection of workhouse, 207
- power of, to appoint paid visitor of workhouse, 208
- attitude of, as regards methods of dealing with pauper children, 219
- empowered to combine unions for education of pauper children in district schools, 221
- circular of (1869), enquiring as to practice as regards medical relief, 233
- sanction of, required to tasks for vagrants, 249
- power of, to nominate some of the managers of the Metropolitan Asylums Board, 259
- advantages of existence of a, as conducing to uniformity of system, 264, 267

CERTIFIED SCHOOLS FOR PAUPER CHILDREN, 226**CHADWICK (E.)**, Member of Commission of 1832, 28**CHAIRMAN OF BOARD OF GUARDIANS**, 183**CHALMERS (Dr. T.)**,
on poor law reform, 26**CHAPLAIN OF WORKHOUSE**, 160**CHARITABLE SOCIETIES**,
particulars of income of, 91**CHARITABLE INSTITUTIONS**, 271**CHARITIES REGISTER AND DIGEST**, 273**CHARITY COMMISSIONERS**, 272**CHARITY (PRIVATE) AND STATE RELIEF**,
boundaries of, and co-operation of, 90, 103, 127, 269, 270 *et seq.***CHARITY ORGANIZATION REVIEW**, 273**CHARITY ORGANIZATION SOCIETY**,
formation, objects, and methods of, 92, 270 *et seq.*
means taken by, to secure election of guardians, 187
district committees of, 275**CHILDREN (PAUPER)**,

- provision for, under Act of 1601, 6, 7
- in district schools in metropolis chargeable on metropolitan common poor fund, 72
- education of, one of the best organized branches of relief, 76
- power of guardians to train, for sea, 76
- schemes for dealing with, 97
- circular as to examining health of, when sent to district schools, 98
- information collected by Central Department as to methods of treating, 172
- various forms of provision for, 135, 219 *et seq.*
- difficulties as regards uniformity of system as to, 219
- workhouse schools for, 220
- district schools for, 221
- boarding out system for, 222
- education of, in national and board schools, 225
- emigration of, to Colonies, 225
- "separate" schools for, 225
- "mettray," or cottage homes for, 225
- training ships for, 226
- certified schools for, 226
- statistics of systems for, 227

CHILDREN (PAUPER)—*continued*.

- medical certificate required by, before admission to district schools, 229
- technical instruction for, 230
- employment of, after leaving school, 230
- parental authority over, 231
- industrial schools for special classes of, 232

CHURCH,

- duty of relief undertaken by, 1
- abandoned by, 3

CITY GUILDS,

- expenditure by, 272

CLASSIFICATION OF PAUPERS,

- permanence of, since 1601, 100

CLERK TO GUARDIANS, 160

- to attend meetings of guardians, 189
- to keep minutes and conduct correspondence, 189
- to countersign accounts and returns, 189
- books kept by, 189
- statistical and financial statements of, to Central Department, 189
- to examine books kept by other officers, 189
- to prepare for audit, 189
- legal adviser of guardians, 190
- remuneration of, 190
- conduct of election of guardians by, 190
- importance of post of, 190

CLOTHING,

- of inmates of workhouse, 208
- of casual paupers, 251

COBBE (MISS F. POWER),

- on poor law administration, 65

COLLECTOR OF ALMS, 5**COLLECTORS (PAID),**

- authority for appointment of, 49

COLLECTOR OF THE GUARDIANS, 160**COLLECTOR OF POOR RATES,** 155, 160, 180**COMBINATION OF UNIONS FOR SPECIAL PURPOSES,** 260

- effect of, 266

COMMISSIONERS IN LUNACY, 244**COMMISSION OF 1832,** 26

- summary of conclusions, 35, 36

COMMITTEES OF HOUSE OF COMMONS,

- of Elizabeth, 6
- Select Committee of 1817, 23
- Select Committee of 1838 (extension of powers of Central Department), 47
- Buller's Committee (settlement and removal), 57
- Baines's Committee (settlement and removal), 58
- Estcourt's Committee (settlement and removal), 58
- of 1844, 1854, and 1864 (medical relief), 61, 62
- of 1850 and 1860 (assessments), 63
- of 1861 (general administration), 66
- recommendations of Committee of 1861, 67
- of 1879 (settlement and removal), 85
- of 1878 (election of guardians), 188
- of 1877 (pauper lunatics), 242

COMMITTEE, SPECIAL DISTRICT, 50

COMMON FUND OF UNION,

contributions to, proportionate to rateable value of parishes, 59
Committee of 1862 in favour of placing whole cost of poor on, 67
all costs of poor placed on (1865), 70
contributions to, from overseers, 158

COMMON LODGING HOUSES, 252

**COMPLAINTS AGAINST GUARDIANS DETERMINED BY
CENTRAL DEPARTMENT,** 171

COMPOSITION OF BOARDS OF GUARDIANS, 185-188

COMPOUND HOUSEHOLDERS, 150

COMPULSORY INSURANCE AGAINST SICKNESS,

proposals for, 234
scheme of Canon Blackley for, 235

CONFERENCES (*see* POOR LAW CONFERENCES).

**CONSOLIDATION OF EXISTING STATUTES AND ORDERS
DESIRABLE,** 47

CONTRIBUTION ORDERS,

from rate to common fund, 158, 179

CONVICTS,

children of, kept at industrial schools, 232

COODE (G.), Inspector of Central Department,

reports on law of settlement and removal, 9, 12

COOPER (charitable institutions and the poor laws), 18

CORBETT (Inspector of Central Department), 87, 90

CORPORAL PUNISHMENT IN WORKHOUSE, 212

COTTON TRADE,

distress in (1862), 67
bill to provide rates in aid, 67
Union Relief Aid Act, 67

COUNTY BOARDS,

proposed constitution of, expected to affect poor law system, 188

D.

DANGEROUS LUNATICS,

not permanently kept in workhouse, 243

DAY INDUSTRIAL SCHOOLS, 233

DEFOE (DANIEL),

pamphlet on poor relief, 16

DEPRESSION IN TRADE (1860-1861), 66

DEPUTY CHAIRMAN OF GUARDIANS, 183

DEPUTY MEDICAL OFFICER, 237

"DESTITUTE,"

term includes dissimilar classes, 247

DEVELOPMENT OF POOR LAW SYSTEM,

- gradual, on basis of experience, 8
- chief epochs in, 14, 99-103
- in 1864-1867, as to metropolis and powers of Central Department, 74
- uniformity practically attained by 1882, 84
- share of Central Department in, 99

DICKENS (T.),

- Borderland of Pauperism, 249

DIETARY

- of inmates of workhouse, 209
- as affected by medical relief, 238
- of casual paupers, 251

DILKE (SIR C. W.),

- President of Central Department, 88, 231
- on pauper children, 220, 226

DISPENSARIES (*see also* MEDICAL RELIEF and METROPOLIS), 73, 97, 160, 237, 261**DISTRESS**

- at "East End" (1868), 89
- in cotton trade (1862), 67

DISTRICT AUDITORS ACT, 1879, 85**DISTRICT COMMITTEES OF CHARITY ORGANIZATION SOCIETY, 273****DISTRICT COMMITTEES OF GUARDIANS, 184****DISTRICT SCHOOLS, 97, 221**

- contributions to, in metropolis, as affected by Act of 1867, 73
- health of children examined before admission to, 98
- management of, 229

DISTRICT MEDICAL OFFICER (*see* MEDICAL OFFICER).**DISTRICTS,**

- (combined, for special purposes), 260, 265
- tendency to form, especially in metropolis, 126

DIVIDED PARISHES ACTS (1876, 1879, 1882), 83, 84**DODSON (J. G.),**

- President of Central Department, 88

DORINGTON,

- on vagrancy, 252

DOWNING (M'CARTHY),

- on law of settlement in England, Ireland, and Scotland, 85

DOYLE (A.),

- Inspector of Central Department, 94, 98, 99, 201, 226

E.**EDEN,**

- on the state of the poor, 9, 16

EDUCATION OF PAUPER CHILDREN, 220 *et seq.*

- payment of school fees of non-paupers, 197

ELBERFELD SYSTEM OF RELIEF, 26, 105

- ELIZABETHAN POOR LAW (1601),**
 (accepted as foundation of all subsequent legislation,) 4, 6
- ELLIOTT (MISS M.),**
 opinion on poor-law administration, 65
- EMIGRATION,**
 power of owners and ratepayers to raise money for purposes of, 42
 of pauper children, 98, 225
 loans for and limitations on, of paupers, 200
- EMPLOYMENT**
 of inmates of workhouse, 211, 215 *et seq.*
 of casual paupers, 254
- ENDOWMENTS OF CHARITABLE INSTITUTIONS IN ENGLAND,** 271
- EQUALIZATION OF CHARGES FOR RELIEF IN METROPOLIS,** 78, 257
- EQUITABLE JURISDICTION OF CENTRAL DEPARTMENT AS REGARDS SUBJECT MATTER OF AUDITOR'S DISALLOWANCES,** 61, 141, 171, 177
- ESTCOURT (T. S.),**
 President of Central Department, 58
- EXEMPTIONS OF CERTAIN PROPERTIES FROM POOR RATE,** 148-150
- EXPENDITURE ON VARIOUS BRANCHES OF POOR LAW ADMINISTRATION,** 12, 16, 22, 27, 95, 193, 204, 226, 229, 231, 240, 245, 258, 259, 261, 262
 variations of, in different localities, 193
 variations of, at different periods, and causes, 16, 17
 general statistics of, 295
 excessive, at Cholesbury, in early part of 19th century, 32
 on removal, 121
 on school fees, 198
 on emigration, 200, 201
- EXTRA PAROCHIAL PLACES,** 79
 abolished, 123

F.

- FAWCETT (H.),**
 on outdoor relief, 95
 on boarding-out system, 97
 on relief of able-bodied, 131
 on blind children, 227
- FEVER PATIENTS,**
 provision for, in metropolis, 259
- FIELDING (H.)**
 on poor laws, 17
- FIRMAN (T.),**
 on workhouses, 15
- FOREIGNERS,**
 without settlement, relieved at place of residence, 115
- FOWLE,**
 on the poor law, 8, 11, 200, 204, 218

FRANCE,

poor law in, 105

FRANCHISE,

of compound householders, 80

loss involved by receipt of relief (except medical relief and school fees), 109,
110

FRY (H.),

Guide to London Charities, 272

G.**GENERAL LEDGER,** 189**GERMANY,**

poor law in England and, 263

GILBERT'S ACT (1782), 19

adoption of, optional, 19

permitting union of parishes and erection of common poorhouses, 20

introducing paid guardians, 20

stimulating excessive outdoor relief, 20

repealed, 84

GLEN (W. C.),

opinion on poor law administration, 47

"Poor Law Orders"—passim, 60, 86, 112, 186

GOSCHEN (G. J.), President of Central Department,

share of, in developing poor law system, 88

ability of, as regards statistics, 88

action as to pauper children, 98

on statistics of pauperism, 195

on vagrancy, 248

GUARDIANS,

paid guardians set up by Gilbert's Act (subsequently abolished), 20

election of, scales of voting for, and qualifications of, under Act of 1834, 40,
181, 183

number of, to be fixed by Central Department, 40

ex-officio members (magistrates), 41, 164

quorum, 41

wards for election of, 50, 181

Central Department empowered to set up remodelled Boards of, in metro-
polis, 72

non-elective, in metropolis, nominated by Central Department, 72, 181

small parishes united for election of, 79

right of, to recover costs of relief from recipient, if he possess property, or
from his relatives, 107

power of, to grant relief as a loan, 110

power of, to obtain order of removal, 118, 178

power of, to give "non-resident relief," 120

duties of, as to outdoor relief, 133, 188, 196

may select admission to workhouse as the form of relief in any case, 135

proceedings of, in cases of relief, 137

report to be made to, of all relief granted in cases of sudden or urgent
necessity, 138

complaints against, 171

a board of, to be elected for each union, 180

elective and *ex-officio*, 181

numbers of, 181

GUARDIANS—continued.

- service of, not compulsory, 182
- women eligible as, 182
- vacancies, how filled, 182
- term of office of, 182
- conduct of business of, meetings of, 183
- functions of, as regards relief, and appointment of paid officers, 184
- committees of, 184, 208, 223
- to decide on individual applications, 184
- and on proper mode of relief, 185
- miscellaneous duties of, apart from poor law work, 184
- composition of boards of, 185, 186
- women as, special uses of, 187, 188
- reform desirable in election and term of office of, 188
- power of, to pay school fees of non-paupers, 197
- visiting committee of, for workhouse, 208
- boarding-out committee of, 223
- power of, as to admission of paupers to, and discharge from, workhouse, 250

H.**HABITUAL VAGRANTS, 253****HALE (Sir M.),**

- on provision for the poor (advocating workhouses), 15, 131

HALLAM (H.),

- on effect of dissolution of monasteries, 3

HARDY (G.), President of Central Department, 69**HEDLEY (R.),** Inspector (for metropolis) of Central Department, 89**HENLEY (J. J.),** Inspector of Central Department,

- report of, on boarding-out system, 98
- report of, on relief system in America, 99

HIBBERT (J. T.), Parliamentary Secretary of Central Department, 89**HILL (ALSAGER),**

- on workhouse labour, 218

HILL (Miss J. M.),

- work of, as to cottage homes, 226

HILL (Miss OCTAVIA),

- work among London poor, 276

HOBHOUSE'S ACT (1831),

- (select vestries), 25

HOBHOUSE (Sir A.),

- on endowments, 272

HOME SECRETARY,

- former authority of, over Central Department, 38, 39, 54
- inquiry by (1839), as to pauper schools, 221
- control of, over industrial schools, 232
- requirement by, of provision of lunatic asylums, 244

HOSPITALS (*see* also MEDICAL RELIEF and INFIRMARIES).

- hospitals and hospital ships, 97
- subscription by guardians to, 240
- use of, when sustained by voluntary contributions, 240
- of metropolitan asylum district, 259
- in metropolis, 260

HOSPITAL NURSES, 240**HOUSELESS POOR, 247 *et seq.***

- power to exact work from, to detain, and to punish, 49
- provision for, in metropolis (1864), 69
- in metropolis, chargeable on metropolitan common poor fund, 72]
- Acts of 1871 and 1882 as to wards for, 81
- Act of 1882 founded on conclusions of poor law conferences, 88
- wards for (casual wards), 136
- regulations as to admission, treatment, and discharge of, 249
- tasks and punishments of, 251
- effect of new regulations as to discharge of, 251
- numbers of, 252
- extent to which wards are used by, 252
- "way-tickets" for, 254
- employment of, 254
- charges for, in metropolis, 256, 261

HOUSES OF CORRECTION,

- established for incorrigible paupers, 4, 9

I.**ILLEGITIMATE CHILDREN** (*see also* BASTARDY LAWS).

- former encouragement to increase of, 30
- provisions as to maintenance of, 43, 108
- law as to settlement of, 116

INDEPENDENT LABOURER,

- relief should not make a pauper more prosperous than an, 129

INDICTMENT,

- possible in cases of neglect of duty of relief, 139

INDOOR RELIEF (*see also* WORKHOUSE and INMATES of WORKHOUSE),

- statistics of, 282

INDOOR RELIEF LIST, 189**INDUSTRIAL SCHOOLS, 232****INDUSTRIAL TRAINER, 160****INFIRM POOR,**

- provision for, in Act of 1601, 7

INFIRMARY OF WORKHOUSE, 234, 239, 241**INMATES OF WORKHOUSE** (*see also* WORKHOUSE),

- not to be compelled to attend religious service contrary to principles, 39
- children not to be brought up in a creed other than that of parents, 39
- nature of those who become, 205
- classification of, 208
- discipline and diet of, 209
- employment of, 211, 215
- punishments for, 212
- statistics of, 213

INSPECTORS OF CENTRAL DEPARTMENT, 139, 166, 170, 174

- opinions of, in 1850, on settlement and rating, 57
- power of Central Department to appoint, 54
- power of, to visit meetings of guardians, 54
- power of, to institute inquiries and examine witnesses on oath, 54, 173
- functions, numbers, salaries, position of, 173
- in metropolis, 256

INSPECTORS OF INDUSTRIAL AND REFORMATORY SCHOOLS, 232**IRISH PAUPERS,**

difficulties as regards, in altering law of settlement and removal, 58, 86,
121

K.**KENSINGTON UNION,**

women first elected as guardians in, 187
work of Charity Organization Society in, 276, 278

L.**LABOUR RATE, 30****LABOUR TEST, 197****LAND,**

purchase and use of, for purposes of outdoor relief, 202

LAXITY OF ADMINISTRATION IN EIGHTEENTH CENTURY, 17**LEGAL ADVISER OF CENTRAL DEPARTMENT, 166****LEWIS (Sir G. C.),**

proposals of, as to assessments, 63

LICENSED HOUSES (ASYLUMS), 243**LIVERPOOL,**

workhouse at, largest in kingdom, 207

LOAN,

relief may be given by way of, 110
outdoor relief as a, 24, 195
school fees as a, 198
medical relief as a, 239

LOANS TO LOCAL AUTHORITIES, 82

for workhouses, 39
require approval of Central Department, 39
specially authorized in metropolis by Act of 1867, 73
object of, and limitations on, 143
accounts of, repayment of, security for, 144
amount of, outstanding at certain periods, 145
inspector of, 166
for purposes of emigration, 200
statistics of, 298

LOCAL ACTS, PLACES ADMINISTERED UNDER, 122**LOCAL DISTRIBUTION OF PAUPERISM, 290****LOCAL GOVERNMENT BOARD (see CENTRAL DEPARTMENT).****LOCAL GOVERNMENT BOARD ACT (1871), 80****LOCAL LOANS ACTS, 82****LOCAL TAXATION,**

inequalities of, 154
returns of, 281

LOCH (C. S.), Secretary of the Charity Organization Society, 241, 274

LONGLEY (H.), Inspector (for metropolis) of Central Department,
excellent reports of, on metropolitan administration, 88, 172, 204, 215, 234,
256

LORD CHANCELLOR,

power of, to order special inspection of lunatic asylums, 245

LUNACY ACTS, 242

LUNATICS (PAUPER),

cost of, in metropolis, chargeable to metropolitan common poor fund, 59, 72

system of asylums for, charges for, 62, 127

state grant in aid of, 127, 146

loans for asylums for, 145

limitation on detention of dangerous lunatics in workhouse, 208

treatment of, 241 *et seq.*

classification of, 242

inclusion of some non-paupers among, 243

admission of, to asylums, 243

treatment of dangerous cases among, 243

maintenance of, 245

increase in numbers of, 245

influences causing increase of, 246

asylums for, in metropolis, 259

statistics of, and criticisms on statistics, 283 *et seq.*

M.

McPHERSON (Miss),

action of, as to emigration of pauper children, 201

MAGISTRATES,

early action of, as regards relief, 5

duties of, under Act of 1601, 7

power of, ordering removal, 10

extension in 1691, and restriction in 1723 and later of functions of, 14, 15

powers of, as to apprentices' indentures, 19

power of, to appoint visitors of poorhouses, 20

concentration of powers in, by Gilbert's Act, 20

power of, to order outdoor relief for a limited period, 22

contraction of powers of, recommended by commission of 1832, 28

character of administration by, before 1832, 33

limited powers of giving relief, 42

function of hearing appeals, in sessions, against assessments, 64, 157

power of, to order maintenance by relatives, 108

power of, to grant order of removal, 118

power of, to hear appeal against order, 119

duties of, as to poor rate, 155

share of, in administration as to

(a) actual relief,

(b) inspection of establishments,

(c) poor rate,

(d) judicial functions, 162

ex-officio guardians, 164

duties of, as to lunatics, 243

MAINTENANCE,

of, and by, relatives, 7, 42, 107, 108, 191

MALTHUS,

attacks on poor laws, 17

MANDAMUS,

order of, obtainable to secure relief, 140

MARRIED COUPLES IN WORKHOUSE, 168, 205, 208**MARSTON GREEN,**

cottage homes at, 226

MASTER OF WORKHOUSE, 160

duties of, 207

to grant relief in cases of sudden or urgent necessity, 138

MATRON OF WORKHOUSE, 160

duties of, 208

MEDICAL CERTIFICATES,

of freedom of pauper child from disease, 229

MEDICAL OFFICER,

(a) (of workhouse), 61, 160

duties of, 241

(b) (for a district), 61, 160

regulations as to, 235

payment of, by salary or fee, 236

numbers of, 236

status of, 233, 236

deputy to, 237

medicines provided by, 238

duties of, as to lunatics, 241, 243

power of, to visit asylums, 245

MEDICAL RELIEF,

committees on, 61, 62

orders as to, 62

in metropolis, chargeable to metropolitan common poor fund, 72

provision of dispensaries stimulated, 76

combination for purposes of, especially in metropolis, 96, 266

means taken to secure better, 97

special institutions for, 136

power of magistrate to order, 138

discussion of general system of, 233 *et seq.*

objects of, 234

outdoor system of, 235

dispensaries, 237

medicines, 238

inducements to applicants for, 238

indoor system of, 239

statistics of, 292

MEDICAL RELIEF BOOK, 189**MEDICAL RELIEF DISQUALIFICATION REMOVAL ACT, 1885, 110****MEDICINES AND "MEDICAL EXTRAS,"**

regulations as to grant of, 238

MENDICANCY,

repression of, origin of State action as to poor, 1

barbarous laws against, 2

partial allowance of, by license, 3

licences for, abolished in 1572, 4

absence of penalties against, in Act of 1601, 8

diminution of, in certain places after establishment of workhouses, 15

casual wards a provision against, 96

METROPOLIS,

- committee of 1862 in favour of reform of poor law system in, 68
- houseless poor in, 69
- first formation of a district in, for a special poor law purpose, 70
- effect of Act of 1867, 72
- power of Central Department to remodel Boards of Guardians in, 72
- common poor fund established in, 72
- special combined districts in, 73, 96, 126, 260
- workhouses in, for special classes, 73
- contributions for district schools of, 73
- medical relief in, 73
- Act of 1869, 76
- unions altered in, 76
- Act of 1870 as to common fund of, 77
- legislation to secure uniformity of assessment in, 77, 156
- cost of pauper maintenance in, 78
- equalization of charges in, 126
- dispensary system in, 237
- casual wards in, 251
- special features of administration in, 255 *et seq.*
- greater power of Central Department in, 257
- statistics of poor law administration in, 262
- inequalities of charges in individual unions in, 303

METROPOLITAN ASYLUMS DISTRICT,

- management of, 75, 258, 259
- establishments of, 259
- alleged extravagance of managers of, 260
- relations of sanitary authorities with managers of, 260

METROPOLITAN BOARD OF WORKS,

- loans from, 82

METROPOLITAN COMMON POOR FUND,

- power of Central Department to suspend payments out of, 76, 78, 237
- equalization of charges by, 256
- charges borne by, and administration of, 257
- effects of, 258

METROPOLITAN HOUSELESS POOR ACT (1864), 69**METROPOLITAN AND NATIONAL ASSOCIATION FOR DISTRICT NURSES, 240****METROPOLITAN POOR ACTS, 71, 76, 77, 256****METROPOLITAN PROVIDENT MEDICAL ASSOCIATION, 239****METTRAY OR COTTAGE SYSTEM, 225**

- expensive, 226
- adopted in metropolis only by Chelsea and Kensington unions, 226

MILL (J. S.),

- on house rating, 152
- on dissemination of information by Central Department, 172

MONASTERIES,

- dissolution of, 3

MOUAT (F. J.), Inspector of Central Department,

- on treatment of pauper children, 219
- on district schools, 222

MUNDELLA (A. J.),

- on schools for pauper children, 227

N.

NATIONAL COMMITTEE FOR PROMOTION OF BOARDING-OUT SYSTEM, 223

NATIONAL PROVIDENCE LEAGUE, 235

NATIONAL SCHOOLS,
education of pauper children in, 225

NAVY,
apprenticeship to, 199

NECESSITY—SUDDEN OR URGENT,
procedure in cases of, 138, 163

NET ANNUAL VALUE,
on which poor rate is levied, 156

NEW POOR LAW ACT (1834), 37

NICHOLLS (Sir G.),
History of Poor Law, 6, 9, 16, 215, 247
his exemplary work at Southwell, 27
on discretion entrusted to Central Department, 168

NOMINATED MEMBERS OF METROPOLITAN BOARDS OF GUARDIANS, 256
qualifications of, 256

NON-RESIDENT RELIEF, 120
cases in which permitted, 134
account of, 189

NORTH (Dr. S. W.),
statistics by, of cost of pauper lunatics, 246

NURSES, 160
training of, 96, 240
general employment of paid, 194

O.

OAKUM-PICKING IN WORKHOUSES, 215, 251

OFFENCES PUNISHABLE IN WORKHOUSES, 212

ORDER CHEQUE BOOK, 189

ORDERS OF CENTRAL DEPARTMENT,
as to duties of boards of guardians and government of workhouse, 46
outdoor relief prohibitory (1844), 47, 93, 170, 197
general consolidated (1847) (foundation of existing system), 47, 48, 161, 170
as to expenses chargeable to poor rate (1836), 60
as to medical officers (1854, 1857), 62
as to audits (1879), 85
outdoor relief regulation (1852), 93, 170, 196
as to boarding-out system (1870), 98, 223
as to paid officers, 161
as to accounts (1867), 170
as to election of guardians (1877), 170, 182
as to duties of overseers (1842), 178
as to collector of poor rates, 180
as to metropolitan dispensaries, 237
as to medical relief, 235, 241
as to casual paupers, 250
issue of provisional, 74

OUTDOOR RELIEF,

- extension of, without tests, under Gilbert's Act, 20-23
- as a loan, 24, 195
- by work on land provided for purpose, 24, 202
- abuses of, as described by Commission of 1832, 29
- to aged and infirm, under magistrates' order, 39
- regulations of Central Department as to, 41, 42
- prohibition of grant of, to able-bodied, 46
- opposition to such prohibition, 46
- prohibitory order (1844) as to, 47, 133
- cost of, in metropolis, borne by individual unions and not by metropolitan common poor fund, 79
- principles of, discussed in circulars of Central Department, 90, 93, 94
- principal orders as to, 93
- regulation order (1852) as to, 133
- superintendent of, 133
- diminution in, 134
- special provision in Act of 1834 as to, 168
- not granted for a period longer than three months, 185
- test of, 189, 191, 195
- different kinds of, 195
- in money or kind—proportions, 196
- restrictions on money grants, 196
- work to be done by able-bodied men when in receipt of, 197
- payment of school fees, relation to, 197
- expenditure on boarding-out system classed as, 198
- tendency to confine, in money, to a minimum, 202
- arguments for and against, 203
- statistics of, 283 *et seq.*

OVERSEERS,

- origin of, 6
- for each parish, 6
- duties of, under Act of 1601, 6, 7
- restrictions on powers at various periods, 14, 15, 20, 42, 49
- duty of, to relieve for a limited period on an order from a magistrate, 22
- subjected to select vestries, 24
- specially bad state of parishes administered solely by (1832), 32
- incompetence of, before 1834, 33
- unwillingness of better classes (before 1834) to be, 33
- to account quarterly to guardians and auditors, 41
- functions of, in connection with assessment committee, as to poor rate, 64, 154, 158, 178
- power of, to grant relief in cases of sudden or urgent necessity, 138, 178
- appointed by magistrates, 163
- original and present functions of, 178
- represent pecuniary interests of parish, 178
- liabilities of, for neglect of duty, 179
- duties of, as to registers of voters, 179
- appointment of, penalties on refusal to hold office, 180
- office of, may be united to that of churchwarden in small parishes, 180
- order of, for admission to casual ward, 250

P.**PAID OFFICERS,**

- introduction of, advised by Commission of 1832, 28
- qualifications of, fixed by Central Department, 41
- security to be given by, 41

PAID OFFICERS—continued.

- cost of, in district schools, asylums, and dispensaries in metropolis chargeable to metropolitan common poor fund, 72
- extent of responsibilities of, 141
- enumeration of, and cost of, 160, 193
- appointment, suspension, and dismissal of, 41, 161, 162
- pensions of, 162
- cost of, as tested by efficiency, 193
- variation in numbers of, in different localities, 193
- uses of, in connection with unpaid guardians, 267
- statistics of payments to, 298

PAID VISITORS OF WORKHOUSE, 208**'PALL MALL GAZETTE,'**

- on casual wards, 253

PARENTAL AUTHORITY OVER PAUPER CHILDREN, 231**PARISH** (*see also* UNION),

- common fund of, 4
- unit of relief under Act of 1601, 8
- division into townships (1662), 11, 123
- evils of small areas of, 32
- separately chargeable (under Act of 1834) with cost of its own poor, 39
- proportion of contribution of (under Act of 1834) to common fund of union, 40
- by Act of 1861 to contribute to common fund of union in proportion to rateable value, 59
- union to bear expenses instead of (1865), 70
- affected by Divided Parishes Acts, 84, 124
- with separate administration, like a union, 122
- original significance of, 122
- civil and ecclesiastical, 123
- extra parochial places, 123
- variations in size of, 124
- early combination of, prior to creation of "unions," 124
- tendency to transfer charge from, to union, 125
- to be represented by at least one guardian, 125

PARLIAMENTARY GRANTS IN AID, 146, 233, 245, 266**PAROCHIAL ASSESSMENTS ACT (1836), 48****PAROCHIAL RELIEF—AS A PRINCIPLE,**

- first provision of, by voluntary gifts, 3
- means taken to ensure contributions for, 5
- provided for by rate, 7

PASHLEY,

- on pauperism and poor law, 9

PAUPER CLASSIFICATION BOOK, 189**PAUPER INMATES DISCHARGE AND REGULATION ACT (1871), 81, 249****PAUPERISM,**

- statistics of, 281 *et seq.*
- local distribution of, 290

PAY STATIONS, 191, 195**PEDLARS' CERTIFICATES, 249****PEEK (F.),**

- on boarding-out system, 223

PELL (A.),

- action as to casual poor, 88

PENSIONERS OF CHELSEA AND GREENWICH HOSPITALS,

pensions of, chargeable with part maintenance of wife and children, 109

PERSONAL PROPERTY,

exemption of, from assessment to poor rate, 149

PITT,

opinions on settlement, and on legislation affecting wages, 22

POLICE,

action of, as to houseless poor, 69

regulations of, as to mendicancy somewhat ineffective, 96

not to be employed as assistant relieving officers, 250

appointed in metropolis to scrutinize inmates of casual wards, 251

POOR LAW AMENDMENT ACTS, 1842, 1844, 49**POOR LAW BOARD** (*see* CENTRAL DEPARTMENT).**POOR LAW CONFERENCES, 217, 231, 233, 241, 252, 262**

origin and progress of, 86, 87

Act of 1883 allowing payment of expenses of attendance at, 86

representatives of Central Department at, 87

matters discussed at, 88

outdoor relief influenced by, 95, 134

POOR RATE,

introduced in 1601, 6

levied by overseers, 7

rates in aid from other parishes, 7

leviable in certain cases on owner, under Sturges Bourne's Act, 24

attempts to secure uniformity in assessment of, 63

rate in aid discussed, 67

Union Relief Aid Act, 1862, 67

system of compounding, made uniform in 1869, 80

rating of mines, woods, &c., 80

assessment for, made on uniform plan since 1880, 80

basis of other rates, 123

extra-parochial places formerly exempt from, 123

how raised, 138

basis and principles of, 147, 151, 154

exemption of personal property from assessment to, 149

Rating Act of 1874, 149

exemptions from, 149

person rated, 150

some unfairness in incidence of, 152-154

details of levying of, 154-158

to be allowed by magistrates, 157, 163

to be publicly posted, 157

actually raised by collector, 158

enforcement of payment of, 158

raising of (in connection with assessment committee) the chief practical duty of overseer, 178

statistics of, 302

POOR RATE ASSESSMENT AND COLLECTION ACT, 1869, 79**POPLAR UNION,**

used exclusively for able-bodied men, 95, 260

PORTER OF WORKHOUSE, 160**PRESIDENT OF CENTRAL DEPARTMENT, 53, 54, 165****PROVIDENT DISPENSARIES, 239**

PROXY VOTING,

for guardians, 181

PUNISHMENTS,

for workhouse inmates, 212

R.**RATE IN AID,**

discussion on principle of, compromise as to, 67

RATEPAYERS,

power of, to inspect overseers' accounts, 158

RATING ACT (1874), 80**RECEIVER OF METROPOLITAN COMMON POOR FUND,**

72, 257

REFORMATORY SCHOOLS, 232**REFORMATION,**

effect of the, on incidence of duty of relief, 3

REFUGES FOR THE HOMELESS, 252**REGISTER OF PERSONS RELIEVED, 14****REGISTERED HOSPITALS (FOR LUNATICS), 243****RELIEF,**

analysis of theoretical conditions of, 129

should be restricted to bare necessities, 129

RELIEF ORDER BOOK, 138, 189**RELIEVING OFFICER, 160**

number of cases that can be properly attended to by, 92

proceedings of, in cases of relief, 137

position and duties of, 190

to examine into applications for relief, 191

to give relief in cases of sudden or urgent necessity, 191

to submit ordinary cases to guardians, 191

to carry into effect orders of guardians, 191

accounts kept by, 191

responsibilities of, 192

salaries, number of, 192

miscellaneous duties of, 192

order of, as to outdoor medical relief, 237

duties of, as to lunatics, 243

order of, for admission to casual wards, 250

RELIGIOUS SERVICES IN WORKHOUSES, 211

attendance at, to what extent required, 168

REMOVABILITY (ACT OF 1846, AS TO), 52**REMOVAL (see SETTLEMENT).****REPORTS OF CENTRAL DEPARTMENT, 44, 47, 60, 166, 172****RIGHT TO RELIEF.**

existence of, discussed, 104

ROMAN CATHOLIC CHILDREN,

number of certified schools exclusively for, 227

RUSSELL (G. W. E.),

Parliamentary Secretary to Central Department, 89

on relations of sanitary authorities with Metropolitan Asylums Board, 260

RYE (MISS),

action of, as to emigration of pauper children, 201

S.

SALISBURY (MARQUIS OF),

opinion on metropolitan administration in 1861, 66

SCHOOLS (PAUPER) (*see also* CHILDREN, PAUPER),

combination authorized for provision of, 50

SCHOOL ATTENDANCE OFFICER, 197**SCHOOL FEES,**

payment of, by guardians, not classed as relief, 109, 197

SCHOOLMASTER AND SCHOOLMISTRESS, 160**SCLATER BOOTH (G.),** President of Central Department, 88, 90, 167

on pauper children, 220

on metropolitan administration, 262

SCOTLAND,

poor law in, 105

removals from, 121

SECRETARIES OF LOCAL GOVERNMENT BOARD, 166**SECURITIES FOR DUE RELIEF, 137 *et seq.*****SENDALL (W. J.),** Inspector and Assistant Secretary of Central Department, 94

report of, on relief system in Holland, 99

on paid officers, 161

SENIOR (NASSAU),

member of commission of 1832, 28

SENIOR (Mrs. N.), Inspector of Central Department on boarding-out system, 223**"SEPARATE" SCHOOLS FOR PAUPER CHILDREN, 225**

similarity of, to district schools, 225

management of, 229

SETTLEMENT AND REMOVAL,

origin of, in restrictions on vagabonds, 2

established by Act of 1662, 9

in interest of rich localities, 11

early conditions of, and results, 10, 11, 12

grounds of, varied by successive laws, 12, 13

attacked by various writers including Adam Smith and Burke, 18

Act of 1795 as to, 18

certificates of origin, 18

removal restricted to cases of actual, as opposed to potential, chargeability, 18
agreement may be made (Act of 1834) to regard union as one parish for purposes of, 40

repeal of settlement by hiring and service, 43, 117

modification of other grounds of, 43

as affected by Act of 1834 (some grounds abolished), 51

exemptions from liability to removal, under Act of 1846, 52

hardships under Act of 1846, 55

cost of irremovable paupers charged to place of residence, by Acts of 1847 and 1848, 56

committee of 1847 on, 57

Bill of 1854 (abandoned) proposing to repeal power of removal, 57

further committees on, 58

period that secures irremovability reduced to three years (Act of 1861), 59

residence in one union made equivalent, as regards removability, to residence in one parish, 59

period giving irremovability reduced to one year (Act of 1865), 71

SETTLEMENT AND REMOVAL—continued.

- settlement obtainable by three years' residence (Act of 1876), 84
- Committee of 1879 on, 85
- difficulties as to Irish paupers, 86
- recommendation of committee to abolish removal, except in seaports, 86
- general sketch of development of, 101
- present state of law of, 110-121
- relief practically follows residence, 114
- entire abolition of removal, and devolution of relief on residence are only a matter of time, 112
- removal in disuse, 112
- costs of removal, 113
- penalty on inducement to change residence in order to become chargeable elsewhere, 113
- conditions barring removal, 115
- break in residence—meaning, 115
- relief to be provisionally afforded even when removal is to follow, 116
- present grounds of settlement, 116
- of illegitimate children, 116
- new settlement supersedes old one, 117
- order of removal obtainable, 118
- form of order, 119
- appeals against order, 119
- appeal to Central Department on disputed points of, 120
- recent statistics of removal, 121
- orders of removal directed by guardians, 178

SEXES,

- separation of, in workhouse (exceptions), 205

SEYFFARDT,

- on Elberfeld system, 204

SICK CLUBS, 239**SICK POOR** (*see also* MEDICAL RELIEF),

- in metropolis, chargeable to metropolitan common poor fund, 72

SMALLPOX PATIENTS,

- provision for, in metropolis, 259

SMALL TENEMENTS ACT (1858), 79**SMOKING IN WORKHOUSES,** 210**SOCIAL SCIENCE CONGRESS,** 65, 91, 92, 127, 239, 272**SPEENHAMLAND "ACT,"** 21**SPIRITUOUS LIQUOR IN WORKHOUSE,** 209

- grant of, as affected by medical relief, 238

STALLARD (Dr.),

- on regulation of private charity, 91

STANLEY'S "REMEDY,"

- pamphlet advocating workhouses, 15

STANSFELD (J.), first President of Local Government Board, 88**STATE,**

- functions of, as regards charity or relief, 127, 265

STATE RELIEF,

- development of, in connection with local administration, 102

STATISTICS

- of branches of poor law, 196, 198, 201, 202, 227, 237
- of classes of workhouse inmates, 213
- of pauper lunatics, 245
- of casual paupers, 251
- of metropolitan administration, 262
- defects in English, 195, 283, 304
- appendix on, 279

STATUTE OF CHARITABLE USES (1603), 271

STATUTE OF MORTMAIN (OF 1736), 271

STURGES BOURNE,

- Acts introduced by (1818 and 1819), 23
- member of commission of 1832, 28

SUPERANNUATION AND PENSIONS ACT OF 1864, 69

SUPERINTENDENT OF LABOUR, 160, 197

SUPERINTENDENT OF OUTDOOR RELIEF, 133

SUPERINTENDENT OF VAGRANTS, 160

T.

TECHNICAL INSTRUCTION OF PAUPER CHILDREN, 230

TOWNLEY (Rev. J.),

- dissertation on the poor laws, 17

TRAINING-SHIPS, 226

TREASURER OF UNION, 160, 192

TREVELYAN (Sir C.),

- advocacy of dispensaries, 237

TRUANT SCHOOL, 232

TUFNELL, Inspector of Central Department,
on education of pauper children, 98, 221, 223

TURNER (C. T. R.),

- on the poor law in the metropolis, 127, 262

TWINING (Miss L.),

- on poor law administration, 65

U.

UNIFORMITY OF SYSTEM IN ENGLAND,

- advantages of, 263

UNION,

- permitted under Gilbert's Act, 20
- number of, under Gilbert's Act, 21
- power of Central Department to form, 39
- contributions to fund of, 40
- may be regarded as one parish for purposes of removal, 40
- may be regarded as one parish for purposes of rating, 40
- systematic formation of, 45
- principles of constitution of, 45

UNION—*continued.*

- varieties in size, population, and number of guardians of, 45, 125
- often overlaps county boundary, 46
- extension of power of Central Department as to a, formed under a local Act, 51
- under local Acts, continuance of, 51
- tendency to transfer charges to common fund of, 56, 125
- parishes to contribute to common fund of, according to rateable value (1861), 59
- cost of pauper lunatics charged to common fund, 59
- Union Chargeability Act (1865) making all costs of relief chargeable to common fund of, 70
- further powers of Central Department as to alteration of, 84, 126
- may be combined for special purpose, 85
- number of unions, 122

UNION ASSESSMENT ACT (1880), 80**UNION ASSESSMENT COMMITTEE ACT (1862), 64****UNION ASSESSMENT COMMITTEE,**

- constitution and functions of, as to poor rate, 154, 184

UNION CHARGEABILITY ACT (1865), 70**UNION RELIEF AID ACT (1862), 67****UNITED STATES,**

- emigration to, 201

UNLICENSED HOUSES (FOR LUNATICS), 243**V.****VAGRANTS,**

- repressive laws against, 2, 248
- distinction between classes of, 2
- marked by branding, 5
- Vagrants Act (1824), 25
- division of, into three classes, 25
- regulation of, and penalties on, for refusal to work, 25
- penal laws against special classes of, extended in 1871 and 1882, 82
- children of, sent to industrial schools, 232
- difficulty of defining term, 247
- difficulty in securing conviction of, 248
- work required from, in workhouse, 249
- effect of enforcement of task on, 249
- regulations as to discharge of, 249
- habitual, 253
- "way-tickets" for, 254

VALUATION (*see* ASSESSMENTS).**VALUATION LISTS, 155-158****VALUATION OF PROPERTY (METROPOLIS) ACT, 1869, 76, 156, 257****VESTRY (SELECT), 23, 25****VILLIERS (C. P.),** President of Central Department,
motion of, for Committee in 1861, 66**VISITING COMMITTEE OF GUARDIANS (FOR WORKHOUSE), 184, 208****VISITORS OF LUNATIC ASYLUMS, 244**

- VISITORS OF POORHOUSES (UNDER GILBERT'S ACT),** 20
VISITS OF FRIENDS OF WORKHOUSE INMATES, 210
VOLUNTEER POOR LAW OFFICERS, 267
VOTING QUALIFICATIONS FOR ELECTION OF GUARDIANS, 181, 182
 establishment of uniformity in, 49
 limitations on votes exercisable by one man, 186

W.

- WAGES,**
 depression of, on account of allowance system, 21
 bills to regulate (abandoned), 22
 effect of regulation of, 30
 depressed, in some cases below income of recipients of relief, 31
 relief not to be given in aid of, 133
 influence of relief on, 203
WALKER (T.),
 observations on pauperism, 27
WALKER (W. S.),
 on poor law administration, 65
WARWICK (R. E.),
 on poor law administration, 65
"WAY-TICKETS,"
 for casual paupers, 254
WHEAT,
 statistics of price of, 285
WHITBREAD,
 bill to regulate wages, 22
WHITECHAPEL UNION,
 treatment of vagrants in, 253
 treatment of outdoor paupers in, 262
 work of Charity Organization Society in, 275
 expenditure in, 301
WILLIAMS (E.),
 on workhouse labour, 217
WITNESSES,
 examination by inspector of Central Department, 174
WODEHOUSE (E. H.),
 Reports as Inspector of Central Department, 93, 94, 204, 256
WOMEN AS GUARDIANS, 182, 187, 188
 first elected in 1875, 187
WORKHOUSE,
 origin of, as "poorhouse," 7
 poorhouses permissive, 7
 first workhouse at Bristol, 1697, 15
 success of early workhouses, 15, 16
 legislation encouraging (1723), 16
 under Gilbert's Act, 20
 powers of select vestries as to, 24
 fault found with existing workhouses by commission of 1832, 29

WORKHOUSE—*continued.*

- erection, alteration, loans for, and administration under control of Central Department, 39
- provided for union, and cost chargeable to common fund, 39, 40
- visitation of, by magistrates, 41
- limits of detention of lunatics in, 41
- married couples in, 54
- opinions as to proper use of, 65
- classification of paupers in, requisite (Committee of 1862), 68
- some set apart for special purposes in metropolis, 73, 96
- affords a test of destitution, 132
- action of Central Department in encouraging provision of, 132
- admission to, may in all cases be selected by guardians as modes of relief, 134
- conditions precedent to erection or alteration of, 167
- arguments for and against use of, as opposed to outdoor relief, 203
- condition of those who become inmates of, 205
- separation of sexes in (exceptions), 205
- size of, 207
- regulations as to administration of, 207
- terms of admission to, 208
- classification of inmates of, 208
- discipline and diet of inmates of, 209
- religious services in, 211
- employment of inmates of, 211, 215
- leave of absence, and discharge from, 211, 212
- punishments in, 212
- statistics of inmates of, 213
- criticism on management of, 214 *et seq.*

WORKHOUSE LABOUR,

- defects of system of, 215

WORKHOUSE SCHOOLS, 97, 220

- advantages and disadvantages of, 227

WORKHOUSE TEST, 204



WORKS PUBLISHED

BY

Knight & Company.



Index to Subjects.

	PAGE		PAGE
Adulteration—Law on	11	Medical Officers of Health	27
Agricultural Holdings Act..	12	Minute Book, Union	16
Annual Publications.....	35	Mortgage Registers	31
Arbitrations	16	Municipal Law.....	16,19
Artizans' Dwellings	22	Nuisances	14,22
Assessment	14, 32	Overseers	20,32
Bakehouses	12	Parish Dictionary	20
Bankruptcy	11	Parochial Cash Book	23
Ballot Act	27	Pauper Education.....	21
Beer Dealers Act	14	Police	17
Boarding Out.....	31	Poor Law Amendment Act	12,27
Bookkeeping for Institutions	27	,, Accounts	30,31
Bye-Laws	15	,, Conferences	29
,, Sanitary	24	,, Officers, Manuals	25,31
,, Highway	24	,, Orders	12
Burial	15	,, System, Elberfeld	32
Canal Boats	26	Poor Removal	32
Casual Poor Act	31	Prisons	22
Churchwardens	26	Provision Tables	12
Circulars of Local Gov. Brd.	36	Public Baths	27
Clergy.....	23	,, Health	13,18
Costs—Law of	12	Rate Reckoners	16,33
Diary—Official	35	Rating	29
Divided Parishes	16	,, of Machinery	23
Education Law.....	21,24	Returning Officer—Duties of	11
Elections — Parliamentary		Registration of Voters	11,18
and Municipal	11,32	,, Births and Deaths	28
,, Local Boards	31	Relief	25,32
,, Guardians	19	Rivers Pollution	24
Electric Lighting	18	Sanitary Law.....	13
Epidemic Diseases	34	,, Hints	22
Explosives	28	School Attendance	11
Highways	13	,, Board Law	21
Highway Accounts	30	,, ,, Accounts	30
,, Surveyors	19	Sewerage	19
House Invasion.....	20	Sinking Funds	16
Inspector of Nuisances	14	Statutes	39
Interments Act	15	Trade Marks	15
Legislation	32	Tables :—	
Licensing	14,15,17	Acreage, &c.	33
Loans	14,16	Dates	32
Local Government.....	13,15,31	Loans	33
,, Board	36,37	Rates and Taxes	33
,, Orders	20	Ready Reckoner	33
,, Directory	35	Union and Parish Dictionary	20
Local Board Minute Book.	11	Vaccination	22
Lunacy	25	Weights and Measures.....	17
Magistrates' Pocket Guide	13	Workhouses	28
Marriage.....	20		

RECENT WORKS.

The Representation of the People Act, 1884 :

With Notes by O. B. C. HARRISON, Barrister-at-Law. Price 5s.

The Registration Act, 1885 :

With an Analytical Index by O. B. C. HARRISON, Barrister-at-Law
Price 4s. 6d.

The Law on Adulteration :

Being the Sale of Food and Drugs Acts, 1875-79. By THOMAS
HERBERT. Price 5s.

An Exemplification of the Local Board Minute Book :

By GEORGE HASLEHURST, District Auditor. Price 3s. 6d.

The Powers and Duties of an Election Agent and of a Returning Officer at a Parlia- mentary Election in England or Wales :

By FRANCIS R. PARKER, Solicitor and Parliamentary Agent.
Price 26s.

The School Attendance Guide :

A handbook for the use of the members and officers of Local
Authorities engaged in the work of Compulsory Education. By
J. HEPBURN HUME, Clerk to the Ipswich School Board.
Price 3s. 6d.

The Bankruptcy Act, 1883 :

A complete Guide to the Practice under the above-mentioned Statute,
with copious Notes, and a full Index. By F. ROXBURGH, M.A.,
Barrister-at-Law. Price 12s. 6d.

KNIGHT & CO., 90 FLEET STREET.

Poor Law Orders :

The Orders of the Local Government Board. By W. C. GLEN, late Principal of the Legal Department of the Local Government Board. New Edition by W. C. GLEN, and R. C. GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Barristers-at-Law. Price 30s. 0d.

A Treatise on the Law of Costs in an Action in the Queen's Bench Division, and in the Court of Appeal :

Under the Judicature Acts, and New Rules of the Supreme Court. By WILLIAM EDWARD GORDON, M.A., of the Middle Temple, Barrister-at-Law. Price 15s.

The Sanitary Regulation of Bakehouses :

By the Author of the Local Loans of England and Wales.

Price 4s. 6d.

By the operation of the Factory and Workshop Act, 1883, the duty of inspecting Retail Bakehouses was transferred from the Inspector of Factories to the Medical Officer of Health, and a proper acquaintance with the clauses of this Act, so far as they relate to the subject of Retail Bakehouses, is now a necessity for the officials of Local Authorities.

The Landlord and Farmer's Guide to the Agricultural Holdings (England) Act, 1883 :

With explanatory Notes, Index, and a Paper on the value of Artificial Manures. By JAS. B. HUTCHINS, late of the Local Government Board.

This Work is a Practical Guide intended for the use of both Landlords and Farmers who are desirous of availing themselves of the provisions of the above Statute. The Notes are written in a clear and lucid manner, legal phraseology being as far as possible avoided, cross references are given wherever necessary, and an analytical Index completes the work. Price 4s. 6d.

Workhouse Provision Tables :

Sanctioned by the Local Government Board, for calculating the quantity of Provisions consumed by any number of persons according to Workhouse Dietary, and also the loss incurred in cooking, cutting, and weighing provisions, &c. Price 1s.

Poor Law Amendment Act, 1876 :

By E. LUMLEY.

Price 2s.

The Law of Public Health & Local Government, Tenth Edition.

Embracing the Public Health Consolidation Act, 1875, and all other Acts giving Powers to Local Authorities. By W. CUNNINGHAM GLEN, late Principal of the Legal Department of the Local Government Board, and ALEX. GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Barristers-at-Law.

Price 45s. *od.*

Law Times.—"There is no book on the subject bearing any comparison with this one by Mr. Glen. . . . The work must be considered absolutely complete."

Public Health.—"We cannot speak in too high terms of Mr. Glen's 'Law of Public Health.' It affords throughout evidence of the care and accuracy with which it has been compiled, and which, with the vast amount of information given, renders it an indispensable guide. An index, extending over eighty pages, facilitates reference to any part of this *magnum opus*."

The Law relating to Highways:

By W. CUNNINGHAM GLEN, late Senior Legal Assistant to the Local Government Board, and ALEXANDER GLEN, M.A., LL.B., of the Midland Circuit, Barristers-at-Law.

Price 42s. Cloth; 48s. Law Calf.

BOOK I.—The Common Law relating to Highways.

CHAPTER I. The several kinds of Highways.—CHAPTER II. The Creation of Highways.—CHAPTER III. Rights in respect of Highways.—CHAPTER IV. The Liability to Repair Highways.—CHAPTER V. Enforcement of the Repair of Highways.—CHAPTER VI. Public Nuisances in connection with Highways.—CHAPTER VII. Abatement of Nuisances in connection with Highways.—CHAPTER VIII. Private Injuries in connection with Highways.

BOOK II.—The Statute Law in relation to Highways, including all the Statutes on the Subject from the 5 & 6 Will. IV., c. 50, to the present time, with voluminous Notes and Cases on the several sections.

Times.—"A work of no ordinary research and erudition . . . a model of industry and completeness."

The Magistrate's Pocket Guide:

A Key to the diverse knowledge which must be acquired by an efficient Justice of the Peace. By T. BAKER, of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-Law.

Price 2s. 6d.

City Press.—"An extremely useful little work. The information is well arranged, and is given in a singularly small compass."

Leicester Daily Post.—"Sets forth in a singularly brief and useful form the various statutes justices may enforce, and the penalties they may inflict. A more useful legal handy book has seldom been published than this work."

Brief.—"An admirable compilation . . . The information is clearly given."

Sussex Daily News.—"Very completely what it professes to be . . . Has put the magisterial law into a nutshell."

Practical Guide for Inspectors of Nuisances :

By F. R. WILSON, Inspector for the Rural Sanitary Authority of the Union of Alnwick, etc.: Fellow and Silver Medallist of the Royal Institute of British Architects; Diocesan Surveyor for the Archdeaconry of Lindisfarne; Chairman of the Burial Board, Alnwick, &c.

CONTENTS.—Introduction. Chapter I.—On the Origin and Institution of the Office of Inspector of Nuisances, with the General Orders of the Local Government Board concerning the Duties of Inspectors of Urban Sanitary Authorities, and of the Duties of Inspectors of Rural Sanitary Authorities. Chapter II.—The Duties and the Manner of their Performance considered. Chapter III.—The Fourteen Regulations of the General Orders examined. Chapter IV.—On Sewerage and Drainage. Chapter V.—Privies, Waterclosets, &c., Offensive Ditches and Collections of Matter. Chapter VI.—Scavenging and Cleansing. Chapter VII.—Water Supply. Chapter VIII.—Common Lodging-houses and Cellars. Chapter IX.—Houses unfit for Human Habitation. Chapter X.—Infectious Diseases and Disinfection. Chapter XI.—Slaughter-houses. Chapter XII.—Streets and Buildings. Chapter XIII.—Salaries of Inspectors of Nuisances. INDEX.

Price 4s. 6d.

The Law relating to "Off" Licenses :

Containing the Beer Dealers Retail Licenses Act, 1880, with Explanatory Notes; preceded by an Introduction describing the Law with regard to all "Off" Licenses, with Reports of Decided Cases, &c. By GEORGE CRISPE WHITELEY, M.A., Cantab., Barrister-at-Law.

Price 1s. 6d.

Fry's Assessment Acts. Seventh Edition :

The Union Assessment Acts, 1862 to 1880, and The Rating Act, 1874; with Introduction, Notes, Circulars of the Poor Law Board and Local Government Board, Digest of Decided Cases, and Index. By R. CUNNINGHAM GLEN, M.A., LL.B., and ANDREW DOUGLAS LAWRIE, M.A., Barristers-at-Law.

In the present edition all the statutes and enactments relating to the subject are included, together with a Digest of the Decided Cases. All the Circulars issued by the Poor Law Board and Local Government Board with reference to these Acts are given; and such additions have been made to the Introduction and the Notes as seemed to be requisite to bring the information down to the present time.

Price 12s. 6d.

Poor Law Loans :

A Digest of the Statutes relating to Poor Law Loans, with *Précis*, Notes, and Index.

Price 8s. 6d.

This Volume contains, in the form of a digest, all the provisions of the law relating to Loans; these provisions which are not only numerous but somewhat complicated, are now first published in a form which will enable Guardians, School Managers, Churchwardens, Overseers, &c., to acquaint themselves readily with all that is necessary for their guidance in raising loans.

A Local Board Manual:

By OWEN HARRIES, Solicitor.

Price 4s. 6d.

This work furnishes information as to the Appointment and Duties of Officers of Local Boards, with a Schedule giving the Salaries of the several Officers, the Annual Expenditure, and other information in respect to 478 Local Boards.

The Laws relating to Burials. Fifth Edition:

With Notes, Forms, and Practical Instructions, including the several Statutes on the subject, and the Scotch and Irish Acts. By T. BAKER, Barrister-at-Law.

Price 8s.

Law of Burials for Sanitary Authorities.

Containing the Interments Act, 1879 (Public Health Amendment), the Cemeteries Clauses Act, 1847, and compendious Abstracts of other Incorporated Statutes. With Notes, Practical Suggestions, and Index. By T. BAKER, Esq., of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-Law.

Price 5s.

The Law of Bye Laws:

With an Appendix containing the Model Bye Laws issued by the Local Government Board, the Board of Trade, and the Education Department. By the late W. G. LUMLEY, LL.M., Q.C., Counsel to the Local Government Board, and to the Education Department.

Price 10s.

Law Times.—"Should be in the hands of all whose duty it is to make and enforce Bye Laws."

Saturday Review.—"The arrangement appears to us peculiarly good . . . No body having the power to frame Bye Laws need be at a loss as to the proper manner of carrying out its task. Mr. Lumley is therefore to be congratulated on having hit upon and ably treated a hitherto almost untouched branch of the law and one which is also of considerable and daily increasing importance."

The Law of Trade Marks:

CONTENTS—1. Of the Nature of a Trade Mark—2. What will, and what will not, constitute a Trade Mark—3. Of Infringement of Trade Marks—4. Of Fraud in respect of, or connected with, Trade Marks—The Trade Marks Registration Act, 1875—5. The Trade Marks Registration Acts—6. Order in Council—Rules under the Acts—Instructions as to Registration of Trade Marks—Index. By C. STEWART-DREWRY, of the Inner Temple, Barrister-at-Law.

Price 3s. 6d.

Law Times.—"A clear summary of the law relating to Trade Marks."

Metropolitan.—"A valuable treatise on the subject, which is unusually interesting."

Licensing Cases:

A Digest of Licensing Cases. By CHARLES FORTESCUE, Solicitor.

Price 3s. 6d.

An Exemplification and Guide to the keeping

of a Minute Book of a Board of Guardians, Union Assessment Committee, Rural Sanitary Authority, and School Attendance Committee, under General Order of the Local Government Board of 14th January, 1867; the Union Assessment Committee Act, the Elementary Education Acts, and the Public Health Acts. By JAMES WARREN. Price 4s. 6d.

The Municipal Elections (Corrupt and Illegal Practices) Act, 1884:

With Notes and Index.

Price 5s.

Turner's Poor Improvement, Sanitary, Highway, and General Rate Reckoners:

For use of Overseers, Vestry Clerks, Assistant Overseers, Collectors of Poor Rates, Town Clerks, Clerks to Local Boards, Borough Accountants, Highway Surveyors, Estate Agents, and others.

Specially designed to meet the wants of Parishes, &c., where fractional parts of a £ occur in the Rateable value column of the Rate Book. [In the Press.]

The Practical Arbitrator:

Containing the Principles of the Law of Arbitrations, Awards, Evidence, and Contracts. By CHARLES JACKSON, Surveyor and Arbitrator. Price 6s.

Saturday Review.—"A useful treatise on arbitration, which is the result of careful study."

Architect.—"In style and arrangement this treatise is a model of a book of reference. It has been produced by Messrs Knight & Co. in that style which distinguishes their legal books from all others intended for lay readers, and it bids fair to become a standard authority."

Iron.—"Containing much useful information to the professional, but more especially for the lay arbitrator."

Economist.—"This work is of a handy size. The writer has had many years experience as an arbitrator himself."

Estates Gazette.—"We commend the work to those who desire to stand high in their profession."

The Local Loans of England and Wales:

Being an exposition of the Law relating to the Borrowing of Money by Local Authorities, together with other practical information with respect to Local Securities. Price 21s.

Weekly Official Intelligence.—"Calculated to prove of great value to local authorities in their borrowings, and investors in their lendings."

Law Times.—"Contains a large amount of useful information conveniently grouped."

Metropolitan.—"Invaluable to local authorities."

The Police Manual. Ninth Edition :

A store of useful information for Police Officers, Magistrates, Tradesmen, Licensed Victuallers, and all persons interested in the operation of the Criminal Law ; conveying directions on points of duty and practice, with a Digest of Statutes in plain terms. By P. B. BICKNELL, Chief Constable for Lincolnshire.

Price 3s. 6d.

The Law relating to Weights, Measures, and Weighing Machines :

Including the Weights and Measures Consolidation Act, 1878, with Notes thereon, Reports of Decided Cases, &c. By GEORGE C. WHITELEY, M.A., Cantab., Barrister-at-Law. Price 6s.

Morning Post.—"Mr. Whiteley is exceptionally competent to treat this subject, the book contains all possible information with regard to the Weights and Measures Act. We cordially recommend it."

Law Times.—"It is obvious that the subject of this work is a most practical one, and could not have a better expounder than Mr. Whiteley. The notes, which are copious and useful, are well written ; they show industry, research, and an acquaintance with the subject."

Morning Advertiser.—"An exhaustive treatise, especially important in many respects to the licensed victualler."

Liverpool Daily Courier.—"A very useful book. A more serviceable book has seldom come under our observation."

Freemason.—"The book is not only necessary for the Justices of the Peace, and authorities who are called on to adjudicate, but will be a valuable help to inspectors."

Magnet.—"The copious notes are clear and intelligent, and fully develop the subject."

Camberwell and Peckham Times.—"Trade in general owes a debt to the author of this comprehensive work."

News of the World.—"Every person engaged in trade should make himself acquainted with this exceedingly interesting volume."

Scotsman.—"A very handy guide and book of reference on the whole subject."

Daily Chronicle.—"This is an excellent handbook on the whole subject."

The Licensing Laws. Second Edition :

The five Licensing Acts are arranged so as to form one comprehensive statute, with copious explanatory notes, with an introduction giving a full description of the Licensing System, and an appendix of statutes ; the whole forming a complete handbook. By G. C. WHITELEY, M.A., Cantab., and F. J. LOWE, LL.M., Barristers-at-Law. Price 8s. 6d.

Law Times.—"A decidedly creditable and useful publication."

Cambridge Chronicle.—"A complete treatise upon the Licensing Laws which it simplifies and explains."

Manchester Guardian.—"Very carefully done . . . especially valuable."

Morning Advertiser.—"The arrangement is excellent, and the value of Mr. Whiteley's opinions cannot be over-estimated."

The Law.—"Mr. Whiteley's work will be most serviceable."

Standard.—"This is a perfect and exhaustive treatise on the whole of the Licensing Laws."

Nicoll and Flaxman's Law of Parliamentary and Municipal Registration. Third Edition :

Embracing the Registration Act, 1885, &c. ; with an Introduction, Notes, Useful Tables, the most Important Decisions given in Appeal Cases from the Revision Courts, and a full Index. By ARTHUR JOHN FLAXMAN and A. D. LAWRIE, M.A., Barristers-at-Law. Price 10s. 6d.

From A. G. Marten, Esq., Q.C., M.P.—"A very excellent work ; reflecting great credit on the editor."

From Francis H. Bacon, Esq., of Lincoln's Inn, Revising Barrister.—"A very useful work, and one which was very much wanted."

Law Times.—"A singularly compendious and well-arranged work."

Law Journal.—"Mr. Flaxman has accomplished his task in a manner that does him very great credit."

Solicitor's Journal.—"The plan of the book appears to be well conceived."

From J. Hurrell, Esq., Revising Barrister for Surrey.—"I find it a most valuable and practical work."

Second Notice.—"We have now before us a second edition, and we conjecture, therefore, that public opinion has been in accordance with our own."

Second Notice.—"A very handy book for reference."

Law Magazine.—"The law is well and concisely set out."

Second Notice.—"To the Revising Barrister, as well as to the Overseer or other Registration Officer this new edition will commend itself."

The Electric Lighting Act, 1882 :

And Acts incorporated therewith, together with the Rules of the Board of Trade under the Act, with Notes, &c. By WILLIAM CUNNINGHAM GLEN, and ALEX. GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Cantab., Barristers-at-Law. Price 5s.

Rules under Electric Lighting Act, 1882 :

Made by the Board of Trade (Oct. 1882) with respect to Applications for Licenses and Provisional Orders, &c., with copious Notes and Explanations. By ALEXANDER GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Cantab., Barrister-at-Law. Price 1s.

Cheap Edition of the Public Health Statutes :

Containing the Public Health Consolidated Act, 1875 ; the Rivers Pollution Act, 1876 ; the Public Health (Water) Act, 1878 ; and the Public Health (Interments) Act, 1879. and Amending Acts to close of Session of 1885 ; with an Index by F. STRATTON, Solicitor. A well-printed portable volume, bound in limp cloth. Price 4s. 6d.

Metropolitan.—"This is a successful attempt on the part of the Publishers to produce at a moderate price and handy in size, the statutes above mentioned. The idea is a happy one. It is the most compact form in which we have seen the very lengthy Public Health Act, and the book is easy for reference."

The Highway Surveyor. Second Edition.

A Handbook showing the Powers and Duties of Surveyors of Highways, and of other Authorities having the management of Highways. By R. C. GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Barrister-at-Law.

Price 5s. 0d.

NEW EDITION. BY AUTHORITY.

Sewerage, Drainage, and Water Supply :

Suggestions as to, with Eighteen Coloured Lithographic Plates. By Sir ROBERT RAWLINSON, C.B., Chief Engineering Inspector to the Local Government Board.

Price 3s. paper covers, 4s. 6d. strongly bound.

Sewerage, Drainage, and Water Supply :

Ten Detailed Drawings, supplemental to the Suggestions described above. By Sir ROBERT RAWLINSON, C.B., Chief Engineering Inspector to the Local Government Board. Price 2s. each.

SEWERING.—1. Plans and Sections of Man-holes and Lamp-holes—2. Plans and Sections of Sewer, &c., on a steep gradient—3. Plans and Sections for Ventilating and Flushing—4. Plans and Sections for Flushing Chamber, Gates, &c.—5. Section of Outlet on Coast or Tidal River where there is a steep cliff—6. Plan and Section of ditto on a flat shore—7. Sections and Details of Balanced Tidal-flap for Main Sewer Outfall.

WATER SUPPLY.—8. Plan of Service Reservoir—9. Sections of the same—10. Plan, Sections, and Details of Service Tank, &c.

Descriptive Text to accompany the above.

Price 3d.

Election of Guardians. Second Edition :

A Guide to the Practice at Elections of Guardians of the Poor, containing the Statutory Enactments, the Orders of the Local Government Board, including that of 1877. By DANBY P. FRY, Barrister-at-Law.

Price 5s.

The Municipal Corporations Act, 1882 :

And provisions of the Ballot Act and Corrupt Practices Prevention Acts, applicable to Municipal Elections, and other Statutes, with Notes. By HUGH OWEN, of the Middle Temple, Barrister-at-Law.

Price 12s. 6d.

Times.—"Mr. Owen's edition of this Act is probably the best, as it certainly is the most thorough, that has yet appeared."

Citizen.—"As a work of reference Mr. Owen has made it complete."

Law Times.—"This is a book which should be in every lawyer's library, and will be found indispensable by every Town Clerk."

Union and Parish Dictionary. Second Edition :

CONTENTS—Part I. Unions and Parishes under separate Boards of Guardians, with List of the Parishes of which each Union consists.—Part II. List of Towns composed of two or more separate Parishes.—Part III. List of Parishes, Townships, Hamlets, &c.—showing the Population, Poor Law Unions, and Petty Sessional Division in which each is comprised. Price 10s.

House Invasion and Defence :

By C. W. LOVESY, M.A., Oxon., J.P. for the County of Gloucester, and late Judge of the Supreme Court of British Guiana. This work is intended to show what a householder may or may not legally do in defence of his house, and is a commentary upon the somewhat treacherous maxim, "Every man's house is his castle."

Price 2s.

Manual for Overseers, Assistant Overseers, Collectors, & Vestry Clerks. Eighth Edition :

Containing full and plain Instructions as to their Duties and the mode of Keeping their Accounts. By Sir HUGH OWEN, K.C.B., Barrister-at-Law. Price 5s. 0d.

Metropolitan.—"A clear and succinct guide as to what to do and how to do it."

Stamford Mercury.—"A very useful work."

Iron.—"Like all Manuals issued by the same firm every care has been taken to make the work a valuable addition to the best books of reference."

Bookseller.—"A useful Manual to parochial officers."

Builder.—"Has taken its place as a valuable handbook."

Marriage: its Legal Effect on Property :

By FRANCIS ROXBURGH, Jun., B.A., LL.M., Barrister-at-Law.

Price 1s.

The Education Acts Manual. Sixteenth Edition :

Embracing the Education Acts, 1870, 1873, 1874, and 1876.

By Sir HUGH OWEN, K.C.B., Barrister-at-Law,

Demy 8vo., 15s.

School Board Chronicle.—"Crammed with information, always to the point, and always correct."

Notice of the 13th Edition.—"Our readers know well our opinion of the supreme excellence of Owen's Manual."

Notice of the 14th Edition.—"Is the very model of all that such a book should be."

Morning Post.—"We may fairly commend it to our readers as the standard work on this important subject."

The Standard.—"Well arranged, and full of the most instructive information."

Second Notice.—"Exceedingly well carried out."

Daily News.—"A well-arranged, clear, and comprehensive exposition."

Law Times.—"Thoroughly deserves the large measure of popular favour which it has received."

Law Magazine.—"Ought to find its way into the hands of all who, whether as employers of labour, or as interested in education, find it necessary to have at hand the best information on the Law."

Builder.—"The accuracy and utility of the work are testified by the number of editions through which it has already passed."

Western Daily Press.—"Clear and intelligible . . . A complete *vade mecum*."

Second Notice.—"One of the most useful manuals we have seen."

Churchman.—"It is very comprehensive."

The Tablet.—"One of the most perfect and authoritative of its kind."

The Record.—"An intelligible compendium."

The Rock.—"A valuable and well-timed exposition."

Second Notice.—"All that anyone can need to know respecting the Education Acts is set forth in a clear and comprehensive manner."

Nonconformist.—"Clear, compact, and exhaustive."

Local Government Chronicle.—"The edition now before us will be found as indispensable as its predecessors."

Metropolitan.—"Mr. Owen has smoothed away difficulties."

Second Notice.—"The fact that this work has reached its eighth edition shows how much the valuable labours of Mr. Owen are appreciated."

Windsor Express.—"Possesses a degree of authority which no other work can obtain."

Education League Paper.—"It is the fullest, and most complete Hand-book."

The Bookseller.—"Will be found of value by every Board."

Examiner.—"Deserving of a favourable recognition."

Carnarvon Herald.—"We advise all interested in Education to possess it."

Facts and Fallacies of Pauper Education :

By WALTER R. BROWNE, M.A., late Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge.

Price 4d. or 3s. per dozen.

Metropolitan.—"Every Guardian and every ratepayer in the three kingdoms ought to read this invaluable pamphlet, which contains a world of information in a small compass."

The Law relating to Vaccination. Sixth Edition :

Comprising the Vaccination Acts, the Instructional Circulars, Orders, and Regulations issued by Authority. With Introduction, Notes, and Index. By DANBY P. FRY, Barrister-at-Law. Price 5s.

Sanitary Record.—"This handy volume contains a complete *vade mecum* for the use of all who are in any way concerned in the administration of the Vaccination Acts. The present edition, like all Mr. Fry's works, is an admirable digest."

The Law.—"Of great practical utility; a reliable guide, brought down to the present time and the most recent decisions carefully noted. It is of a handy size, and well got up in every respect."

Builder.—"The Book is a useful one."

Standard.—"A very compendious and useful Manual."

City Press.—"The Law is clearly stated."

Birmingham Morning Post.—"Of inestimable service."

Bristol Mercury.—"Its usefulness as a guide must be obvious."

Public Health.—"A thoroughly complete handbook."

Metropolitan.—"The best Manual extant on the subject."

Removal of Nuisances :

Being Practical Hints to Householders, and Officers and Members of Sanitary Authorities. This work supplies useful information as to the law on the subject, written in plain language and adapted either for the professional or general reader. Price 6d., or 1s. in cloth.

City Press.—"Will be found useful in many emergencies."

Medical Examiner.—"A handy Guide for the Public Health Official whose legal knowledge is frequently and unexpectedly taxed."

Artizans' & Labourers' Dwellings Acts. Second Edition :

By ALEX. GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Cantab., of the Middle Temple, Barrister-at-Law. The Introduction to the volume forms a summary of the provisions of the Statutes of 1875 and 1879; the Index and Table of Contents extend to 25 pages; and at the end is added a collection of Forms required under the Act. Price 3s. 6d.

Standard.—"A very valuable Guide."

Law Times.—"An extremely useful and handy Guide."

DEDICATED BY PERMISSION TO THE SECRETARY OF STATE FOR THE HOME DEPARTMENT.

The Law of Prisons in England and Wales :

Containing an Analysis of the Law, together with the Statutes now in force relating to Prisons, including the Prisons Act, 1877; and the New Prison Rules, 1878. By ROBERT WILKINSON, M.A., Cantab., of Lincoln's Inn, Barrister-at-Law. Price 6s.

Law Times.—"An examination of this volume has satisfied us that it has been compiled with great care and discrimination, and it cannot fail to prove a most useful guide on the subject with which it deals."

Saturday Review.—"Mr. Wilkinson has prepared a volume of great completeness, which contains the Prisons Acts of 1865 and 1877, with an analysis of these Acts, and selections from other Acts still in force on the subject, to which are added some valuable notes, and a full index."

Metropolitan.—"Mr. Wilkinson has, in order to make it complete, supplied selections from other Acts, numerous notes, and a full elaborate index, which will enable any point to be discovered in a moment. The book is very clearly printed, is of a handy size, and will no doubt become a *vade mecum* with all who have to work under the Acts."

A Legal Guide for the Clergy. Second Edition :

With Appendix of recent Statutes, and the Judgment of the Final Court on the Appeal of Mr. Ridsdale. By R. DENNY URLIN, of the Middle Temple, Barrister-at-Law. Price 4s. 6d.

Guardian.—"The contents of this book are clearly set out, and concisely expressed. . . . In conclusion, we must say, this is a very conveniently arranged and cheap book."

Saturday Review.—"Will save clergymen from the pitfalls offered by ignorance of the law and inability to get information in a compendious form."

Spectator.—"Laymen may learn a good deal from its pages. A concise view of the law."

Literary Churchman.—"For a handy guide to the chief facts, nothing can be better. It incorporates bodily the important ecclesiastical statutes of the last few years."

Law Times.—"A useful and accurate work, suited by reason of its arrangement to the ordinary clergyman."

DEDICATED, BY PERMISSION, TO THE LORD BISHOP OF TRURO.

The Parochial Cash Book :

Designed to facilitate the Keeping of Accounts by Clergymen and Churchwardens. This work has been prepared with a view to aiding the adoption of a simple system of Accounts for every parish ; it is arranged in a tabular form with printed headings, and shows the following items :—RECEIPTS—Offertories, Voluntary Gifts, Endowments, other Receipts. EXPENDITURE—I. Clergy, Lay-helpers, Church Fabric, Church Services, Day Schools, Sunday Schools, Sick and Poor, Clubs ; II. Religious Instruction, Home Missions, Training College ; III. Hospitals, Foreign Missions, Sundries. Each Book contains 50 openings, showing the foregoing particulars, and 18 Forms of Annual Balance Sheets.

(*Specimen Sheets sent on receipt of Six Stamps.*) Price 8s.

Local Taxation and the Rating of Machinery. Second Edition.

By THOMAS F. HEDLEY.

Price 10s. 6d.

Railway News.—"The work is an extremely useful one."

Mining Journal.—"Will do much to avoid disputes in future."

Colliery Guardian.—"A book of much value."

Mining World.—"A useful addition to any mining library."

Timber Trades' Journal.—"From it can be learnt all that is necessary as to liability to rating."

Birmingham Gazette.—"Mr. Hedley has placed the great body of local taxpayers under an obligation."

Supplement to the above, price 4s. 6d.

KNIGHT & CO., 90 FLEET STREET.

The Education Act, 1876. Fourth Edition :

With an Introduction, Annotations, and Index, and an Appendix containing the provisions of the Factory Acts as to the Attendance of Children at School, Regulations of the Education Department, and Specimen Bye Laws. By HUGH OWEN, Barrister-at-Law, author of "The Education Acts Manual," Sixteenth Edition.

Price 4s. 6d.

Pall Mall Gazette.—"An exceedingly useful and convenient edition. It can hardly fail to be of great service to those upon whom the new Act has imposed so many new and important duties in which they are engaged."

Knight's Annotated Model Bye-Laws of the Local Government Board. Second Edition :

Relating to—I. Cleansing of Privies, &c.—II. Nuisances.—III. Common Lodging-Houses —IV. New Streets and Buildings.—V. Slaughter-houses. With Diagrams and approved additional Clauses. The object and scope of each clause is fully explained, and diagrams are added where necessary to the elucidation of the text.

Price 10s. 6d.

Building News.—"A considerable acquisition to officers of Local Authorities."

Builder.—"Sanitary Authorities will benefit from the information it affords."

Sanitary Record.—"In all but the title, an official publication."

British Architect.—"We heartily commend this cheap little work to all Sanitary Authorities."

Model Bye-Laws for Sanitary Authorities :

Issued by the Local Government Board; together with the Letters of the Board relating thereto. Sold separately in 16 parts, or in one volume, price 6s.

Model Byelaws for Highways :

Issued by the Local Government Board. Price 6d., or 5s. per doz.

The Law as to the Pollution of Rivers :

Embracing The Rivers Pollution Prevention Act, 1876.

By ALEX. GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Cantab., Barrister-at-Law.

Price 2s. 6d.

Saturday Review.—"Mr. Glen has produced a compact analysis of the law as to the pollution of rivers, showing the new powers given to authorities, and to private persons."

Manchester Guardian.—"Local authorities have an excellent guide to their duties in Mr. Glen's compendious text-book."

Iron.—"The Legal Manuals published by Knight and Co. are in good repute, and the present work is no exception as respects fulness and accuracy."

The Lunacy Laws. Second Edition :

Containing all the Statutes relating to Private Lunatics—Pauper Lunatics—Criminal Lunatics—Commissions of Lunacy—Public and Private Asylums—and the Commissioners in Lunacy ; with an Introductory Commentary, Notes to the Statutes, including References to decided Cases ; and a Copious Index of 129 pages.
By DANBY P. FRY, Barrister-at-Law. Price 21s.

Saturday Review.—"Mr. Fry has rendered a useful service in putting these Laws together in a connected and intelligible form."

Law Times.—"It is a decidedly valuable compendium of the law of which it treats, which, unhappily, is one of growing importance."

Former Notice.—"There are no books so useful as those which collect all the law on a single subject, arranged so that any part of it may be readily found. This has been the design of the volume before us ; it has been accomplished with care and industry."

Lancet.—"The second edition of this valuable work appears opportunely. It is ably edited, conveniently arranged, and will be indispensable."

Law Magazine.—"The profession is indebted to Mr. Fry for placing at its disposal a work which will be found very useful in the administration of an important department of the law."

Medical Times and Gazette.—"Mr. Danby P. Fry, a barrister of long standing and repute, has given the subject much patient search and labour, and we consider medical men owe him a debt of gratitude for the service he has done."

The Medical Mirror.—"And it is so clearly written that no one having this manual by him need ever be at a loss to promptly ascertain the exact condition of the law upon any particular point concerning persons of unsound mind."

Metropolitan.—"It will undoubtedly be considered a leading authority in Lunacy matters. Its value cannot be too highly estimated, and Mr. Fry must be congratulated upon the success with which he has produced this, the second edition of his work."

Iron.—"The name of the author will be a sufficient guarantee for the completeness of his production."

Public Health.—"It is almost needless to say that it is the standard work of its kind, and that the new edition, with its corrections and additions, will be heartily welcomed. The purpose of Mr. Fry's book has been to render assistance to all charged with the care of insane persons by thoroughly acquainting them with their responsibilities."

Journal of Mental Science.—"This work is invaluable to all connected with the care and treatment of the insane, and it must find a place on the board room table of every asylum in England and Wales. A copious index completes the book, and adds materially to its value."

Carnarvon and Denbigh Herald.—"This is not the first time for Mr. Fry to appear as a legal writer and annotator, and from a very careful perusal of the introductory commentary of the work we now review, and a close inspection of the arrangement of the whole, we have no hesitation in pronouncing it to be a most excellent and serviceable manual."

Manual for the Relieving Officer :

Including the duties of Collector of the Guardians, Inquiry Officer, and School Attendance Officer, with Notes and Index. By the late W. G. LUMLEY. Third Edition, revised and enlarged.
Price 4s. 6d.

The Churchwarden's Guide. Eleventh Edition :

Edited by C. F. CHAMBERS, Barrister-at-Law. This work is not only a Guide to Churchwardens, but forms also a complete Legal Text Book, with Tables of Statutes and Cases brought down to the present time, and including the Public Worship Regulation Act, &c. Price 5s.

Saturday Review.—"The fact that it has gone through nine editions shows how much such a work is wanted by those who fill that anxious office."

Pall Mall Gazette.—"The office entails not a few responsible duties, and a carefully compiled book like this should have its use."

Morning Post.—"Fully and concisely explains all the duties, temporal and ecclesiastical, of churchwardens."

Law Times.—"An invaluable, and, we believe, trustworthy Guide."

Second Notice.—"It states the law with accuracy and clearness."

Churchman's Magazine.—"Drawn up with great care and clearness."

The Rock.—"A most valuable work."

Second Notice.—"The latest changes are duly noted."

Church Times.—"Exceedingly well compiled. A clear and authoritative statement of the duties and liabilities of Churchwardens."

Record.—"Widely known and deservedly valued."

Cambridge Chronicle and University Journal.—"Has been carefully revised, and such alterations and additions introduced as recent legislation or decisions rendered necessary."

Iron.—"A handy compendium of all matters affecting the duties and privileges of Churchwardens."

Stamford Mercury.—"The utility of this Guide is evident."

Norwich Mercury.—"Possessing this book Churchwardens need never remain in doubt as to what would be the proper course to pursue under any circumstances that may arise."

School Board Chronicle.—"The result of all experience and all legal decisions on the subject."

The Metropolitan.—"The whole matter is clearly set forth in a very plain and unmistakable manner."

Builder.—"There are a good many rocks upon which Churchwardens may strike they will find the price of this Guide a good investment."

Sheffield Independent.—"An authentic and full digest, well got up."

Western Morning News.—"It is superfluous to say anything in praise of the Churchwarden's Guide, which has long been so highly valued throughout the country."

Bookseller.—"This new edition seems thoroughly well timed."

Warrington Guardian.—"It seems to arm the Churchwarden at every point."

Newcastle Daily Chronicle.—"Of considerable use—carefully brought down to the latest date."

Canal Boats Act, 1877 :

Regulations of Local Government Board under the—

Price 6d. each, 4s. per dozen.

The Canal Boats Acts, 1877 and 1884 :

With Notes by HUGH OWEN, Barrister-at-Law.

Price 1s.

Manual for Medical Officers of Health. Second Edition :

By the late EDWARD SMITH, M.D., LL.B., F.R.S., Inspector to the Local Government Board. Price 8s. 6d.

Law Times.—"Will prove a most useful guide to Medical Officers."

The Medical Press and Circular.—"Well calculated to serve the purpose for which it is published. There must be many who will be glad to have brought before them their duties by one in the position of Dr. E. Smith."

Lancet.—"Contains many useful practical hints."

Public Baths :

Public Baths and Cheap Baths for the People. With Nine Illustrations. By FRANCIS VACHER, Medical Officer of Health for Birkenhead. Price 6d.

A Manual for Elections by Ballot—Municipal and Parliamentary. Second Edition :

By HUGH OWEN, Barrister-at-Law. The present edition of the Ballot Act Manual contains *The Municipal Elections Act*, and *The Returning Officers (Parliamentary Elections) Act of 1875*, by which some material alterations were made in the previous law. The notes in the first edition have been carefully revised, and considerable additions have been made. Price 3s. 6d.

Echo.—"Extremely good and useful."

Book-Keeping for Public Institutions :

By JAMES WILLIAM PALMER, Clerk to the Middlesex County Lunatic Asylum, Hanwell. Price 5s.

City Press.—"Treated in a clear and intelligible style."

Charity Organization Reporter.—"Contains all that is necessary for Charities and other Public Institutions."

Metropolitan.—"Mr. Palmer has had great experience in the affairs of large institutions, and he knows that many of them, particularly those which have outgrown their original magnitude, do not possess an intelligible yet simple system of keeping their accounts. The work before us sketches out a plan, with illustrations, by which boards of management or committees may acquire all the knowledge requisite to enable them to exercise a proper supervision over the expenditure."

Building Societies' Gazette.—"As a help to the accurate record of Receipts and Payments, and the proper checking of accounts, it will prove useful."

Poor Law Amendment Act, 1868. Second Edition :

With Notes, and an Appendix. By HUGH OWEN, Barrister-at-Law. Price 1s. 6d.

*The Law relating to the Registration of Births,
Deaths, and Marriages. Second Edition :*

By W. CUNNINGHAM GLEN, and ALEX. GLEN, M.A., LL.B.,
Barristers-at-Law. It contains all the Statutes relating to the
registration of Births, Deaths, and Marriages; Non-Parochial
Registers; the duties of Registration Officers; and the Marriage of
Dissenters in England. With the legal decisions upon each Statute.

Price 5s.

The Law.—"No amount of trouble seems to have been spared to render the book
complete . . . Nothing can be better done to clear the subject than is done
by the present work, which is in every way excellently got up."

School Board Chronicle.—"A complete exposition of the law . . . a laboriously
edited work, a table of contents of a dozen pages, and an index of twenty-six
pages. Should be in every library of reference."

Lancet.—"A second edition, much extended, and greatly improved."

Guide Book to the Explosives Act, 1875 :

For the use of Local Authorities and their Officers. By Colonel
MAJENDIE, R.A., H.M. Inspector of Explosives. *By Authority.*
Bound in leather, 320 pages.

Price 2s.

*A Guide to the Construction and Management
of Workhouses :*

By the late EDWARD SMITH, M.D., LL.B., F.R.S., Local
Government Board Inspector.

Price 8s. 6d.

Suggestions to the Charitable. Third Edition :

Being Suggestions for Systematic Inquiry into the Cases of Applicants for Relief. With an Appendix containing extracts from Statutes, Regulations of the Local Government Board, and other matters relating to the Poor. By C. J. RIBTON TURNER, of the Charity Organization Society. Price 2s. 6d.

Reports of Poor Law District Conferences :

In 8vo, bound in cloth, with Index, &c.

Volume for 1876, price 7s. 6d.	Volume for 1882, price 6s. 0d.
Ditto 1877, price 5s. 6d.	Ditto 1883, price 7s. 0d.
Ditto 1878, price 8s. 0d.	Ditto 1884, price 6s. 6d.
Ditto 1879-80, price 7s. 6d.	Ditto 1885, price 6s. 6d.
Ditto 1881, price 6s. 6d.	Ditto 1886, price 6s. 6d.

Reports of each Conference are published separately, Price 6d. each.

The Poor Law Conferences Act provides that the cost of purchasing these Reports may be paid by the Guardians out of the Rates.

Penfold on Rating. Seventh Edition :

Edited by A. GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Barrister-at-Law.

Practical Remarks upon the Principle of Rating Railway, Gas, Water, and other Companies ; Land, Tithes, Buildings, Manufactories, and other Properties, Re-written and Extended. All the more important decisions of the Court of Queen's Bench on questions of Rating are given, and it shews the manner in which the principles laid down are practically applied. Demy 8vo., 18s.

Journal of Gas Lighting.—"Voluminous and accurate."

Mechanics' Magazine.—"A standard book of reference."

Herepath's Railway Journal.—"Written with remarkable clearness."

Estates Gazette.—"The whole question of Rating is clearly and concisely treated."

Railway Record.—"This work is without a rival . . . Clears up many doubtful points."

Railway News.—"Justly regarded as a leading authority."

Chamber of Agriculture Journal.—"A standard work for the valuer, land agent, lawyer, member of assessment committee, or possessor of rateable property."

New Accounts for Highway Authorities :

Under the Orders of the Local Government Board dated April 29 and May 26, 1879. Exemplified by GEORGE GIBSON, Esq., District Auditor.

- I. The Order of Accounts for *Highway Boards*. Price 8s. 6d.
- II. The Accounts of *District Surveyors*. Being that portion of the Local Government Board's Order which relates only to them. Price 5s.
- III. The New Order of Accounts for *Highway Parishes*. 2nd Edition. Price 3s. 6d.

* * In the above Works the use of each Book required by the Orders, and the requisite entries to be made therein, are fully explained ; hence they will be found to be thoroughly practical, and will prove valuable not only to Clerks and Surveyors of Highway Boards, but also to those officers of County Authorities upon whom will devolve the duty of checking the accounts of Highway Boards, so far as they relate to the repayment for "Main Roads." The complete text of the Orders together with the Board's Explanatory Letters are appended to each Work.

Accounts of Guardians and other Local Authorities, under the Education Act, 1876 :

An Exemplification and Guide. By GEORGE GIBSON, District Auditor. The Elementary Education Act, 1876, created new duties for Guardians of the Poor, and other Local Authorities, the cost of executing which being chargeable to two different funds, has, in some instances, given rise to uncertainty as to the manner in which the expenses incurred by the Guardians direct, or presented to them for payment by the School Attendance Committees appointed by them should appear in their accounts. This work has been written in the hope of removing these difficulties. Price 3s. 6d.

An Exemplification and Guide to the Keeping of the Accounts of School Boards :

By GEORGE GIBSON, one of the District Auditors of the Local Government Board. Price 6s.

School Board Chronicle.—"To know how to keep School Board Accounts demands some study and some intelligence ; but the thing can be learned by any educated man of average capacity, and Mr. Gibson has, by the publication of this book, made the task easy and safe."

Metropolitan.—"Messrs. Knight & Co. have just issued a work by Mr. George Gibson, which will prove useful. The book is of handy size, and well got up."

Manuals for Poor Law Officers.

By the late WILLIAM G. LUMLEY, Q.C., Counsel to the Local Government Board.

The Regulations which relate to Poor Law Officers are found in separate Orders, and in many distinct communications, and are for the most part intermingled with others relating to different Officers and Subjects of an entirely separate character. It has appeared to be convenient to detach for the use of each Officer all that relates to him, both as regards his Appointment and his duties, so that he may readily find, in his own Manual, what it concerns him to know, without having to seek for it in the large collection.

Master and Matron of the Workhouse. Second Edition. 4/6

Relieving Officer. Third Edition 3/6

Medical Officer. Third Edition..... 6/0

Lancet.—"This is a most useful manual. . . . Should be in the hands of every medical officer."

The Poor Law Board's Order of Accounts :

An Exemplification of the General Order of Accounts (dated 14th January, 1867). By DANBY P. FRY, Barrister-at-Law.

Bound in leather. Price 12s.

The following portions of the Work may be had separately :—

	s.	d.
The Overseers' and Collectors' Accounts.....	1	6
The Master of the Workhouse do.	3	0

The Casual Poor Act, 1882 :

Together with the Pauper Inmates' Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871. 4th Edition, with Introduction, Notes, and Index. By HUGH OWEN, Barrister-at-Law. Price 2s. 6d.

The Boarding-Out System :

A practical Guide to the Boarding-Out System for Pauper Children. Containing Suggestions, Forms, and Regulations. By Colonel C. W. GRANT, R.E., J.P. for Somerset, &c. Price 1s. 6d.

Pall Mall Gazette.—"Colonel Grant's little handbook may be consulted with profit."

The Constitution of Local Government Districts :

And the Election of Local Boards under the Public Health Act, 1875. By ALEX. GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Barrister-at-Law. Price 3s. 6d.

Register of Mortgages and Transfers, and Mortgage Ledger :

For the use of Public Boards. Constructed by WILLIAM REES, District Auditor and Consulting Accountant.

CONTENTS :—Register of Mortgages—Register of Transfer of Mortgages—Borrowing Powers—Money Borrowed for—Redemption Fund Account—Sinking Fund Account—Redemption of Mortgages, Annual Statement—Personal Account of Mortgagee.

Price, in green vellum, 25s.

Parliamentary & Municipal Elections by Ballot:

With Notes and Observations on the Defects of the System, including concise Instructions to Returning Officers, etc. By RICHARD AUBREY ESSERY, Attorney-at-Law, late Town Clerk of the Borough of Swansea. Price 3s. 6d.

Practical Legislation, or the Composition of Acts of Parliament:

By SIR HENRY THRING, K.C.B., Parliamentary Counsel.

Price 2s.

Poor Removal and Union Chargeability Acts. Second Edition:

With an Appendix, containing the Acts relating to the Removal of Scotch and Irish Poor, and the Metropolitan Houseless Poor Act. By the late W. G. LUMLEY, Q.C., Counsel to the Local Government Board. Price 5s.

The Poor Law System of Elberfeld:

Being a Report to the Local Government Board. By ANDREW DOYLE, Inspector. Price 6d.

Relief of the Poor in Belgium:

An Account of the Administrations and of the Reformatory Schools of Ruyssede and Beernem, with lithographed plan. Edited by F. T. BIRCHAM, Assistant Local Government Board Inspector. Price 1s.

Poor Rate Assessment & Collection Act, together with the Highway Rate Assessment and Expenditure Act, 1882. Seventh Edition:

With Introduction, Copious Notes, and Index. By HUGH OWEN, Barrister-at-Law. Price 3s.

Tables showing at a glance the Number of Days between any two given Dates within the Year:

By HENRY GEORGE SMITH. Intended chiefly for the assistance of Union Clerks and others in the preparation of the half-yearly Claims for the Government Allowance in aid of the Maintenance of Pauper Lunatics in Asylums. It will also prove useful to Bankers, Solicitors, and others, as a supplement to existing Interest Tables. Second Edition. Price 1s. 6d.

Complete Rate and Tax Calculator:

Or the Rate and Tax Maker's and Rate and Tax Payer's Companion; for calculating the Income and other Taxes, Poor Rates, Church Rates, Highway Rates, Water Rates, &c., containing upwards of 1,700 Calculations, and showing the value of any sum from 2d. to £1000, at One Farthing to Two Shillings and Sixpence in the Pound; arranged so as to render each sum a collectable amount. By JAMES VALENTINE WARD. Revised and recommended by GEORGE BARNES, Esq., District Auditor. Price 5s.

The Ready Reckoner of Acreage and Rental and The Assessment Calculator:

- I. THE RECKONER OF ACREAGE AND RENTAL. By JOHN KIDD. Showing the value per acre when the acreage and rental are known; or the rent, when the acreage and value per acre are given; or the acreage, when the value per acre and rent are given; together with
- II. THE ASSESSMENT CALCULATOR. By JAMES INSKIPP. A set of Tables showing at once the Rateable Value, after deducting from $2\frac{1}{2}$ to 20 per cent. on Rentals £1 to £2000. Price 2s. 6d., cloth.

Roberts' Rate Reckoner.

Showing at a glance the Amount of Deduction on any amount from 1d. to £500, at 15, 25, and 30 per cent. respectively, and the Net Amount of Rate payable by Owners for any Amount of Rates. By ALFRED JAMES ROBERTS, Vestry Clerk, Hammersmith. 8vo. cloth. Price 1s. 6d.

Roberts' Rate Reckoner (Extended):

These Tables (containing upwards of Twenty-five thousand Calculations) have been enlarged so as to meet all practical requirements, and will show each separate rate *complete* in itself, viz., on Rateable Values from 10s. to £1000, *Full Amount of Rate* and *Net Amount* to be collected after deducting 15, 25, or 30 per cent. (under Poor Rate Assessment and Collection Act). The Tables are separate for each Rate, complete on one opening, at from 1d. to 2s. 6d. in the Pound. By W. P. COCKBURN, Vestry Clerk, Hammersmith. Price 4s.

Each Rate sold separately, mounted on boards to hang up, at 1s. each.

Hills's Sheet Ready Reckoner:

Adapted for the use of Poor Law Officers and General Traders and Dealers. Price 6d.

With this Table, Clerks to Guardians and Relieving Officers can find out any given sum required, from One Farthing to Five Shillings, at a single glance. What is useful for this especial purpose is equally available for the use of Traders and Dealers. There is no Ready Reckoner existing so compact and so cheap.

Tables as to Repayment of Loans:

For the use of Local Authorities, &c., showing the equal annual amount of Repayment of Principal and Interest at 3 to 6 per cent. from 1 to 50 years. Price 1s. 6d.

Precautions against Epidemic Diseases :

Precautions against the infection of *Cholera*—Circular for Distribution, issued by the Local Government Board, July, 1884. 50 copies, 2s. 6d. ; 100, 5s. ; 250, 10s. 6d. ; 500, 18s. 6d. ; 1000, 30s.

Precautions against *Cholera*—Placard for Posting, 100, 6s. ; 500, 24s. ; 1000, 40s.

Memorandum of Privy Council on *Disinfection*. Price 1s. 6d. per dozen, or 8s. 6d. per 100.

Hospital Accommodation—Official Memorandum as to accommodation, to be given by Local Authorities, together with a Plan of a Temporary Building for holding 16 patients, eight of each sex.
Price 6d.

Plain Advice to all during the Visitation of the *Cholera*—
Folio sheet, price per 100, 3s.

The same in the Welsh Language. Price per 100, 4s.

—————French Language. Price per 100, 4s.

—————German Language. Price per 100, 4s.

Plain Advice—Printed as a Tract. To which are added Directions and Precautions, addressed to Individuals or Heads of Families, &c.
Price per doz., 1s. 6d.

How to Meet the *Cholera*. New Edition, 1883—A Guide for Parish Officers and others. Price 6d.

Precautions against *Small Pox*—For Boards of Guardians, Local Boards, and other Authorities. By JAMES B. HUTCHINS, of the Medical Department of the Privy Council. Price 6d. each, or 5s. per dozen.

Medical Times.—"No 'Board' can go wrong which follows this Guide."

Precautions against *Scarlatina*—Placard. Per 1000, 30s.

Plain Directions for Preventing the Spread of *Infectious Diseases*—such as Small Pox, Scarlatina, Fever, Diphtheria, &c. By Dr. W. N. THURSFIELD.

Price, as hand-bill or placard, per 100, 4s. 0d.

200, 7s. 6d.

500, 16s. 0d.

The same, in pamphlet form. Per dozen, 2s. ; per 100, 12s.

Some Plain Instructions for Preventing the Spread of *Infectious Diseases*—such as Measles, Small Pox, Fevers, Diphtheria, &c. By a Medical Officer of Health.

Per dozen, 2s. ; per 100, 12s.

Suggestions as to *Infectious Diseases*, &c.—By the Society of Medical Officers of Health. Price 6s. per 100.



[47th Year.]

The Local Government Directory, 1888 :

CONTENTS.

Price 8s. 6d.

UNIONS in England and Wales, with the Area and Population of each ; the Day of Meeting, Number of Parishes, and of Elected and Ex-officio Guardians, and the Inspectors' and Auditors' Districts ; the Names and Addresses of the Clerks and Treasurers ; the Names of the Chairmen, Vice-Chairmen, Relieving Officers, Medical Officers, Workhouse Masters, Chaplains, and Teachers, with the Certificates awarded to the latter, and the Situation and Capacity of the Workhouse, &c.

SIMILAR PARTICULARS AS TO

URBAN, RURAL, METROPOLITAN, AND PORT SANITARY AUTHORITIES,

Burial Boards, &c. Particulars of the Local Government Board and its Officers, Auditors, District Schools, Reformatory and Industrial Schools, Public Analysts, Schools and Institutions certified by the Local Government Board, the Lunacy Commission, List of Lunatic Asylums, the Calendar, with Memoranda of Business to be done each Month, &c.

Standard.—"Abounds in a mass of information of great value."

Spectator.—"Messrs. Knight's Directory is of the greatest utility."

Medical Press.—"This is a very useful Handbook on Local Government, &c."

The Tablet.—"Full of information arranged in a most convenient form."

Daily Telegraph.—"Full, concise, and accurate. Recent additions have brought the work to a state of great completeness."

Lancet.—"The book is, in fact, a 'requisite' in the office of all clerks."

Iron.—"Besides the list of public bodies, with the names of their officers, we have an Appendix, giving the titles and prices of the Official Forms, of which Messrs. Knight and Co. are the Publishers."

Parochial Critic.—"This excellent Annual contains a large mass of information."

School Board Chronicle.—"A masterpiece of careful and judicious editing."

Builder.—"This is a very useful work."

Oxford University Herald.—"Considering its real worth it is remarkably cheap."

The Poor Law Sheet Almanac for 1888 :

Price 2s., Plain ; 2s. 9d., Varnished ; 6s. 6d. on Roller, Varnished.

Knight's Large Tablet Diary for 1888 :

Price 1s., by Post 1s. 4d.

Circulars, &c., of the Local Government Board :

SUBJECT.	DATE.
Dairies, &c.....	<i>October, 1886.</i>
Cholera	<i>August, 1884.</i>
Sale of Food and Drugs Acts	<i>June, 1884.</i>
Factory and Workshop Act, 1883 (Bakehouses).....	<i>December, 1883.</i>
Digest of Public Health Act relating to Nuisances ..	„ „
„ Sir R. Cross' Acts, Artizans's Dwellings...	„ „
„ Torrens' „ „ „ „ „	„ „
„ Labouring Classes' Lodging Houses Acts..	„ „
Highway Rate Assessment and Expenditure Act ...	<i>May, 1883.</i>
Emigration of Pauper Children.....	„ „
Casual Poor Act	<i>December, 1882</i>
Divided Parishes	<i>August, 1882.</i>
Public Health (Interments) Act, 1879	<i>August, 1879.</i>
Special Rates Accounts	<i>March, 1879.</i>
Financial Statements—Guardians	<i>April, 1879.</i>
„ „ Local Boards	„ „
Highway Act, 1878—	
To Rural Sanitary Authorities	<i>October, 1878.</i>
To Clerks of the Peace	<i>September, 1878.</i>
To Highway Boards	„ „
To Parishes not in Highway Districts	„ „
To Urban Sanitary Authorities	„ „
School Fees by way of Loan.....	<i>January, 1878.</i>
Guardians Bonds and Contracts	<i>December, 1877.</i>
Order as to Boarding-out Children	<i>September, 1877.</i>
Guardians and Education Act, 1876.....	<i>March, 1877.</i>
Ditto	<i>December, 1876.</i>
The Education Act, 1876	<i>December, 1876.</i>
The Public Health Act, 1875, for Urban Authorities	<i>October, 1875.</i>
The same for Rural Authorities.....	<i>October, 1875.</i>
The Foods and Drugs Act, 1875	<i>October, 1875.</i>
The Rating Act, 1874	<i>November, 1874.</i>
New Regulations as to Vaccination	<i>October, 1874.</i>
Return of Sickness to Medical Officers of Health, &c.	<i>March, 1874.</i>

Circulars, &c., of the Local Government Board—continued.

SUBJECT.	DATE.
Elementary Education of Pauper Children	<i>December, 1873.</i>
Cholera Regulations	<i>July, 1873.</i>
Appointments and duties of Medical Officers and Inspectors of Nuisances—Rural Authorities... ..	<i>November, 1872.</i>
The same for Urban Authorities.	
Recent Statutes (35 & 36 Vic.) affecting Guardians	<i>October, 1872.</i>
Vagrancy and the Pauper Inmates' Discharge and Regulation Act, 1871.....	<i>November, 1871.</i>
The Vaccination Act, 1871	<i>October, 1871.</i>
Guardians' Travelling and Refreshment Expenses ...	<i>July, 1871.</i>
The Metropolitan Dispensary Order.....	<i>April, 1871.</i>
Financial and Statistical Statements and Deputa- tion Expenses	<i>August, 1870.</i>
Insane Inmates of Workhouses	<i>April, 1870.</i>
Relief to Poor in the Metropolis	<i>November, 1869.</i>
Various Provisions of the Poor Rate Assessment and Collection Act.....	<i>November, 1869.</i>
Out Relief.....	<i>December, 1868.</i>
Dietary of Workhouse Inmates	<i>December, 1868.</i>
Vagrancy	<i>November, 1868.</i>
Poor Relief Act, 1868	<i>November, 1868.</i>
Religious Clauses of the same	<i>November, 1868.</i>

Official Publications.

(Issued by Authority.)

Local Government Board:

	s.	d.
Model Bye-Laws issued by the Local Government Board, for the use of Sanitary Authorities, together with the Letters of the Board relating thereto. In One Volume, price (Sold also separately in 16 parts.)	6	0

Reports of the Local Government Board:—

First Annual Report	...	...	...	3	0
Second „	...	...	...	2	2
Third „	...	...	...	4	0
Fourth „	...	...	...	3	0
Fifth „	...	...	...	4	10
Sixth „	...	...	...	2	8
Seventh „	...	...	...	3	8
Eighth „ (1878-79)	...	...	...	3	6
Ninth „	...	...	...	3	10
Tenth „	...	...	...	3	8
Eleventh „	...	...	...	3	10
Twelfth „	...	...	...	3	6
Thirteenth „	...	...	...	3	1
Fourteenth „	...	...	...	3	6
Fifteenth „	...	...	...	2	11
Dr. Ballard's Report on Effluvium Nuisances				4	0

Report of the Royal Commissioner appointed to enquire respecting Small Pox and Fever Hospitals, with Minutes of Evidence and Appendix	12	0
---	----	---

Reports of Medical Officers of the Local Government Board. 1874 (No. 1 is out of Print).

					s.	d.
„	„	2	...	...	7	6
„	„	3	...	...	1	4
1875	„	4	...	...	1	0
„	„	5	...	...	3	3
„	„	6	...	...	6	0
1876	„	7	...	...	1	4
„	„	8	...	...	3	6

KNIGHT & CO., 90 FLEET STREET.

1878	...	s. 10	d. 6	...	Supplement to 6th Report of Local Government Board.		
"	...	9	0	...	" 7th	"	"
1879	...	10	0	...	" 8th	"	"
1880	...	10	0	...	" 9th	"	"
1881	...	5	6	...	" 10th	"	"
"	...	4	8	...	Extra Supplements		
1882	...	14	6	...	" "		
"	...	6	0	...	Supplement to 11th Report of Local Government Board		
1883	...	3	0	...	" 12th	"	"
1884	...	1	6	...	" 13th	"	"
1885	...	4	6	...	" 14th	"	"



Imperial 8vo., Cloth Boards.

The Revised Edition of the Statutes :

Prepared under the direction of the Statute Law Committee, and published by the authority of Her Majesty's Government.

		s.	d.
Vol. 1.	Henry III. to James II. ...	21	0
Vol. 2.	William III. to 10 George III. ...	20	0
Vol. 3.	11 George III. to 41 George III. ...	17	0
Vol. 4.	41 George III. to 51 George III. ...	18	0
Vol. 5.	52 George III. to 4 George IV. ...	25	0
Vol. 6.	5 George IV. to 2 William IV. ...	26	0
Vol. 7.	2 & 3 William IV. to 6 & 7 William IV. ...	30	0
Vol. 8.	7 William IV. to 5 & 6 Victoria ...	32	6
Vol. 9.	6 & 7 Vict. to 9 & 10 Vict. 1843 to 1846 ...	31	6
Vol. 10.	10 & 11 Vict. to 13 & 14 Vict., 1847 to 1850 ...	27	6
Vol. 11.	14 & 15 Vict. to 16 & 17 Vict., 1851 to 1853 ...	24	0
Vol. 12.	17 & 18 Vict. to 19 & 20 Vict., 1854 to 1856 ...	26	0
Vol. 13.	20 Vict. to 24 & 25 Vict., 1857 to 1861 ...	30	0
Vol. 14.	25 & 26 Vict. to 28 & 29 Vict., 1862 to 1865 ...	30	0
Vol. 15.	29 & 30 Vict. to 31 & 32 Vict., 1866 to 1867-8, and Supplement ...	30	6
Vol. 16.	32 & 33 Vict. to 35 & 36 Vict., 1869 to 1872 ...	10	0
Vol. 17.	36 & 37 Vict. to 38 & 39 Vict., 1873 to 1875 ...	7	6
Vol. 18.	39 & 40 Vict. to 41 & 42 Vict., 1876 to 1878 ...	8	6

(Any volume sold separately.)

Imperial 8vo., pp. 1031, Price 10s. Cloth.

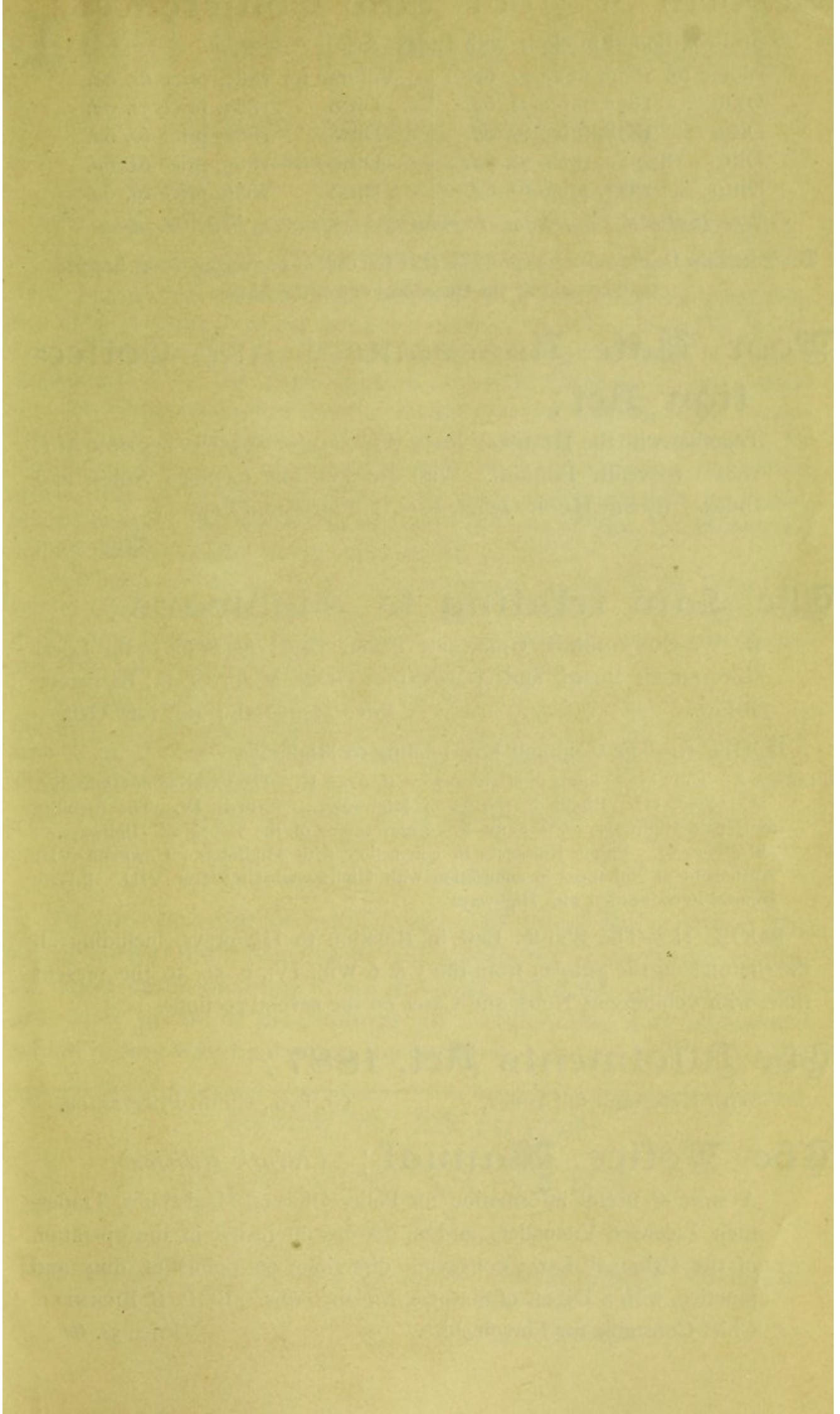
Chronological Tables and Index of Statutes, from 1235 to 1883. Ninth Edition.

All Acts, Parliamentary Papers, and Reports, may be ordered of Messrs. KNIGHT & CO.

KNIGHT & CO., 90 FLEET STREET.

✓

8



Reports of Poor Law Conferences :

In 8vo., bound in cloth, with Index, &c.

Volume for 1876, price 7s. 6d.

Ditto 1877, price 5s. 6d.

Ditto 1878, price 8s. 0d.

Ditto 1879-80, price 7s. 6d.

Ditto 1881, price 6s. 6d.

Volume for 1882, price 6s. 0d.

Ditto 1883, price 7s. 0d.

Ditto 1884, price 6s. 6d.

Ditto 1885, price 6s. 6d.

Ditto 1886, price 6s. 6d.

Reports of each Conference are published separately, Price 6d. each.

The Poor Law Conferences Act provides that the cost of purchasing these Reports may be paid by the Guardians out of the Rates.

Poor Rate Assessment and Collection Act :

Together with the HIGHWAY RATE ASSESSMENT AND COLLECTION ACT, 1882. (Seventh Edition). With Introduction, Copious Notes, and Index. By SIR HUGH OWEN, K.C.B., Barrister-at-Law.

Price 3s.

The Law relating to Highways :

By W. CUNNINGHAM GLEN, late Senior Legal Assistant to the Local Government Board, and ALEXANDER GLEN, M.A., LL.B., Barristers-at-Law.

Price 42s. Cloth ; 48s. Law Calf.

BOOK I.—The Common Law relating to Highways.

CHAPTER I. The Several kinds of Highways.—CHAPTER II. The Creation of Highways.—CHAPTER III. Rights in respect of Highways.—CHAPTER IV. The Liability to Repair Highways.—CHAPTER V. Enforcement of the Repair of Highways.—CHAPTER VI. Public Nuisances in connection with Highways.—CHAPTER VII. Abatement of Nuisances in connection with Highways.—CHAPTER VIII. Private Injuries in connection with Highways.

BOOK II.—The Statute Law in Relation to Highways, including all the Statutes on the Subject from the 5 & 6 Will. IV., c. 50, to the present time, with voluminous Notes and Cases on the several sections.

The Alotments Act, 1887 :

With Notes and full Index.

Cr. 8vo., Cloth, Price 2s. 0d.

The Police Manual : (Ninth Edition).

A store of useful information for Police Officers, Magistrates, Tradesmen, Licensed Victuallers, and all persons interested in the operation of the Criminal Law ; conveying directions on points of duty and practice, with a Digest of Statutes in plain terms. By P. B. BICKNEILL, Chief Constable for Lincolnshire.

Price 3s. 6d.

THE
Local Government Chronicle,

AND

KNIGHT'S OFFICIAL ADVERTISER.

PUBLISHED EVERY SATURDAY.

Price 3d., by Post 3½d. Annual Subscriptions, payable in advance, 12s.

THIS Journal was established in 1855, with the object of furnishing Information of a practical character upon the essential questions belonging to our Local Government System, and to supply a Current Register of Official Appointments. It was further intended to provide a Medium of Communication for Local Authorities desiring to advertise for Officers, in the Various Departments of the Service; and to offer a channel of announcement for Contractors desirous of obtaining Public Works, or of supplying the various articles that are requisite for Workhouses and other Institutions, for Economical Inventions that address themselves to the uses of such Establishments, and for persons seeking Union appointments.

Communications are solicited upon matters relating to the Poor Law, Public Health, Sanitary Matters, and Local Government generally, whether in the form of Advertisements, Reports of the transactions of Local Bodies and Poor Law Associations, Letters to the Editor, &c.

A Special feature is the answering of queries from subscribers in reference to Questions of Law and Practise concerning which they desire information. These answers are prepared by eminent counsel, and are inserted weekly, together with the questions to which they refer.

* * * *Communications for the Editor may be addressed to the Office,
90, Fleet Street, E.C.*

To all interested in the Question of Local Government, the Local Government Chronicle will be found to be most useful. All legal cases of importance are duly reported and full reports are also given of proceedings in Parliament, and elsewhere which in any way bear upon the subject.

Price 2s. 6d. Gilt Lettered,

READING COVERS

WITH BANDS FOR HOLDING

Twenty-six Numbers of the Local Government Chronicle.

KNIGHT & CO., 90 Fleet Street.

